
This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>





QUEEN'S COLOUR.



REGIMENTAL COLOUR.



X

THE HISTORY

OF THE

HONOURABLE

Artillery Company.

BY

CAPTAIN G. A. RAIKES,

3rd West York Light Infantry Militia; Lieutenant-Instructor of Musketry H.A.C.;
Fellow of the Statistical and Royal Historical Societies; Author of
"Historical Records of the First Regiment of Militia."

With Maps and Illustrations.

VOLUME I.



LONDON:

RICHARD BENTLEY & SON, NEW BURLINGTON STREET,
Publishers in Ordinary to Her Majesty.

1878

LONDON :
BARRETT, SONS & CO., PRINTERS,
CROWN STEAM WORKS, SEETHING LANE, E.C.

[Entered at Stationers' Hall.]

TO
FIELD-MARSHAL HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS
ALBERT EDWARD,
PRINCE OF WALES AND DUKE OF CORNWALL,
K.G., K.T., G.C.B., K.P., G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G.,
Captain-General & Colonel
OF
The Honourable Artillery Company,
THIS HISTORY
IS
(BY PERMISSION)
MOST RESPECTFULLY
Dedicated.

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|---------|------|
| PREFACE | xxi |

CHAPTER I.

EARLY HISTORY OF ARCHERY AND ARTILLERY.

| | |
|--|---|
| Title of Company.—Meaning of word "Artillery."—Its Ancient Use.— Introduced into England.—First Cannons in City of London.— Archers in Britain under Normans and Saxons.—Cross-bows intro- duced, 1190.—Firearms or Hand-Guns, 1375.—Number of Archers provided by City Companies in Sixteenth Century.—Games made illegal, 1363. — Broad Arrow, Ancient Crown Mark, 1386. — Statutes for promoting Archery.—Proclamations for encouraging Archery.—The Greenwich Armoury Mills.—Company of Surgeons. —Invention of Grenades, 1594.—Bows exchanged for Calivers and Muskets, 1595 | 1 |
|--|---|

CHAPTER II.

FROM THE INCORPORATION OF THE COMPANY IN 1537 TO 1601.

| | |
|---|----|
| Charter of the Company, 1537.—Incorporated as the Guild or Fraternity of St. George. — Condition of Moorfields, 1412-97. — Manor of Finsbury, 1315-1568. — Musters in Finsbury Fields, 1520-49. — Threatened Assembly of Disbanded Soldiers there, 1550.—Prize Meetings for Archery in Finsbury, 1521-96. — Great Review of City Forces by Henry VIII., 1539. —Fields used for Archery about London.—Letters Patent to restore the Marks and Fields for Shooting, 1561-1632.—The Artillery Garden.—Tassel Close.— The Fraternity of Artillery in Great and Small Ordnance, 1537.— William Thomas, Master-Gunner.—The Gunners of the Tower.— The Artillery Company and the Armada.—Captains of the Artillery Garden.—First Order in Council relating to the Company, 1591.— The City Trained Bands | 17 |
|---|----|

CHAPTER III.

PROGRESS OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF JAMES I.

FROM 1603 TO 1625.

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| Petition of Bowyers and Fletchers.—Revival of Military Exercises by the Company.—The Armourers' Company.—Number limited to 250.—Uppermost Field in Finsbury granted for their use, 1614.—Increased to 500 by Privy Council.—Captain Panton's Dispute, 1616.—His Appeals to Privy Council.—Master-Gunner claims Artillery Garden.—Captain Panton's Case referred to Lord Justice and others.—Their Report thereon, 1619.—Captain Bingham elected <i>vice</i> Panton.—First Grant to Company by Corporation, 1620.—Artillery Yard at Colchester.—The Musters in Finsbury and St. James's Fields.—The Disputed Right to the Artillery Garden.—Petition of Lieutenant of Ordnance to the King, 1624 ... | 38 |

CHAPTER IV.

ACCESSION OF CHARLES I. TO THE GREAT REBELLION.

FROM 1625 TO 1642.

| | |
|--|----|
| The Company's Feasts.—First Rules and Orders made, 1631.—The Armorial Bearings of the Company.—Dispute between John Reynolds, Master-Gunner, and the Company.—Their Petition to Privy Council.—Decision of the Council.—Disturbance in the Artillery Garden.—Company elect their own Officers.—Corporation Appeal to Privy Council.—The Council censures them.—King's Warrant to encourage the Company.—Council's Letter of Remonstrance.—The King to elect the Captain.—First Election of Court of Assistants and Officers, 1633.—Commissioners of Archery and the Brickmakers.—William Neade, Inventor of the "Bow and the Pike."—The March of the English Nation, 1634.—Further Orders for Appointment of Officers.—Captain to have £50 per annum.—"Artillery Yards" formed in London and Provinces.—Captain Walter Neale.—Bunhill Fields to be viewed, 1635.—Flourishing Condition of the Company, 1638.—The New Artillery Garden, 1640.—Prince of Wales and others become Members, 1641.—Suspension of Enrolments during Civil War | 64 |
|--|----|

CHAPTER V.

THE CITY TRAINED BANDS AND THE CIVIL WAR.

FROM 1642 TO 1660.

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Trained Bands Officered by the Company.—Musters in Reigns of Elizabeth and James I.—Four Regiments of Trained Bands raised, 1616.—Lord Mayor appointed their General.—Petition of Longbow Makers.—Four Companies of Archers formed, 1627.—Office of Muster-Master.—Captain Fisher appointed by the King.—Corporation refuses to pay him.—Orders of King and Privy Council thereon.—Trained Bands increased in 1642.—Six Regiments of Auxiliaries raised.—Skippon to command City Forces.—The City and the Parliament.—Trained Bands volunteer for Service.—Prepare to March.—Proceed to Gloucester.—Skirmish at Stow.—The Battle of Newbury.—Their return to London.—Entry into the City.—The Muster in the New Artillery Garden.—Strength of the Regiments.—Their Arms and Colours.—Again called out for Service in 1644.—Cost of Arms and Accoutrements.—Muster in Hyde Park, 1646.—London Volunteer Regiments.—Trained Bands disbanded, 1663.—London Trained Bands changed to Militia, 1794 | 102 |

CHAPTER VI.

FROM THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE CIVIL WAR TO THE DEATH OF CHARLES I.

FROM 1642 TO 1649.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Improvements in Moorfields, 1606 to 1631.—Master Nicholas Leate.—Petitions of the Company for a New Ground, 1614-1640.—The Old, or King's, Artillery Garden.—Inhabitants of Bunhill petition House of Lords.—The Lords direct building to be suspended.—Petition of the Company against this Order.—Referred to Committee for Petitions.—Howe's Description of the Ground.—Days of Exercise.—Strength of the Company.—Ancient Origin of the Windmills.—License to Thomas Wells, of Calais, to erect one in 1558.—Survey of Manor of Finsbury.—Alderman Bunce elected President.—Major-General Skippon rejected as Leader | 144 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER VII.

STATE OF THE COMPANY DURING THE COMMONWEALTH.

FROM 1649 TO 1660.

PAGE

Decline of the Company.—The Cavaliers.—Search for concealed Money in Finsbury.—Trained Bands and the Artillery Ground.—The Company of Archers.—Society of Finsbury Archers.—Duties of their Stewards.—Prize Meetings in Artillery Garden.—Number of Competitors.—Their Rules and Orders.—Captains and Lieutenants.—The Easter Target, 1658-1757.—The Whitsuntide Target, 1692-1754.—Finsbury Archers incorporated with Artillery Company.—First Court Book of the Company, 1657.—Election of Officers.—Old Artillery Garden still used.—Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Leaders on General and Private Days.—Old Armoury sold for £300.—Major-General Skippon Captain of the Company.—Election at the General Court, 1658.—The Annual Dinner.—Procession to St. Paul's.—Bill in Chancery against Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Sale of Armoury to the Master-Gunner completed.—The Company escort Lord Mayor.—The Lord Mayor's Show and Pageants.—Custom of Company to take part in it.—Summons to attend Lord Protector's Funeral.—Wall of Ground to be completed.—Petition to Parliament against Manby.—Three General Days fixed.—Court of Assistants to lead in turn.—Compensation for breaking a Man's Head.—Members in Arrears of Quarterage not to remove their Arms 152

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM THE RESTORATION TO THE DEATH OF CHARLES II.

FROM 1660 TO 1685.

Monk elected Sergeant-Major-General of City *vice* Skippon.—Charles II.'s Visit to City.—His Royal Highness the Duke of York elected "Commander-in-Chief" of Company, 1660.—Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Rent of the Herbage.—The Annual Feasts.—Election of Members.—The Exercise on General Days.—Condition of the Highway near Artillery Garden.—Sergeants and Officers of Trained Bands to become Members.—Fines for being late in Court.—Election of the first Surgeon.—Stewards' Names to be entered in Great Book.—An Exercise at Arms in 1665.—The Great Plague.—Attempt to form Burial-place in

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Artillery Garden.—Tindall's Burying-ground established, 1665.— | |
| The Fire of London.—Narrow Escape of Artillery Garden.— | |
| Official Account of the Fire.—Tents and Sheds erected in Artillery | |
| Garden and Moorfields.—The Leader and Bringer-up on General | |
| Days.—Marshal to instruct Members.—Duties of Leaders.— | |
| Annual Grant of Court of Aldermen for Feast discontinued, 1669. | |
| —Box Money.—Currey expelled for biting his Wife's nose.— | |
| Company attend Prince of Orange.—Field-Officers of Trained | |
| Bands admitted to Court of Assistants, 1671.—Train of Artillery. | |
| —Tindall summoned for Building.—An Armoury to be built, | |
| 1674.—Dress of the Musketeers.—Sir Thomas Player.—The Feast | |
| at Merchant Taylors' Hall, 1679.—Plan for a new Armoury, 1680. | |
| —Influence of the Company at Civic Elections.—Proceedings at | |
| the General Court, 1681.—King's Warrant to suspend Elections. | |
| —Address to the King.—Dispute with Corporation regarding | |
| Repair of Highway.—Addresses presented to the King, and | |
| Captain-General, 1683.—First Appointment of "Generals."—First | |
| Mention of the Title "Honourable," 1685 | 165 |

CHAPTER IX.

CONDITION OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF JAMES II.

FROM 1685 TO 1688.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Accession of the Captain-General.—The Company present an Address | |
| to the King.—Lord Mayor entertains the Company.—Application | |
| of Lord Dartmouth for Use of the Ground.—The General Days.— | |
| Lord Mayor's Day.—King postpones the Feast, 1685.—His | |
| Majesty's Warrant to suspend Elections.—Officers of the Trained | |
| Bands.—A Company of Grenadiers raised, 1686.—No Courts held | |
| from October, 1687, to October, 1688.—His Majesty's Opinion of | |
| the Company | 216 |

CHAPTER X.

THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF WILLIAM III. AND MARY II.

(William and Mary, 1689-1694—William III., 1694-1702.)

FROM 1689 TO 1702.

| | |
|--|--|
| Royal Warrant restoring Company's Privileges and Right of Elections. | |
| —Exercise of Arms renewed.—Sergeants of Trained Bands ad- | |
| mitted.—Wall and Gates repaired.—Stewards not to be Members | |

| | PAGE |
|--|---------|
| of Court unless elected.—Effigy of Colonel Shepperd restored,— Game of Pall-mall prohibited in Ground.—King declares himself Captain-General.—Duke of Norfolk appointed during his Absence. —Salaries of Clerk and others.—Aldermen made Honorary Members of Court, 1692.—Subscription to pay off the Debts.— Address to the Queen, 1692.—Paving the Highway.—Captain of Pioneers.—Standing Orders relating to Command.—Sergeants of Middlesex Militia admitted, 1693.—Company dine with Lord Mayor.—The Procession.—The Arms to be borne by Marshal and Flankers.—Address to the King, 1696.—The Royal Warrant to the Lieutenancy.—Petition to Corporation for permission to build, 1698.—The Agreement signed, 8th December.—Pavement in Chiswell Street.—Legal Proceedings against Company.—Want of Funds.—Officers and Servants discharged.—Application to Court of Aldermen.—Proposal to close the Ground, 1701 | ... 221 |

CHAPTER XI.

THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF QUEEN ANNE.

FROM 1702 TO 1714.

| | |
|--|---------|
| Ensigns Honorary Members of Court.—Address to the Queen.—The Royal Warrant.—Prince George of Denmark Captain-General.— Election of Chairman and President.—Ground let for Building, 1706.—Eight Members to form a Quorum.—Address to the Queen, 1708.—Bayonets to be fixed to Muskets, 1708.—Difficulty in granting Sub-leases.—An Exercise on Lord Mayor's Day.— East and West Gates.—Elections at General Court, 1702-11.— Fusiliers instead of Grenadiers.—Sergeant Denton expelled.— Court of Aldermen and Leaders.—Salary of Clerk.—Records to be examined.—Twenty-four Grenadiers raised.—“The Queen and House of Hanover.”—Members of Court to attend on Days of Exercise.—Post of Officers on General Marches | ... 237 |
|--|---------|

CHAPTER XII.

IMPROVEMENT IN THE CONDITION OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF
GEORGE I.

FROM 1714 TO 1727.

| | |
|---|--|
| The King's Entry into London.—Opposition to Company being repre- sented.—A Place assigned to them.—The Procession.—Burgesses not to be Presidents.—No Officer under Degree of Captain-Lieu- | |
|---|--|

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| tenant to be Member of Court.—Address to the King, 1715.— | |
| Prince George of Wales Captain-General.—The Royal Warrant.— | |
| Letting of the Ground, 1715-19.—No Strangers to Exercise.— | |
| Clerk appointed Adjutant.—Court of Lieutenancy.—Officers of | |
| Trained Bands.—Colonel Shorey's Loan repaid, 1721.—Com- | |
| penensation to Sergeant Richford.—An Engineer appointed.— | |
| Company reviewed by King.—Scarlet first worn.—Address to | |
| the King, 1722.—His Gift of £500.—Major Delafountain.—Fall | |
| of West Wall.—Application to build on Bunhill side of Ground.— | |
| Blackwell's History of the Company, 1726.—Grand March, 1727. | |
| —Address to His Majesty.—Corporation's Offer of New Lease | |
| rejected.—The Old Artillery Ground | 253 |

CHAPTER XIII.

ADVANCEMENT OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF GEORGE II.

FROM 1727 TO 1760.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Permission to Build on West side of Ground.—Petition to Aldermen, | |
| 1727.—The Guards allowed to use the Ground.—The Exercise | |
| performed, 1728.—Value of the Ground.—Rules for the Sub- | |
| scriptions to New Armoury.—Memorial to Lieutenancy.—Plans | |
| for Armoury approved.—Lieutenancy subscribes £500.—Annual | |
| Committee.—Lieutenant-Colonels of Trained Bands.—Application | |
| of Mrs. Gregory for place of Armourer.—List of Subscribers.— | |
| Armoury House completed, 1735.—Panels for Names ordered.— | |
| Regulations for Use of Armoury.—Action in King's Bench against | |
| Officers.—List of Arms and Armour, 1738.—The Finsbury Archers. | |
| —Payment to Militia Officers.—Duties of Clerk, Armourer, and | |
| Beadle, 1740.—Iron Gates for West side ordered.—Remainder of | |
| West side let, 1742.—Address to King, 1744.—The Colts' Feast.— | |
| Salutes fired.—Guns sent to Tower.—Gates made for Entrance | |
| Hall, 1746.—Certificates of Efficiency.—The Royal Blue Fusiliers. | |
| —Sergeants not to be less than 5 ft. 6 in.—Military Examinations. | |
| —The Hanover Grenadiers.—Sergeant-Major appointed.—Contri- | |
| butions to Poor Box.—Scarlet and Blue Uniforms.—Chaplain | |
| appointed, 1748.—Search for Charter and Warrants.—The Lord | |
| Mayor.—The Prussian Exercise.—British Volunteers.—Middlesex | |
| Militia.—Death of the King | 279 |

CHAPTER XIV.

THE ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF BOSTON,
MASSACHUSETTS,*From the Incorporation of the Company to the Close of the Last Century.*
FROM 1638 TO 1798.

| | |
|---|------|
| New England.—The Pilgrim Fathers.—City of Boston founded.— | PAGE |
| The Trained Bands.—The Military Company of Boston.—Charter of Incorporation, 1639.—Election of the First Officers.—Captain Robert Keayne.—His Character.—Major-General Sedgwick.—Major-General Sir J. Leverett.—The Militia.—“Timorous Persons” exempt from serving.—Title and Dress of Officers.—Will of Captain Keayne, 1653.—His Legacies to the Company.—Decline of the Company.—Number enrolled.—Rules and Orders, 1657.—Sir Edmund Andross.—Meetings suspended.—Revival of the Company, 1691.—Earliest Records of the Company, 1698.—Revised Rules and Orders, 1700.—Grants of Land to Company, 1641-1729.—Sale of the Land by the Company, 1737.—The Company freed from all Taxes.—Hanging out the Colours, 1743-1796.—First Fire Society.—The Cadet Corps.—Military Company of Harvard College.—New Regulations, 1762.—Major-General Winslow.—The Revolutionary War, 1775-1783.—Meetings Suspended.—Major-General Brooks.—Early Use of Artillery.—Title of Company at various periods.—Honorary Members.—Uniforms.—The Ceremony on Election Days.—Faneuil Hall.—The Colours.—Dan and Si.—The Arms.—Espontoons and Halberds.—Organisation of the Company | 324 |

APPENDICES.

| | |
|--|-----|
| APPENDIX A.—Charter of Incorporation, and Royal Warrants to the Company | 369 |
| „ B.—Orders in Council relating to the Company | 401 |
| The numerous orders on the subject of personal disputes are not contained in this Appendix, as they are given so fully in the body of this work, but only the most important orders relating to the Company. | |
| „ C.—Letters Patent for the Maintenance of Archery in the City of London | 411 |
| „ D.—Petitions, &c., of William Thomas, Master-Gunner, to the Queen and Privy Council, relating to the Gunners of the Tower, 1581-82 | 437 |
| „ E.—Verses by the Marshal of the Company on the Completion of the New Armoury in 1622 | 451 |
| „ F.—Rules and Regulations of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company of Boston, Massachusetts | 453 |

ILLUSTRATIONS.

| | PAGE |
|---|--------------|
| THE COLOURS | Frontispiece |
| ARMORIAL BEARINGS OF THE COMPANY | 69 |
| CHARLES II. | 101 |
| PRINCE RUPERT | 133 |
| JAMES, DUKE OF YORK (afterwards James II.) | 166 |
| DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM | 168 |
| DUKE OF ORMOND | 174 |
| EARL OF MANCHESTER | 186 |
| EARL OF SANDWICH | 188 |
| EARL OF CRAVEN | 189 |
| DUKE OF MONMOUTH | 192 |
| SAMUEL PEPYS | 196 |
| EARL OF OSSORY | 198 |
| EARL OF MULGRAVE | 200 |
| GEORGE MONK, DUKE OF ALBEMARLE | 210 |
| SIR CHRISTOPHER WREN | 214 |
| WILLIAM III. | 222 |
| DUKE OF NORFOLK | 224 |
| PRINCE GEORGE OF DENMARK (Consort of Queen Anne) | 239 |
| EXERCISE FOR HALBERDS, 1726 | 254 |
| GEORGE I. | 271 |
| THE SALUTE WITH THE HALF-PIKE | 273 |
| GEORGE II. | 280 |
| GEORGE, PRINCE OF WALES (afterwards George IV.) | 322 |

MAPS AND PLANS.

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| PLAN OF THE ARTILLERY GROUND, 1878 | 1 |
| THE OLD AND NEW ARTILLERY GROUND (Newcourt's), 1658 | 145 |
| " " " " (Ogilby's), 1675 | 164 |
| " " " " (Ogilby & Morgan), 1675 | 194 |
| " " " " in 1732 (Jeffereyes) | 278 |
| PLAN OF ANCIENT MARKS FOR SHOOTING IN FINSBURY | 30 |
| " " OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY | |
| IN FINSBURY FIELDS, 1736 | 302 |

ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-----|
| MAJOR-GENERAL SIR JOHN LEVERETT | 329 |
| MAJOR THOMAS SAVAGE | 335 |
| DEVICE ON COMPANY COLOURS (Obverse) | 343 |
| " " " (Reverse) | 344 |
| MAJOR-GENERAL JOHN WINSLOW | 348 |
| " JOHN BROOKS | 350 |
| DAN AND SI | 354 |
| DRUM-MAJOR DANIEL SIMPSON | 356 |
| TROPHY OF ARMS AS NOW USED | 359 |
| FANEUIL HALL, BOSTON (Head-Quarters) | 361 |
| INTERIOR OF THE DRILL HALL | 362 |

SUMMARY

OF THE

PRINCIPAL AUTHORITIES QUOTED IN THIS VOLUME.

ORIGINAL DOCUMENTS.

PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE.

PATENT ROLLS.—29 Hen. VIII., Part 5, Memb. 45; 4 Eliz., Part 1, Memb. 1, 51, *in dorso*; 12 Eliz., Part 2, Memb. 3, 42, *in dorso*; 13 Eliz., Part 2, Memb. 1, *in dorso*; 38 Eliz., Part 13, Memb. 1, *in dorso*; 3 Jas. I. Part 16, *in dorso*; 8 Chas. I., Part 8, *in dorso*.

STATE PAPERS.—Domestic Series—Eliz., Vols. 17, 78, 147, 157; Jas. I., Vols. 70, 84, 86, 105, 156, 159, 197, 219; Chas. I., Vols. 34, 75, 191, 214, 224, 226, 243, 252, 257, 259, 260, 297, 306, 314, 315, 340, 356, 374, 377, 398, 407, 408, 409, 415, 438; Chas. II., Vols. 14, 118, 120, 170, 172. Colonial Series—Chas. I., Vols. 6, 9.

MILITARY ENTRY BOOKS (Home Office). — Vols. 1667-82, and 1682-88.

CORPORATION OF THE CITY OF LONDON, (RECORD OFFICE, GUILDHALL).

LETTER BOOKS.—Containing the Minutes of the Proceedings of the Court of Common Council, and Court of Aldermen, from 1275 to 1688. These contain almost the only records of those Courts, commencing 140 years before the Journals, and 220 years before the Repertory. Vols. E, H, I, N, Q, S, V, X, Z, AA, CC, DD, EE, FF, GG, HH, QQ.

JOURNALS.—Containing the Minutes of the Proceedings of the Court of Common Council, from 1416 to 1811 (from which time they are printed); also the Proceedings of the Court of Aldermen, until 1495, when the

Repertory was commenced. Vols. 5, 8, 12, 14, 16, 17, 18, 20, 22, 27, 33, 34, 38, 40, 41, 46, 57, 62, 65, 68, 69, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78.

REPERTORY—Containing the Proceedings of the Court of Aldermen, from 1495 to the present time. Since 1853 they are printed. Vols. 1, 2, 5, 12, 13, 17, 25, 31, 32, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 74, 75, 77, 79, 110, 113, 130.

REMEMBRANCIA.—Containing correspondence between the Lord Mayor, Sovereigns, Ministers, Privy Council, &c., from 1580 to 1664; 9 vols. Vols. 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.

PRIVY COUNCIL OFFICE.

COUNCIL REGISTERS.—Containing the original Orders in Council, letters, &c., from the 10th August, 1540 (Hen. VIII.), to the present day, except the volumes from 1602 to May, 1613 (Jas. I.), which have been lost or destroyed. Edw. VI.—Vols. 1, 2, 3. Eliz.—Vols. 1, 3, 5, 7, 9, 10, 12, 14, 15. Jas. I.—Vols. 1, 2, 4, 5. Chas. I.—Vols. 1, 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 15, 16.

HEAD-QUARTERS—THE ARMOURY HOUSE, FINSBURY.

THE MINUTE BOOKS of the Court of Assistants of the Hon. Artillery Company, from 21st Jan., 1657, to 1760.

MISCELLANEOUS MANUSCRIPTS.

BRITISH MUSEUM.

The King's Book of Payments (Hen. VIII.). Additional MSS. No. 21,481.

Collection of Notes on Finsbury Archers. By William Latham, F.S.A. Additional MSS. No. 29,792.

Loyal Archers of Great Britain. By Sir S. Meyrick. Additional MSS. No. 28,801.

Collection for a History of Archery. By William Latham, F.S.A. 1787. Additional MSS. Nos. 29,788 and 29,789.

THE BODLEIAN LIBRARY, OXFORD.

Ashmolean MSS. Vol. 15, No. 1,111; and Vol. 38, No. 1,134.

Rawlinson MSS. Vol. A and B, 385.

Tanner MSS. Vol. 168 (Miscellaneous, No. 1).

ROYAL UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION.

The Ensignes of the Regiments in the Rebellious City of London, both of Trayned Bands and Auxilliaries ; together with the nearest number of their Trayned Soldiers, taken as they marched into Finsbury Feilds, being their last General Muster, Tuesday, Sept. 26th, 1643.

(This valuable MS. contains coloured sketches of the Colours of all the Regiments of Trained Bands and Auxiliaries.)

THE ARMOURERS AND BRAZIERS COMPANY. COURT
BOOK. 1559-1621.LIBRARY OF THE CORPORATION OF THE CITY OF LONDON,
GUILDHALL.

The True Order, Conduct, and Cause of the Muster which was made and showed before the Most High, Noble, and Puissant Prince, King Henry VIII., by the Citizens of London, the 8th of May, in the thirty-first year of his most noble and prosperous reign.

A Few Words to the Trained Bands and Soldiers of London City in these perilous times. By C. Edmonds, Remembrancer. 19th June, 1642.

The Society of Finsbury Archers. (3 Vols.)

HOUSE OF LORDS.

Petition to the House of Lords. 1641.

PRINTED BOOKS.

History of the Hon. Artillery Company. By Anthony Highmore. London, 8vo. 1804.

A Compendium of Military Discipline. By John Blackwell. London, 8vo. 1726.

Fourth Report of the Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts. London, fol. 1874.

Journals of the House of Lords. Fol. Vol. 4. 1641.

The Chronicles of England, from Brute unto the present yeare of Christ, 1580. By John Stow. London, 4to. 1580.

Survey of London. By John Stow. London, 4to. 1598. New edition, 1603.

Survey of London (Stow's). By Anthony Munday. London, 4to. 1618.

The Annales or Generall Chronicle of England. Begun by John Stow, and augmented unto the year 1614 by Edmund Howes. London, fol. 1615. (Black letter.)

A Survey of the Cities of London and Westminster. By John Stow. Corrected and enlarged. And the Survey and History brought down to the present time. By John Strype. London, fol. 1720.

The History of London, from its foundation by the Romans to the present time. By William Maitland. London, fol. 1739. Second Edition, in 2 vols. 1756.

The Environs of London, being an Historical Account of the towns, villages, and hamlets within twelve miles of that Capital. By the Rev. Daniel Lysons. (4 vols.) London, 4to. 1792-96. Supplement. (1 vol.) 1811.

A Complete History and Survey of the Cities of London and Westminster. By Henry Chamberlain. Fol. 1770.

A Survey of London. By Robert Seymour. London, fol. 1734.

History of London. By John Noorthouck. London, 4to. 1773.

History of London. By the Rev. H. Hunter. (2 vols.) London, 4to. 1711.

Londinopolis. By James Howell. London, fol. 1657.

History and Antiquities of the Parish of St. Leonard, Shoreditch. By Sir H. Ellis. London, 4to. 1798.

Memorials of London in the XIII., XIV., and XV. centuries, from the Early Archives of the City of London. By H. T. Riley. London, 8vo. 1868.

London in the Jacobite Times. By Dr. Doran. London, 8vo. 1877. 2 vols.

Hollingshed's Chronicles. (3 vols.) London, fol. 1587. (Black letter.)

A Chronicle at large and neere History of the Affayres of England, and Kings of the same. By R. Grafton. London, (?) fol. 1569.

The Itinerary of John Leland the Antiquary (Leland's Collection). Oxford, 8vo. 1745. (9 vols.)

The Statutes of the Realm.

The Military Forces of the Crown. By C. M. Clode. London, 8vo. 1869. (2 vols.)

History of the British Army. By Sir S. Scott, Bart. London, 8vo. 1868. (2 vols.)

Military Antiquities. By F. Grose. London, 4to. (2 vols.) 1786-88. New Editions in 1801 and 1812.

Memorials of English Affairs. By B. Whitelocke. London, fol. 1732.

History of the Rebellion and Civil War in England. By Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon. Oxford, 8vo. 1849. (7 vols.)

The Diary and Correspondence of Samuel Pepys. London, 8vo. 1870.

The Tattler. No. 41. 1709.

London's Armoury. By Richard Wallis, citizen and arms painter. London, fol. 1677. (Contains engravings of the Arms of all City Companies, including the Hon. Artillery Company.)

The Double-Armed Man, by the New Invention. By William Nead, Archer. 1625.

The Art of Embattailing an Army, on the Second Part of Œlian's Tactics. By Captain John Bingham. London, fol. 1631.

Militarie Discipline, or the Young Artillery Man. By Lieut.-Col. Wm. Bariffe. London, 4to. 1638.

Lord Mayors' Pageants. By F. W. Fairholt. Printed for the Percy Society. 1843-5. (3 vols.)

The Complete Body of the Art Military. By Lieut.-Col. Richard Elton. (Second Edition.) London, fol. 1659.

History of the Royal Company of Archers, the Queen's Body Guard for Scotland. By J. B. Paul. London, royal 8vo. 1875.

An Historical Sketch of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company. By Z. G. Whitman, A.M. Boston, U.S., 8vo. 1820.

MISCELLANEOUS PAMPHLETS, &c.

Mars; His Triumph, &c. An Exercise performed on the 18th of October, 1638, in Merchant Taylors' Hall, by certain Gentlemen of the Artillery Garden. London, 4to. 1639.

A true and exact Relation of the Marchings of the Two Regiments of the Trained Bands of the City of London, &c. By Henry Foster, Sergeant. London, 4to. 1643.

The Parliament Scout communicating His Intelligence to the Kingdome, &c. London, 4to. 1643.

A True Relation of the Late Battell neere Newbery, &c. London, 4to. 1643.

A True and impartial relation of the Battaile Betwixt His Majesty's Army and that of the Rebels near Newbury, &c. Oxford, 4to. 1643.

The True Informer. No. 2. London, 4to. 1643.

The Manner of the March and Embattelling of the Trayned Bands and Auxiliaries of the City of London, &c. London, 4to. 1643.

London's Artillery : briefly containing the Noble Practice of that Worthie Society. By Richard Nicolls. London. 1643 (?).

London's Triumph. By J. Tatham. 1685. (See Collection of London Pageants in Guildhall Library.)

Suggestions for the Improvement of the Lord Mayor's Show. By G. Godwin, F.R.S. London. 1850. (Only ten copies printed.)

London Pageants. By J. G. Nichols. London, 8vo. 1831.

A Letter giving An Account of the Entertainment of the Duke of York, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, by the Artillery Company, on Tuesday, October 21st, 1679. (Tracts A 9, 5. O. Cromwell, No. 3. Guildhall Library.)

An Exercise of Arms Performed by the Artillery Company, 1728. (Bodleian Library) Gough, London. No. 278.

His Majesty's Letter to the Artillery Company, with an Account of their Proceedings at the Choice of several Officers for the ensuing year, on Wednesday, the 9th of this instant, Feb. 1680-1. London, Printed for V. T. 1681. (Fol. sheet.)

Ayme for Finsburie Archers, or an Alphabeticall Table of the Names of every Marke within the same field, with their true distances according to the dimensuration of the line. Newly gathered, and amended by James Partridge. London, 24mo. 1628. (Contains the names of 164 Marks.)

NOTE.—A similar book, with the same title, was published in 1594, and in 1604. Another edition was published in 1738, containing a plan of the said fields, and marks, &c.; a copy of which is in the Guildhall Library, and contains the names of the Captains and Lieutenants of the Easter and Whitsun Target from 1717 to 1738, which is continued in MS. to the year 1753.

PREFACE.

"AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT IS TO BE KEPT IN EVERY CORPS, OF ITS SERVICES, &c.; STATING THE PERIOD AND CIRCUMSTANCES OF THE ORIGINAL FORMATION OF THE REGIMENT; THE MEANS BY WHICH IT HAS, FROM TIME TO TIME, BEEN RECRUITED; THE STATIONS AT WHICH IT HAS BEEN EMPLOYED, AND THE PERIOD OF ITS ARRIVAL AT AND DEPARTURE FROM SUCH STATIONS. . . . THE BADGES AND DEVICES WHICH THE REGIMENT HAS BEEN PERMITTED TO BEAR, AND THE CAUSES ON ACCOUNT OF WHICH SUCH BADGES AND DEVICES, OR ANY OTHER MARKS OF DISTINCTION, WERE GRANTED, ARE TO BE STATED; ALSO THE DATES OF SUCH PERMISSION BEING GRANTED. ANY PARTICULAR ALTERATION IN THE CLOTHING, ARMS, ACCOUTREMENTS, COLOURS, HORSE FURNITURE, &c., ARE TO BE RECORDED, AND A REFERENCE MADE TO THE DATES OF THE ORDERS UNDER WHICH SUCH ALTERATIONS WERE MADE. THE VARIOUS ALTERATIONS WHICH MAY BE MADE IN THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE REGIMENT, EITHER BY AUGMENTATION OR REDUCTION, ARE ALSO TO BE STATED IN THIS BOOK."—*Queen's Regulations and Orders for the Army*, Section 23, para. 44.

As the most ancient military body or corps in the British Empire, if not in the world, this veteran Company has long been famous, although its origin and early progress has been involved in obscurity.

The Company has always been entirely distinct from all other military organisations, and, strictly speaking, belongs neither to the Militia, Yeomanry, nor Volunteers, nor yet to the more ancient Trained Bands. It is the only military body over which Parliament has no control, being entirely self-supporting and receiving neither capitation grant nor any aid whatever from the public funds, but is governed under numerous Royal Warrants which have been granted and confirmed by succeeding Sovereigns from the time of Henry VIII. Thus, as the Company

exists during the pleasure and under the direct control of the Crown, it is perhaps entitled to consider itself more as a personal body-guard to the Sovereign than any other corps.

The Company was incorporated by Henry VIII., on the 25th of August, 1537, more than a century before any other British regiment was raised, under the title of the Fraternity or Guild of St. George, and consisted of Archers; but at a very early period of its existence it appears to have adopted the use of Artillery. The records of these times are very vague and incomplete, but reference is often made to a similar body styled the "Fraternity of Artillery in Great and Small Ordnance," or the "Gunnors of the Tower," to whom the last Prior of the Convent of St. Mary Spittal granted a lease of a portion of ground near Bishopsgate, in 1537, for thrice ninety-nine years, for the practice of great and small Artillery. This field was then known as the Teazel Ground: it afterwards became famous as the Artillery Yard, or Garden. No trace now remains of their Charter, or of the lease, although it is frequently referred to in after years, and some suppose that this Society was identical with the Artillery Company; but this is at best very doubtful, although they were closely associated, using the same ground in common, and being for a long period the only two bodies who practised and taught the use of Artillery.

William Thomas, Master-Gunner in 1581-2, made every endeavour to get the Charter of the Fraternity of Artillery renewed, or a new one granted, and speaks of the lease of the Ground as having been granted to the Gunnors of the Tower, whom he represented, and who always seem to have held possession of it. The Company appear to have been granted the use of it by order of the Privy Council. The Correspondence and Suggestions of Thomas on this subject are of such interest that they are given in full in the Appendix.

From a very early period the Company was looked upon as a nursery or school for training soldiers, there being no standing army in those days. As far back as the year 1588 (made memorable by the Armada), they had gained a name as experienced soldiers, and were known as the Captains of the Artillery Garden; it being recorded that many of them were

selected to take command of the Trained Bands in various parts of the kingdom.

In the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries the officers of the City Trained Bands were obliged to become members of the Company, and subsequently all sergeants and others had to produce a certificate of membership before they could be appointed or promoted.

William III. issued a Warrant, dated 21st March, 1697, desiring that the Company should be maintained so as to best answer the ends of its institution: "We therefore recommend unto your care that all the Commissioned Officers of the Trained Bands of our said City may list themselves members of the said Society, that so, by the frequent practice of Arms according to their rules, they may be the better qualified to perform their trust in their respective commands." And this same clause is still retained in the latest Royal Warrant, dated 1863, although it has practically ceased to be observed; on the contrary, officers are not only discouraged, but, with few exceptions, are not allowed to hold two commissions. This is a circumstance to be regretted, inasmuch as no inconvenience could ensue, and more opportunities would be given to officers for learning their duties and keeping up their knowledge.

In 1591 the Company appears to have fallen off, as an Order in Council was issued directing steps to be taken to revive their exercises. Again, in 1610, it became necessary to recruit more actively, their musters having almost ceased from want of members, who were now so few that this last-named year has long been erroneously supposed to mark an entirely new formation and reviving of the Company. Two years later they were authorised by the Privy Council to train and exercise in any convenient place in or near the City, provided their number did not exceed 250, which was increased to 500 in 1614, at which period, and down to the Restoration, they were generally known as "The Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden." The right to use the Artillery Garden was a constant source of dispute between the Master-Gunner of the Tower and the Company, and this probably induced the latter to apply to the Corporation, in 1614, for a field in which to exercise. They

were thereupon granted the use of the uppermost field in Finsbury; but in 1635 a Committee was appointed by the Corporation to inspect Bunhill with a view to grant the Company a piece of ground for their own exclusive use. Their report, however, was not presented until the year 1641, when the ground they now occupy was granted to them, and styled the New Artillery Garden; but they continued to make use of the Old Artillery Garden until the year 1658, when they transferred their Armoury to the New Ground.

In December, 1698, they obtained permission to build on the South (or Chiswell Street) side of the Ground, but nothing was done until 1709, and the buildings were not completed till 1722, in which year they applied for permission to build on the West (or Bunhill) side which was granted in 1728.

George I., in the year 1722, made the Company a present of £500, as a mark of his approbation of their appearance at a review held by him: this sum was then set apart to form a fund with which to erect a New Armoury, which was much needed. The building, however, was not commenced until the year 1734, and was completed in 1736, but has since been added to considerably.

In former times the Lord Mayor and Aldermen were very liberal in their support of the Company: as early as 1613 they voted a sum of money to the Captain and Lieutenant, and, in 1620, they commenced a yearly vote of sack and wine for the Company at their annual feast, in lieu of which, from 1625 to 1669, they gave them £10 every year for the same purpose. In 1719 the Court of Lieutenancy agreed to pay £78 per annum, to be divided between the members of the Company, who were officers in the Trained Bands and who attended the parades regularly, and £72 per annum to the Company for the use of the Company's arms and accoutrements by the said officers.

The members all paid a subscription or quarterage, and it appears that, in 1634, the Privy Council ordered that the Captain was to be paid £50 per annum out of the moneys so received.

The example of the Company in training and exercise was followed in other parts of the kingdom, the Corporation of many towns applying to the Privy Council for permission to form

" Artillery Yards," as they were called. Colchester and Bury St. Edmunds appear to have been the first, in 1621, being followed by Chester, Bristol, Yarmouth, Ipswich, and Nottingham.

No Regiment can boast of a greater number of distinguished persons than are borne on the roll of this Company. From the time when Charles, Prince of Wales, and James, Duke of York, joined, in 1641, the Sovereign or the Prince of Wales has always held the command as Captain-General. The names of other great and celebrated persons in every reign who were members are too numerous to be here recorded.

The Company did not, as is supposed, take any part as a body in the Civil Wars, and from April, 1644, to January, 1657, even the election of members was suspended; but as all the officers of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries belonged to, or were taken from, the ranks of the Company, they have some grounds for claiming that they were well represented in the engagements between the King's and the Parliamentary troops.

The officers of the Company, both civil and military, were elected annually down to the reign of Her Majesty the Queen. Under the authority of an Order in Council, issued in 1612, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen elected the Captain, and the Company all other officers; but in 1632, in consequence of disputes between the Corporation and the Company, the King took upon himself the choice of the Captain, the Treasurer being elected by the Company, and all other officers by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen. In the year 1634, however, this was again altered, the King still retaining the choice of the Captain, but the Lord Mayor and Aldermen only choosing the President, all others being elected by the Company. After the Restoration it became customary for the Court of Assistants to submit the names of all the officers, chosen at the General Court, to the Captain-General for his approval.

In the years 1681-5 the Annual Elections were suspended by Royal Warrants, in order to retain in office those who were considered to belong to the Court party; the politics of those who governed the Company being then of considerable importance to the Crown, as their influence in a great measure controlled the civic elections in the City. In 1842, the appoint-

ment of the Field Officers and Adjutant was reserved to the Crown; and in 1849 it was extended to all the Military Officers who from that time have held commissions direct from the Queen, enduring for five years only, but being renewable at the expiration of that period.

Mention has already been made of the Annual Feasts which were formerly held, and which were maintained with great regularity from 1620 until the year 1685, when, for some reason, the feast was postponed by the King. On these occasions it was customary for the Company and the invited guests to attend one of the City churches, to hear a sermon from some previously elected preacher, who usually received "three broad pieces of gold," or three guinea pieces, for his trouble. The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and the principal City officials invariably attended, and many persons of distinction; His Royal Highness the Duke of York, when Captain-General, being almost invariably present. The entertainment was arranged by eight stewards, elected at the Annual General Court, who were usually persons of distinction.

About the middle of the last century it was the custom for the newly-elected members of the Court of Assistants to provide a dinner for the others; this entertainment being known by the name of the Colts' Feast.

The Great Vellum Book of the Company is highly prized and of much interest and value, being the earliest record the Company now possesses; it contains the signatures of the Captain-Generals from the Restoration, besides those of a multitude of celebrated characters who at various periods became members of the Company: it commences in the year 1610, and also includes the roll of Members from that date to the end of the year 1682.

The Minute Books of the Court of Assistants commence on the 21st of January, 1657, from which time they are complete: all the earlier documents have, unfortunately, been lost or destroyed, having been detained by Lieutenant-Colonel Manby, a Treasurer of the Company, who appears to have successfully defied all the numerous efforts made for many years to recover them.

All details previous to the Restoration are consequently very meagre, and the origin of many customs cannot now be traced. The Company had three great parades in the year, called General Days or General Marches, which usually took place in May, June, and August, when they marched to a village in the north of London called Baumes or Balmes (at one time in the parish of St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, but afterwards in St. John's, Hackney), where they practised various manœuvres and had a sham fight; and as there were no official drill books or "Field Exercises" in those days, the evolutions were all laid down beforehand by the Clerk and Adjutant and one of the Lieutenants or Ensigns of the Ground. Some of these exercises are curious and amusing, and will be found in their place in the body of this work. The Company also furnished a Guard of Honour to the Lord Mayor on Lord Mayor's Day, when he went to Westminster to be sworn in.

The Officers were generally chosen in turn to "Lead" or take the command on days of exercise and for the marches, there being six Commanders or Leaders, and the same number of Lieutenants, Ensigns, and Half-Pikemen. In 1684, the title of the three Senior Leaders was changed to General, Lieutenant-General, and Major, the remainder being styled Captains.

In 1665, the year of the Great Plague, the Company lost a large proportion of its Officers. An attempt to form a plague-pit in the Ground was prevented, although, according to tradition, one of the largest was made at the end of the Ground. The Great Fire, the following year, did but little injury beyond damaging the walls; but the result of these two terrible calamities told greatly against the Company for a long period, and but little activity was displayed, their time being probably too fully occupied to attend to military exercises.

The title "Honourable" first appears in the Company's books in 1685; but it does not seem to have been generally adopted for years after, and the Company was not so styled in the Royal Warrants until the year 1863.

Probably the most remarkable and interesting occurrence in the history of the Company was the formation, in the year 1638, of a branch of the Company, or what might be called a second

battalion, in America, by Robert Keayne, together with some other members of the Company, who had emigrated to New England. This corps, the first and oldest of all military bodies in America, continues to flourish at the present day as the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company of Boston, Massachusetts.

The old parent Company may well be proud of a representative, junior in years only to itself, and equal in point of numbers. The case, indeed, has no parallel; and we may well be gratified at having the Company's name perpetuated by a corps which is celebrated throughout that great country.

In many respects they are far more Conservative than the old Company, by still maintaining several good old customs which have gradually fallen into disuse at home. As in former times with us, many of their members hold commissions in other regiments; the officers are still elected annually, and carry the old pikes and halberds; and the annual sermon and feast have been kept up from the year of their formation to the present day. The sketch offered of the Company in this volume is very brief and imperfect; but space would not allow justice to be done to so interesting a theme, nor is it desirable that such an attempt should be made, as their complete history is being prepared by an able past Commander of the Company. The materials for the chapter containing the account of the Company here given were furnished by Colonel the Hon. Marshall P. Wilder, Major Benj. Perley Poore, and Capt. John L. Stevenson, Commander. To these officers I cannot sufficiently express my thanks for their courtesy and kindness in so promptly and liberally responding to my application for information. To Commander Stevenson I am especially indebted for a large number of photographs, some of which appear in this volume, and for numerous letters containing much valuable information; and it is from the Notes supplied by Major Poore that most of the latter part of the fourteenth chapter has been compiled.

In a work of this description one is placed under so many obligations to friends for assistance that it is manifestly impossible to acknowledge them all individually, but to three or four, to whom I am principally indebted, it is a duty and a pleasure

to record my thanks and apologies for the trouble I have given them.

At the Public Record Office I obtained much information of the greatest value, for which I am principally indebted to the advice and assistance of Alfred Kingston, Esq. For access to the splendid mine of wealth of literary treasures which lie buried in the archives of the Corporation of the City of London, I am indebted to the kind permission of the Corporation, granted through the Library Committee; and I am under especial obligation to Reginald R. Sharpe, Esq., B.C.L., for counsel and help—often required and always freely given.

To W. H. Overall, Esq., F.S.A., Librarian of the Corporation, I have also to express my thanks; as also to Hubert Dynes Ellis, Esq., the energetic and indefatigable Secretary of the Honourable Artillery Company, for his kind assistance.

My thanks are also due to T. D. Sullivan, Esq. (late 56th Regiment), the Assistant-Secretary and Librarian of the Royal United Service Institution, for much interesting matter. The drawings for the Armorial Bearings of the Company, and the Colours, were kindly supplied by Sir Albert William Woods, Garter King of Arms, and Inspector of Colours, from the College of Arms—the highest possible guarantee for their accuracy.

In the year 1726 John Blackwell, the Clerk and Adjutant, published a small work on the various exercises with Pikes, Halberds, and Firelocks, to which was added a brief sketch of the history of the Company. In 1804, Anthony Highmore published a history of the Company down to the year 1802, but this work is very rare. But so many new sources of information are now open which were not accessible in those days, that it has become possible to make a work of this description much more complete and accurate than formerly.

With this object in view I obtained the permission of the Court of Assistants to search the records of the Company for that purpose. The Charter of the Company was only discovered after many fruitless attempts had been made to recover it. On the 21st of February, 1749, the Court of Assistants appointed a Committee to search for the Charter and other Warrants, and they presented their report on the 9th of August, 1754, stating

that nothing could be found except enrolments of the Letters Patent for Archery in the City granted by James I. and Charles I.

The subject was again taken up at the General Court on the 5th of December, 1822, and a Committee was appointed on the 6th of February, 1823, to inquire into the rights and privileges of the Company; and they continued their labours until 1829, when, in their report dated the 12th of November, which was presented to the General Court, held on the 3rd of December, they state that it was not until the previous April that the Charter of Henry VIII. was discovered. It appears, however, to have been again lost sight of, as the Deputy-Keeper of the Public Records, in 1844, says * that many documents had been found "which there is great reason to suspect are not upon the Roll—some of them being of a curious historical nature, such as the original Charter of the Artillery Company, which was enrolled by order of Sir John Leach, and an exemplification afterwards made of it for the Company."

In compiling this history there were two courses open to me, either to attempt to make an historical narrative interesting to the general reader, or to enter into facts and figures and matters of small detail, of interest and importance only to those concerned, but which naturally entail much greater labour. Desiring that the history should be accurate, reliable, and useful, which it could not be without such details, I have chosen the latter course.

Nothing has been taken for granted; all the original records have been carefully gone through line by line, and no printed authority has been accepted when original documents were accessible. Even from Highmore's work, only extracts have been taken which could not be obtained elsewhere; and in every case when the facts are not derived from the Company's Records, the authority is given; which will account for the large number of foot-notes in the first half of this volume.

A complete Summary of all the principal authorities made

* Fifth Report of the Deputy-Keeper of the Public Records. 1844. Appendix I., No. 9, page 12.

use of, and the places where they may be found, is given, which I trust may prove of service to those who desire either to test the accuracy of these pages or to enquire more fully into similar subjects, having myself often felt the want of some such assistance. It is hardly necessary to remark that this summary does not include the countless books and documents which have been examined without result, as they would occupy too much space, but only those which are actually quoted in these pages.

In the division of the chapters, the reigns of the Sovereigns have been followed, in consequence of its being the custom for a Sovereign, on ascending the throne, to grant the Company a new Warrant confirming their privileges, and thereby conferring on them, as it were, a new lease of their existence.

A second volume will complete the History of this distinguished Regiment; and it is possible that a Supplement may also be issued, giving a complete Roll of all the Members of the Company from the earliest times, with their services, together with other statistical and miscellaneous information.

In conclusion, I can only express my regret that so interesting a subject should not have fallen into more able hands than mine. I have endeavoured, in some measure, to atone for the many defects and imperfections of this volume by arranging the matter as clearly as possible; while the aid of a copious Index, and the addition of the numerous Illustrations, will, I hope, render it more acceptable and increase its interest to the general reader as well as to this ancient and distinguished Regiment.

G. A. R.

HEAD-QUARTERS: THE ARMOURY HOUSE,
FINSBURY, LONDON,
24th June, 1878.

SUCCESSION

OF THE

CAPTAIN-GENERALS AND COLONELS

OF THE

HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

| | YEARS. |
|---|-----------|
| 1.—H. R. H. JAMES, DUKE OF YORK, afterwards JAMES II. | 1660-1689 |
| 2.—WILLIAM III. | 1690-1702 |
| 3.— <i>Henry, Duke of Norfolk</i> * | 1690 |
| 4.—H. R. H. GEORGE, PRINCE OF DENMARK (Con- sort of Queen Anne) | 1702-1708 |
| 5.—H. R. H. GEORGE, PRINCE OF WALES, afterwards GEORGE II. | 1715-1760 |
| 6.—H. R. H. GEORGE AUGUSTUS FREDERICK, PRINCE OF WALES, afterwards GEORGE IV.† ... | 1766-1830 |
| 7.—WILLIAM IV. | 1830-1837 |
| 8.—H. R. H. AUGUSTUS FREDERICK, DUKE OF SUSSEX‡ ... | 1837-1843 |
| 9.—H. R. H. THE PRINCE CONSORT ... | 1843-1861 |
| 10.—H. R. H. THE PRINCE OF WALES ... | 1863 |

* The Duke of Norfolk was appointed (temporarily) Captain-General during the absence of the King in Ireland and Holland.

† Prince George was not four years of age when he was made Captain-General.

‡ William IV. appointed H. R. H. the Duke of Sussex *Colonel*, in the same Warrant declaring himself Captain-General; the two ranks were combined by Her Majesty in 1837, when H. R. H. the Duke of Sussex was appointed Captain-General and Colonel, from which time the title has been retained.

NOTE.—Previous to the Restoration, the Commanding Officer was only styled Captain, or Leader and was, in fact, an Adjutant.

A PLAN OF THE ARTILLERY GROUND FINSBURY

The area coloured shows the original extent of the ground.

Portion held on lease from Her Majesty's Commissioners of
Lieutenancy of the City of London..... Red

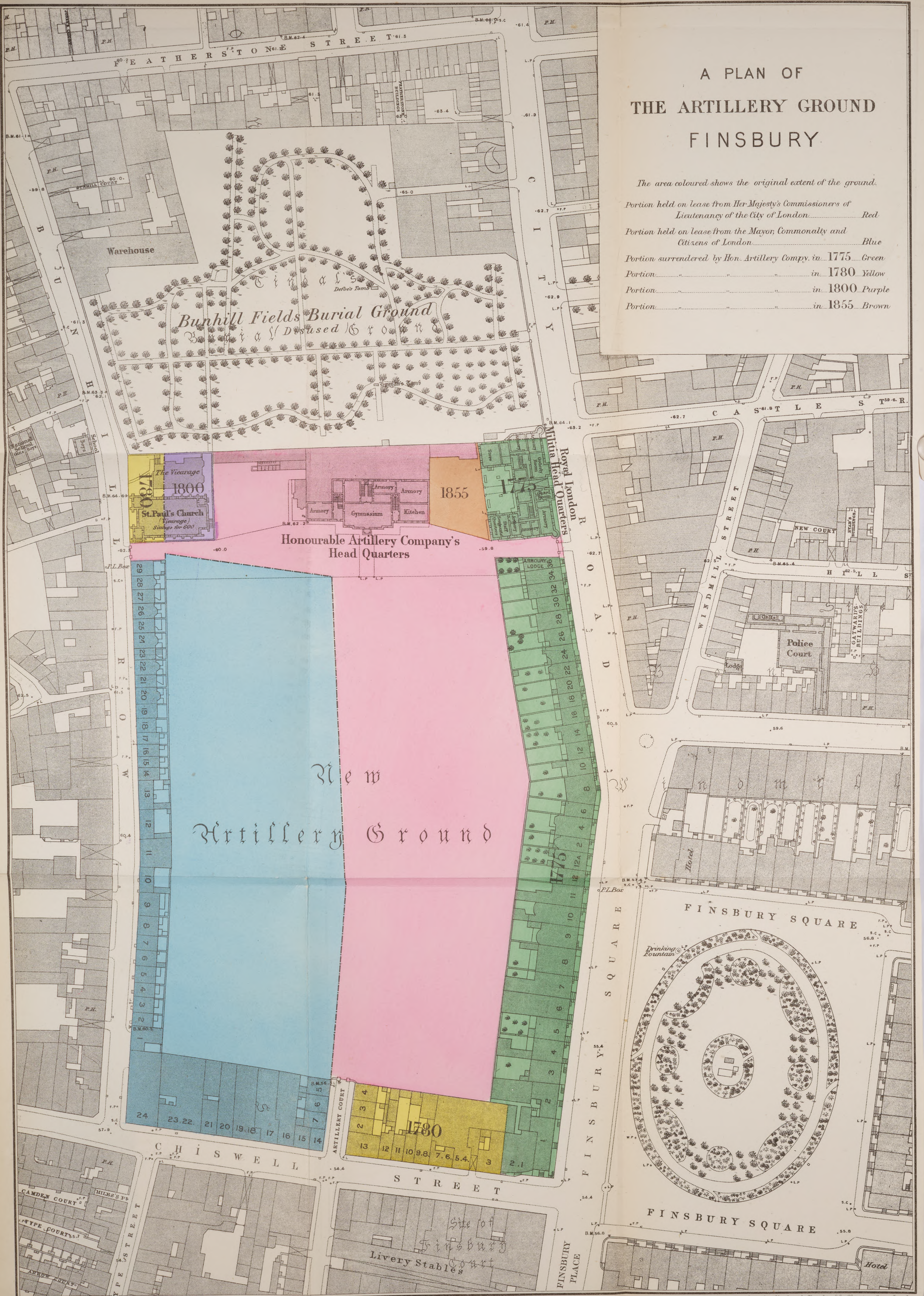
Portion held on lease from the Mayor, Commonalty and
Citizens of London..... Blue

Portion surrendered by Hon. Artillery Compy. in 1775..... Green

Portion..... in 1780..... Yellow

Portion..... in 1800..... Purple

Portion..... in 1855..... Brown



HISTORY

OF THE

HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

CHAPTER I.

EARLY HISTORY OF ARCHERY AND ARTILLERY.

CONTENTS.—Title of Company.—Meaning of word Artillery.—Its Ancient Use.—Introduced into England.—First Cannons in City of London.—Archers in Britain under Normans and Saxons.—Cross-bows introduced 1190.—Firearms or Hand-Guns, 1375.—Number of Archers provided by City Companies in Sixteenth Century.—Games made illegal 1363.—Broad Arrow, Ancient Crown Mark, 1386.—Statutes for promoting Archery.—Proclamations for encouraging Archery.—The Greenwich Armoury Mills.—Company of Surgeons.—Invention of Grenades, 1594.—Bows exchanged for Calivers and Muskets, 1595.

THE Title of this Ancient Company has long ceased to fully describe its composition. The word "Artillery" in modern times signifies ordnance only, whereas it was formerly applied to all kinds of offensive weapons, more especially to Archery, and in this latter meaning was universally adopted so long as that weapon continued to flourish. It is in this sense that the word Artillery is used in the Old Testament, where it only once appears in our English Version.* The original Hebrew signifies merely instruments, but, Archery being the principal weapon

* 1 Sam. xx. 40, "And Jonathan gave his artillery unto his lad, and said unto him, Go, carry *them* to the city."

in use in the reign of James I., the translators gave the common meaning as it was then understood by the word Artillery, in which sense it may readily be accounted for, being the customary term for Archery long before firearms were adopted.*

Passing over the earlier instances of the mention of "incendiary projectiles" amongst the natives of China and Hindustan, Colonel Chesney, quotes the following passage from a Hindu bard:—"Oh! chief of Gajné, buckle on your armour, and prepare your fire-machines"; the meaning of which is explained in a following stanza, that the culivers and cannons made a loud report when they were fired, and the noise of the ball was heard upwards of 1,400 yards off. The fact of cannon balls having been propelled by means of gunpowder in India as early as A.D. 1200, the epoch of the poet, appears to be established, although the use of Artillery is not mentioned by any European writer before the fourteenth century. The Moors, according to Condé, used artillery against Saragossa in 1118; and in 1132 a culverin of 4lb. calibre was made. In 1157, when the Spaniards took Niebla, the Moors defended themselves by machines which threw darts and stones by means of fire.

In 1280 artillery was used against Cordova; and in 1306 or 1308 Ferdinand IV. took Gibraltar from the Moors by means of artillery.

These, and other examples, render it almost certain that the use of gunpowder became first known in Europe through the Moorish conquests and warfare in Spain, although the true components of gunpowder were known to Friar Bacon, and were made generally known throughout Europe by Bartholdus Schwartz in 1320.

Edward III. of England used "Crakeys of War" during his campaign against the Scots in 1327, and is said to have used artillery at the battle of Cressy in 1346; but this is doubtful, and no notice of them at the subsequent battle of Poitiers can be traced. In 1347 Edward did, however, use artillery at the siege of Calais, as did the Prince of Wales in 1356 in reducing the Castle of Romozantin. In 1378 Richard

* Highmore, pp. 12-14.

II. employed 400 cannons, which fired day and night in his unsuccessful attack on St. Malo.*

In an Inventory of Munitions of War, provided by the City against an expected invasion by the French in the reign of Edward III., this interesting entry occurs:—"Also in the Chamber of the Guildhall there are six instruments of latone called gones, and five roleres to the same. Also pellets of lead for the same instruments, which weigh 4 hundredweight and a half. Also 32 pounds of powder for the said instruments."

Latone, or latten, was a hard, yellow mixed metal, closely resembling brass.

This is probably the earliest passage at present known that bears reference to the use of cannon in England; and, this taken into consideration, the information it gives is remarkably full; the earliest hitherto pointed out in the Privy Wardrobe accounts (in Mr. Hewitt's *Arms and Armour of the Fourteenth Century*) being five years later in date. The probability is, that the Bardi, a Mercantile Society of Florence, had imported them, as they are mentioned as supplying the City authorities with cloth two years before; and M. Libri has discovered that cannon were already used for the defence of Florence in 1326.†

Although artillery was used from the time of Edward III., and purchased from abroad by all our succeeding sovereigns, it seems strange that none of our workmen attempted to cast them, till the reign of Henry VIII., when—in the year 1521, according to Stow, or 1535, according to Camden—great brass ordnance or cannons and culverins were first cast in England by one John Owen, whose family, with the Pitts, continued to manufacture guns until the reign of James.‡ About the year

* *Encyclopædia Britannica*, eighth edition, Vol. III., pp. 683, 684. For fuller details regarding Artillery and Guns, &c., see *Scott's History of the British Army*, Vol. II., pp. 197-247; *Grose's Military Antiquities*, Vol. I., pp. 381-392; and *Hollingshed*, Vol. I., pp. 198, 199.

† Letter Book F, flyleaf (Latin), A.D. 1339, and *Riley's Memorials of London*.

‡ *Grose's Military Antiquities*, Vol. I., p. 383, and *Howe's Stow*, p. 571.

1593 great quantities of iron ordnance were manufactured to be sent abroad, in consequence of which the number of foundries was limited.*

Artillery is a term derived from the French, signifying Archery, and from that nation the English seem to have learnt at least the use of the crossbow.

William the Conqueror had a considerable number of bowmen in his army at the battle of Hastings, when no mention is made of such troops on the side of Harold, and it is supposed that these Norman archers shot with the arbalest or crossbow.

Bows and arrows are of very ancient date, for we read of them in Scripture as early as 1892 B.C., in which it is said of Ishmael that he "dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer."†

When the Romans first invaded Britain under Julius Cæsar, in 55 B.C., the arms of the British were the spear or lance, sword, dagger, battle-axe, and bows and arrows, the latter being made of reed, with flint, bone, or metal heads. The metal used in the construction of arms was bronze.

Between A.D. 450 and 1066 the Saxons may have used the bow, but in the latter part they discontinued their use except for the chase; for Henry of Huntingdon makes William the Conqueror speak of the Saxons as a nation not even having arrows; they were, however, famed for their expertness with the mace and battle-axe. In 1066 Harold II., having observed that the heavy armour of the Saxons prevented them from pursuing the Welsh into their recesses, commanded them to use lighter weapons, and armour made of leather only.

Under the Normans the archers were a most important body, and rendered invaluable service at the battle of Hastings, which was decided by them; and from this time, and for many centuries after, the bow was the chief arm of the English, being used both by mounted troops as well as infantry. The weapons used from the Conquest were principally bows and arrows, half-pike, spears, halberds, maces, various kinds of battle-axes, swords, and daggers. In the reign of Henry I. (1100-1135) archery was

* Strype's Stow, Book I., p. 108.

† Gen. xxi. 20.

much cultivated, and great numbers of bowmen were brought into the field, and an Act was passed freeing from the charge of murder anyone who, in practising with arrows or darts, should kill a person standing near.

The cross-bow appears to have been used in the chase in this reign.

The Irish at this period were still without the bow, and the English conquests in Ireland were due to its use; but the Welsh bowmen were celebrated for their expertness.

During the reign of Richard I. (1189-99) the arbalest, or cross-bow was adopted as a weapon of war; its use was forbidden by the second Lateran Council, in 1139 as fatal and cruel, and again by Pope Innocent III., about the year 1200. Many of the cross-bows were provided with sights. Archers were preferred as infantry, and cross-bowmen as cavalry.

In 1285 Edward I. passed the celebrated Act known as the Statute of Winchester, by which every male between fifteen and sixty years of age had to provide himself with certain arms, according to the quantity of his goods or land.*

Firearms were introduced in the reign of Edward III. Authorities differ in their statements regarding the exact year and country in which they were invented; and the actual date of the first portable firearm, the hand-gun, is involved in obscurity. An inquisition, taken at Huntercombe in Yorkshire, in 1375, mentions the attack on the manor house by forty men armed, among other weapons, with "gonnes," supposed to be the hand-gun.† In 1341 an order was issued to the sheriffs of most of the English counties to provide 500 white bows and 500 bundles of arrows for the intended war against France.

In the famous battle of Cressy, in 1346, our chroniclers state that we had 2,800 archers, to whom our victory was chiefly ascribed. The French historian, Philip de Comines, agrees with our own writers in asserting that the English archers excelled those of every other nation; and Sir John Fortescue says again

* Scott's History of the British Army, Vol. I., p. 255, and Vol. II., p. 78.

† Text Book for School of Musketry, pp. 82-88.

and again, "that the might of the realme of England standyth upon archers." The superior dexterity of the archers gave the English a great advantage over both the French and the Scots. The French depended chiefly on their men-at-arms, and the Scots on their pikemen; but the ranks of both were often thinned and thrown into disorder by flights of arrows, before they could reach their enemies.*

In 1355 the City of London provided 25 men-in-arms, and 500 archers, all habited in the same uniform; a splendid present to the King, which he received with great satisfaction.†

The various City Companies in olden times had to keep a certain number of bowmen. Mention is made of a muster of the men, and number of arms belonging to each Company, as early as May, 1448.‡ On the eve of the St. Peter and St. John, in the year 1518, a muster of the bowmen found by each of the City Companies, the number belonging to each Company was from two to eight men each.§ The number of men supplied by twenty-six of the principal City Companies in 1585 amounted to about 2,800; from the Grocers and Haberdashers, mustering 395 each, to the Stationers, and Barbers and Surgeons, with twenty-seven, and twenty-four respectively.||

But though the English archers had justly acquired a high degree of reputation over all Europe, and had contributed greatly to the brilliant success of their country's arms in France and elsewhere, yet a few years' peace sunk their manly, martial, and elegant art into disuse, especially in the Metropolis, where it had given place to amusements, some trivial, some ruinous, and some barbarous and inhuman. Edward endeavoured to call off the citizens from pursuits so unworthy, by restoring the practice of Archery, an exercise at once wholesome, useful, and inexpensive. For this purpose, in 1363, he addressed letters to the Sheriffs of London, enjoining that in places in the City, as well within the liberties as without, where they should see it expe-

* Encyclopædia Britannica, eighth edition, Vol. III., pp. 424-8.

† Hunter's London, pp. 237, 238.

‡ Journal, Vol. V., f. 10, 11.

§ Letter Book N, f. 79, 8th June.

|| Stow, Vol. II., p. 451, and Maitland, Vol. I., p. 269.

dient, public proclamation should be made, that every one of the said City, strong in body, at leisure time or holidays, should use in their recreations bows and arrows, or pellets, or bolts, and learn and exercise the art of shooting; forbidding all, on pain of imprisonment, in any manner to apply themselves to the throwing of stones, wood, iron, hand-ball, foot-ball, bandy-ball, cambuch, or cock-fighting, or other such-like vain plays, which had no profit in them.*

The most ancient mark for Crown property is the "Broad Arrow," at one time only used by the Admiralty, but now used by the War Department for every description of stores, and is too well known to need description. It was in common use at a very early period, as the following extract from the Records of the Corporation of the City of London, in the reign of Richard II., in 1386, will show.

"On the 24th of December Thomas Stokes was brought before the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, for having during the past eight days gone to the houses of several brewers, pretending to be an officer and a taker of ale for the King's household, and there marked several barrels full of ale with a mark called 'arewehede,' saying that those barrels were for the household of their Lord the King, whereas in truth he was not an officer belonging to the King, and he falsely and deceitfully received divers sums of money from the brewers that they might have the ale in peace; he admitted his guilt, and was sentenced to be put upon the pillory for an hour."†

Charles I., on the 9th of March, 1627, signed a Warrant ordering the letters C.R., as a mark for Crown property, which was to be used for all stores for land service, and for sea service C.R. and an anchor. This was done to try and prevent purloining and changing stores from the armouries and other places.‡

As early as 1487 shooting with the long-bow appears to have been on the decline, and during the succeeding eighty years

* Hunter's London.

† Letter Book H, f. 209 (Latin), and Riley's Memorials of London, p. 489.

‡ Clode's Military Forces of the Crown, Vol. II., pp. 678-680.

a number of Acts were passed for the encouragement of this exercise.*

The preamble of the Act passed in 1487† set forth that as the defence of the realm depended on archery, which had fallen into decay from the dearth and excessive price of long bows, and directed that, after the feast of the Purification of Our Lady, any person who sold bows for more than 3s. 4d. should be fined 40s. for every one sold.

A few years later, sufficient bow staves not having been brought into the kingdom for a long time past, the Custom duties were abolished for all bows 6½ feet long, to encourage merchants to import them, so as to increase archers and the artillery of the same.‡

Cross-bows next became popular, but were discouraged, and many Acts were passed laying restrictions on their use, the first being in 1503-4, when the King, considering that, in the time of his Most Noble Progenitors, shooting with long bows was much used, whereby honour and victory against their enemies had been achieved, and shooting being then greatly decayed, *his subjects greatly delighting in the cross-bow, with which they occasioned great destruction amongst the King's deer*; directed that after Easter the cross-bow should not be used without his special licence, exceptions being made in favour of a man defending his house, or a lord, or any person possessing land of the yearly value of 200 marks. All offenders were to be prosecuted and fined 40s. for every day one had been used; and any servant who used one was to be discharged, unless the fine was paid.§ This not being found sufficient (many persons obtaining the required licence by false pretences, so that cross-bow shooting had increased if anything), an Act

* The following are the Statutes relating to Archery:—

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------|----------------------------|------------|
| † 3 Hen. VII., cap. 13 | 1487 | 14 & 15 Hen. VIII., cap. 7 | 1523 |
| ‡ 19 " " | 2 } 1503-4 | 25 " " | 17 1533-4 |
| § 19 " " | 4 } 1511-12 | 33 " " | 6 } 1541-2 |
| 3 Hen. VIII. " " | 3 } 1511-12 | " Eliz. " " | 9 } 1566 |
| " " " " | 13 } 1514-15 | 8 Eliz. " " | 10 |
| 6 " " " | 2 } 1514-15 | | |
| " " " " | 13 } | | |

was passed in 1511-12, declaring all licences granted previous to the first day of that Parliament void, and increasing the qualification to 300 marks.* In 1515 the Act recites that the King's deer continued to be destroyed by cross-bows, and hand-gonnes (here first mentioned), but permitted them to be kept for defence in all walled towns within seven miles of the sea,† which was extended, in 1523, to all persons having land of the yearly value of £100.‡ In 1534, the inhabitants of Northumberland, Durham, Westmoreland, and Cumberland, were allowed to keep them for the defence of their houses, against the Scots and other the King's enemies.§ Their use was further extended, in 1541, when permission was given to all gentlemen, yeomen, and inhabitants of cities, boroughs, and market towns, to shoot with hand-gonnes a yard long, demy hakes or hagbuttes three-quarters of a yard long, at any butt or banks of earth in convenient places; and persons living more than two furlongs away from such towns could keep and practise with them for their defence; and also the inhabitants within twelve miles of the borders of Scotland, the Channel Islands, Isle of Man, and Isle of Wight. This was the last Act on the subject of the use of cross-bows.||

Active measures were taken by Henry VIII. for the encouragement and practice of archery. In 1512 an Act¶ was passed, reciting the advantages of the long-bow, and repeating the injunction against the cross-bow contained in the Act passed in 1503-4; and ordering that, as shooting with the former was then "right little used," and was daily diminishing more and more, that the Statute of Winchester for Archers should be put into execution. Every man under sixty years of age, and not suffering from any infirmity (except the clergy, justices, and judges) had always to keep bows and arrows in their houses, and to make use

* 3 Hen. VIII., cap. 13.

† 6 Hen. VIII., cap. 13, and Scott's History of the British Army, Vol. II., p. 91.

‡ 14 & 15 Hen. VIII., cap. 7.

§ 25 Hen. VIII., cap. 17.

|| 33 Hen. VIII., cap. 6. See also Grose's Military Antiquities, Vol. I., pp. 128-136, and pp. 141-3.

¶ 3 Hen. VIII., cap. 3.

of them; and every boy, from seven to seventeen, had to be instructed in their use. Any person not providing themselves with these articles were to be fined a shilling for every month they remained without them. The statutes against unlawful games were put in force. The bowyers were directed to make at least one bow of yew for every one made of elm, wych, or other cheap wood. Butts were ordered to be made in every city and town, according to the laws of ancient times, and the inhabitants were compelled to keep them in repair, and make use of them on holy days and other convenient times. The justices were directed to appoint bowyers in all cities, shires and boroughs, to make the necessary bows. In 1514-15 a similar Act* was passed to try and put a stop to such unlawful games as tennis play, bowles, &c., "which only lead to murders and robberies."†

In a Warrant addressed to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen from the Manor of Okyng, [Woking], on the 20th of August, 1521,‡ the King stating that as it was good policy in times of peace to provide against war, he intended to have a good number of archers prepared and put in readiness, both for the defence of the realm and other dominions and garrisons in outward parts. They were therefore ordered with all possible diligence to prepare a hundred able bowmen and archers to be ready for the wars at a day's warning. A Proclamation,§ dated 12th January, 1537, to carry out the Statute of the 25th of Henry VIII., orders that cross-bows were not to be used by persons of an estate of less value than £100 per annum, under a penalty of £10; and further ordered that all hand-guns carried by licensed persons were to have the stock at least two feet and a half long, on pain of imprisonment and fine.

Divers grievous complaints having been made that persons licensed to shoot with hand-guns took upon themselves to shoot in towns and boroughs and other unmeet places without regard to where their pellets went, so that persons on the highway, streets, and even in their own houses and gardens, had been put

* 6 Henry VIII., cap. 2.

† See also Scott's History of the British Army, Vol. II., p. 75-121.

‡ Journal, Vol. XII., f. 125.

§ Idem, Vol. XIV., f. 27^b.

in great jeopardy of their lives, a Warrant, dated 27th July, 1540, directed that no person of any quality or degree was to shoot elsewhere than at the places set aside for that purpose, under pain of imprisonment and fine at the King's pleasure.*

In 1541-2 another attempt was made to keep up archery by an Act† passed for the maintenance of artillery and debarring unlawful games; from which it appears that the bowyers fletchers, stringers, and arrow-head makers, in consequence of lack of work, had gone to Scotland and other places abroad and settled there, working and teaching their science to the great comfort of strangers, and the detriment of this realm. All those practising the above trades who had come to London in search of employment were to be sent to inhabit such towns and other places as the Council should direct. Sundry regulations were laid down for the distances at which persons of different ages were to shoot; and no one was allowed to keep any public place for bowling, tennis, or any prohibited games under certain penalties.

The bowyers complained, in 1566, that so few bows of elm, wych, hazel, or ash, were used, but only yew; so an Act was passed directing every bowyer to keep fifty good bows of elm, ash, and foreign yew, &c., well made, not exceeding 6s. 8d. each, second best 3s. 4d., third sort, called livery bows, 2s., and any bow of English yew for 2s.; and a fine of 40s. was imposed for any sold above that price.‡ The English always used a very long bow; those who were arrived at maturity were prohibited from shooting at any mark that was not upwards of 220 yards distant, under a penalty of 6s. 8d. for each shot; the range of a bow is said to have been from 320 to 400 yards.§

Another Proclamation,|| made on the 4th of February, 1544, states that the King, considering how expedient it was at that time to have a number of his subjects skilled and trained in the feat of shooting with hand-guns and hagbushes, gave liberty to

* Journal, Vol. XIV., f. 215.

† 33 Hen. VIII., cap. 9.

‡ 8 Elizabeth, cap. 10.

§ Grose's Military Antiquities, Vol. II., pp. 267, 275.

|| Letter Book Q., f. 98^b.

all his subjects of sixteen years of age and upwards, to use the said arms without any forfeiture or fine, provided they did not shoot any deer, partridges, pheasants, herons, showlards, teles, or hares, that breed or haunt any of His Majesty's houses; or in any other place without leave from the owner of the ground; and shooting in towns and villages was only to be allowed at the appointed places where butts were provided.

In Edward VI.'s reign Archery began to decline. It is not surprising that the long-bow, which was the chief and favourite weapon of England, and which, in the hands of trained men, was most accurate and capable of being used rapidly, should have been reluctantly given up for firearms, which were, for a long time, exceedingly heavy, clumsy, slow in loading, troublesome to clean, and without accuracy. In Mary's reign they do not appear to have been anxious to introduce firearms; it being left to the choice of the people whether they should find a long-bow and sheaf of arrows, or a hackbutt.

In 1547 the Lord Mayor and Aldermen issued a Proclamation,* dated the 27th of October, saying they found it very expedient, requisite, and necessary to call attention to the Statute of the 33 Henry VIII., relating to Archery, Artillery, and unlawful games, and to remind people of the penalties therein.

The amount of pay received by archers at this period is shown in a warrant of the 2nd of May, 1548, allowing five of the King's archers eightpence per diem for a given time; and twenty shillings for their conduct into Scotland.†

About this time an Arsenal appears to have been founded at Greenwich, as, on the 6th of March, 1547, a Warrant‡ for £200 was given to Sir Richard Leigh, for making an Armoury Mill, near there; and two years later is another one for £259 10s. 9d. to Sir William Cavendish, dated the 17th of March, 1549,§ to pay to Henry Lee, Clerk of the King's Armoury, for wages of the Armoury at Greenwich, from the 26th of July to the 3rd of April, 1550; another was granted on the 6th of May, 1550, for the same amount, being part of £276 15s. 4d. due to the "Alle-

* Letter Book Q, f. 216b.

† Council Registers (Edw. VI.), Vol. I., p. 314.

‡ Idem, Vol. I., p. 103.

§ Idem, Vol. II., p. 120.

maigne Armourers" at Greenwich.* The Armoury Mills were removed to Purfleet about the end of the seventeenth century, in consequence of a Petition from the inhabitants of Greenwich; and the site, with some adjoining land, was leased, in 1770, to Henry Vansittart, Esq. In 1697 the mills were used by potters for grinding their colours, and one was afterwards used for a flour mill, and the other for manufacturing halberds.†

The manner in which the Army in those days was supplied with surgeons is shown in a letter from the Privy Council to the Lord Mayor, dated the 28th of July, 1562, directing him to forbear troubling the Company of Surgeons with any muster, because at all setting-forth of men they were bound to furnish the Army with Surgeons.‡

Proclamations were made by the Lord Mayor, on the 9th of September, 1568,§ and again in 1572,|| in which the Statute of the 33 Henry VIII. is quoted as being very necessary to be put in execution, and reminding the citizens that for all boys from seven to seventeen years of age a bow and two arrows was always to be kept for each of them; in the case of servants the cost being deducted from their wages. From seventeen to sixty years of age all able men had to be provided with a bow and four arrows; and masters and fathers were rendered liable to a fine of 6s. 8d. for every month they were unprovided with them.

Letters Patent, dated the 25th of June, 1571, were granted by Elizabeth to Sir Humphrey Gilbert, appointing Commissioners, for seven years, to carry out this Act, and authorising them to compound with offenders against the Statutes, Sir Humphrey being appointed Receiver-General of all fines, and accounting for the same to the Court of Exchequer.¶

* Council Registers (Edw. VI.), Vol. III., p. 31. See also the King's Book of Payments, additional MSS., No. 21,481, in British Museum.

† Lyson's Environs of London, Vol. IV., p. 492.

‡ Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. I., p. 42.

§ Letter Book V, f. 190.

|| Journal, Part I., Vol. XX., f. 46b, and Letter Book V, f. 290-1.

¶ Patent Roll, 13 Eliz., Part II., Memb. 1, dorso. An abstract of this Patent is given in Appendix C.

In an Act passed during this year, which recites that of 12 Edward IV., and states that "whereas the use of Archery not only hath ever been, but also yet is, by God's especial gift to the English nation, a singular defence of the realm,"* therefore confirmed and enlarged its provisions.

Elizabeth issued a Commission† in 1572 to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, in which it is stated that (owing to the neglect of the provisions of the Statute of 33 Henry VIII. for the maintenance of Artillery and debarring of unlawful games, in not searching as to whether the number of bows and arrows therein ordered to be kept were duly provided) shooting in most parts of the realm was utterly forgotten. The Queen therefore appointed them and their deputies, Commissioners, with power to search both the city and suburbs to see that the proper number of bows and arrows were provided, and to ascertain who kept houses or alleys for unlawful games. All persons were to be required to bring their bows and arrows to some convenient place, and those not furnished with them, or making use of unlawful games the Commissioners were first to try by gentle admonitions to reform, so that the exercise of shooting might be continued; and if they failed to influence them, their names and dwellings were to be certified to the Lord Chancellor and Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, so that the necessary steps might be taken as the law directed. Some idea of the strict regulations under which games were restricted may be formed from the following Ordinance, issued on the 22nd of November, 1572, by the Lord Mayor, straightly charging and commanding that "playinge at the foote-balle" should not be played within the city, in consequence of the disturbance and disorder caused by breaking the glass windows, overthrowing women and children, and poor impotent folks; and the constables were ordered to apprehend all offenders.‡

A few years after, letters, dated 20th July, 1577, were sent by the Privy Council to all the counties ordering the use of bows and arrows, and reviving the Statute for Artillery above mentioned.§

* 13 Eliz., cap. 14. † Journal, Part I., Vol. XX., f. 47.

‡ Idem, Part I., Vol. XX., f. 27.

§ Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. III., p. 221.

An Order of the Privy Council, dated the 18th of June, 1580, directs corslets for the use of the shires to be sold by the Master of the Armoury, to the number of 2,000, at 23s. 4d. each, to such persons as desired to buy them.

On the following day a letter was sent to the Lord Mayor, requiring him to revive the training of the "shotte" within the City, which was suspended in 1578 on account of the Plague, and the training was to be continued annually. *

In April, 1588, orders were issued relating to the 10,000 men the City was to furnish for the defence of the Queen's person and the City; and it appears that the Earl of Leicester did not think that the Captains and Leaders appointed by the City were fit to have charge of them. †

Letters were sent from the Court at Greenwich, dated the 6th of June, 1591, to the Lords-Lieutenant of several counties, stating that the Council was informed that divers unlawful games were daily used in most places in the realm, and that Archery was greatly decayed, and, in a manner, almost laid aside; and this ancient weapon was recommended to be revived. ‡

The Bowyers and other poor Companies complained to the Privy Council of disorders in the City and other parts of the realm from neglect of the laws relating to Archery, and unlawful games, and the Lord Mayor was directed, on the 30th of June, 1583, to see them properly carried out. §

On the 4th of June, 1592, the Company of Bowyers presented a petition against unlawful games, which greatly interfered with their trade. ||

In 1594 grenades were invented, which were, at first, projected from hand mortars; they gave origin, in France, to the troops denominated Grenadiers, who were soldiers trained in the art of throwing hand-grenades. In 1678 each Grenadier Company in the British Army was armed with grenades, but this was discontinued in the reign of Queen Anne.

* Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. V., pp. 52, 53.

† Idem (Eliz.), Vol. VII., p. 120, 12th April, 1588, and p. 217, 26th July, 1588.

‡ Idem (Eliz.), Vol. IX., pp. 310, 311.

§ Remembrancia, Vol. I., No. 519.

|| Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. X., p. 386.

A most important change was made in 1595 by an Order in Council, dated the 26th of October, directing that the Bows of the Trained Bands were to be exchanged for Calivers and Muskets.* Thus, in spite of all the efforts that had been made during the previous century to maintain Archery, it was at last superseded by firearms, and from this time gradually sank into insignificance and disuse.

On the 23rd of July, 1598, the office of Muster-Master was abolished, but was revived again some years after. On the 6th of September of the same year the office of Provost-Marshal, for London, and some of the counties adjacent, was instituted for suppressing rogues and vagabonds.†

* Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. XII., p. 17.

† Idem (Eliz.), Vol. XIV., p. 339, and Vol. XV., p. 75.

CHAPTER II.

FROM THE INCORPORATION OF THE COMPANY IN 1537
TO 1601.

CONTENTS.—Charter of the Company, 1537.—Incorporated as the Guild or Fraternity of St. George.—Condition of Moorfields, 1412-97.—Manor of Finsbury, 1315-1568.—Musters in Finsbury Fields, 1520-49.—Threatened Assembly of Disbanded Soldiers there, 1550.—Prize Meetings for Archery in Finsbury, 1521-96.—Great Review of City Forces by Henry VIII., 1539.—Fields used for Archery about London.—Letters Patent to restore the Marks and Fields for Shooting, 1561-1632.—The Artillery Garden.—Tassel Close.—The Fraternity of Artillery in Great and Small Ordnance, 1537.—William Thomas, Master-Gunner.—The Gunners of the Tower.—The Artillery Company and the Armada.—Captains of the Artillery Garden.—First Order in Council relating to the Company, 1591.—The City Trained Bands.

1537.—On the 25th of August, 1537, a Charter of Incorporation was granted to the Archers in and about the City of London, under the title of the Fraternity or Guild of St. George; Sir Christopher Morris, Knt., Master of the Ordnance, Anthony Knevet, and Peter Mewtes, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, were appointed Overseers of the said Guild and Science of Artillery, or Long-bows, Cross-bows, and Hand-guns. Four Masters and Rulers were appointed for life, viz., Sir Christopher Morris, Cornelius Johnson, Anthony Anthony, and Henry Johnson; and they were directed to begin, found, guard and establish a perpetual Fraternity of St. George, and had full powers and authority given them to choose and admit into their said Fraternity or Guild all manner of honest persons whatsoever, including foreigners.

The Masters and Rulers, and such brethren as they should elect and admit, were to be one body and commonality corporate, having succession perpetually by the name of Masters and Rulers and Commonality of the Fraternity or Guild of Artillery of Long-bows, Cross-bows, and Hand-guns, and they and their successors were empowered to implede and be impleded by the name of Masters and Rulers of the said Brotherhood or Guild, and had power and authority to choose and elect amongst themselves four Under-Masters and Rulers, to oversee and govern the said Fraternity, and to have the custody of such lands, tenements, rents, possessions, goods and chattels, as should happen to be purchased, bequeathed, given, granted, or assigned unto them.

Every year, as it should best please them, they might choose four Under-Masters and Rulers, either English or foreigners, of good name and fame, and, if need required, might remove them and elect others as often as they liked. They were also empowered to use a common seal for all necessary things belonging to the Fraternity, and were enabled to implead or be impleaded, answer and be answered, before any Judge or Justice spiritual or temporal whatsoever, in any Court or Courts in the realm, in all actions, quarrels and suits, real or personal, &c.

They had power to make laws and regulations for the good government of the Fraternity, and to alter or change the same as often as should be thought necessary. They also had full power to purchase lands, tenements, and other hereditaments, not being held of the Crown in capite, the Statute of Mortmain or other statutes or other things passed to the contrary notwithstanding. And, furthermore, for the better increase of the defence of the realm, and maintaining the science of shooting, they were granted licence for their disport and pastime, to use and shoot with long-bows, cross-bows and hand-guns at all manner of marks and butts, and at the game of the Popinjaye and other games, as well as at fowls, both in London and suburbs, and all other parts of the realm of England, Ireland, Calais, and Wales; the royal forests, chases and parks excepted, unless by special warrant, as also herons and pheasants, within

two miles of any royal mansion, or castle, or other place where the Sovereign might happen to be, were also reserved.

They and their servants were permitted to keep their long-bows, cross-bows, and hand-guns, and use the same as often as they pleased; but servants were not permitted to shoot at any kind of fowl, and were liable to the penalties of the Acts if they offended. No other Fraternity or Guild could be formed in any part of the realm unless licensed by the Masters and Rulers of this Fraternity.

They were entitled to wear any kind of embroidery, or any device in silver on their gowns, jackets, coats, and doublets; also any kind of silk, velvet, satin, or damask (the colours of purple and scarlet only excepted) in their gowns and jackets. Also all furs on their gowns or elsewhere, except martins, any Act or Proclamation to the contrary notwithstanding.

The Masters and Rulers and their successors were especially exempted from being empanelled, or compelled to serve on any manner of Quest or Jury, either within the City, or other places in the realm.

Whenever any of them used the word commonly spoken before shooting, viz., "Fast," and it happened that any person running past or going between any such shooter and the mark was killed or otherwise hurt, provided the mark was in an open place usually shot at, such person could not be arrested, imprisoned, sued, or troubled or molested for it, nor suffer death, or lose any member, or forfeit any goods, lands, chattels, &c., for so doing; any Act or Proclamation made then or thereafter to the contrary notwithstanding.

The somewhat vague manner in which the preamble of this Charter is worded, in speaking of Sir Christopher Morris and his associates, apparently, as if they were previously overseers of a Guild or Fraternity of St. George; although in the same document they are themselves authorized to *begin* and *found* a fraternity by that name, has caused Maitland and all subsequent historians to fall into error by presuming the existence of an earlier Company of Archers of that name, who were said to have been founded at Mile-end by Henry VIII., but of whose existence there is no proof whatever, neither can any trace be now

found of such a Society.* It would indeed be difficult to believe that two Societies or Guilds, having the same objects, should be established under precisely the same title. That the Artillery Company and the Fraternity or Guild of St. George are one and the same body, can no longer be doubted; and it is proved conclusively by a MS. of the time of Henry VIII., in the Bodleian Library, entitled "An Admittance of a Brother into the Guild of St. George, and his Duty;" and in another copy of the same, "The Admission of a Brother into the Brotherhood of St. George," in which all the names of the persons mentioned in the above Charter appear, and all their privileges are recited therefrom almost verbatim; the paper, which is a form or certificate of Membership of the Society, being as follows:—†

"To all and singular the Kyngs hignes Officers Ministres and Subjects aswell within this his Realme of England as also his Dominions of Irelande, Wales, Calice, and the Marchesse of the same unto whom theise pnts shall come to be reade herde or seen, We S^r Christofer Mores Knight Maister of the Kyngs Ordennce, Anthony Knevet, and Peter Meauties, Gentlemen Husshers of the Kyngs Privye Chambre, Corneles Johnson, Anthoni Antony, and Henry Johnson Maisters and Rulers of the ffraternite or Guilde of Sainte George, graunted & given Unto us by o^r Moost gracious Sovraigne Lorde the Kings Majestie und^r his greate Seall being the same incorporate for ever sende greeting in the Lord everlasting. KNOWE ye that

* The principal authorities who have fallen into this error are—Maitland's London, Vol. I., p. 237; Chamberlain's History of London, p. 192; Noorthonck's History of London, p. 119; Seymour's Survey of London, Vol. I., pp. 231, 232; Scott's History of the British Army, Vol. II., pp. 121-150; Clode's Military Forces of the Crown, Vol. I., p. 402; and Highmore, p. 23.

† Ashmolean MS., Vol. XXXVIII., No. 1,134, p. 63; engrossed in black letter and indorsed on the back "The Admyssion of a brother into the brotherhood of Sainte George." There is also a rough copy of it in the same collection, Vol. XV., No. 1,111, p. 18^b, copied also by Ashmole, and marked in margin "Ex Autogr^r in Bibl^r Cottoniana"; but it does not appear in the Cottonian Catalogues. This copy is headed "An Admittance of a Brother into the Guild of St. George, and his Duty."

by vertue & authorite of oure saide incorporacion & by force of the same we have chosen, accepted, taken & admitted and by theise pntes doe chose accepte take and admytt into or saide fraternyte or Guild, or well beloved W. A. to be a brother and fellowe of the same, soe that the saide W. A. shall maynteyne furnyshe and encrease the Science and feate of shootyng in Longbowes Crossebowes and Handgonnes and for his dysporte and pastyme from tyme to tyme duryng his lyfe shall moeve at his libertie use and shote in the same ingiens at all man^r markes, butts and other game or games, as at the game of alman^r fflowles whatsoever they be, aswell within the Citie of London the Surburbes of the same, as in every other place or places in any parte of this the Kyngs Realme, his Lands of Ireland, Wales, Calice, or the Marchesse of the same, in as large and ample manner as a fellowe or a Brother of the same ffraternyte may and ought to doe, by virtue of the Kyngs sayde privilege and grauntes. (The fforestes pks and chasys of the Kings highnes withoute his graces speciall warrante in that behalfe, and also the game of the Heron, and Feasaunte wⁱⁿ two myles of any of the Kyngs Castells Mannors or other places wher his Majestie shall lye & demoure for that tyme only reserved and exceptyd). And overthat, that he the sayde W.A. shall and maye at his libertie detayne & kepe in his howse chambr or other place, the said ingyns of Longbowe Crossebow and Handgonne, and his S^rvnts to beare bende & charge thym or any of thym at the pleasure of his Maister withoute any manner damage penaltie, losse, trouble or hindrannee to ensue unto hym. And finally the saide W. A. to enjoye all and singular suche liberties privileges & p^rhemynences as to the saide fraternitie in any manner of wyse apperteynyth or belongeth, & in as large and ample manner as it hath pleased the Kyngs Moost gracious highnes to grante, or that hereafter shalbe grantede to the same fraternite. Providedde alwayes that the saide S^rvnts (not beyng a Brother) Shall not by colo^r of any thyng afore mencionede Shote in any of the sayde ingyns at any of the saide games or marks upon payn of forfayture of suche penalties as is expressed in the Kyngs Actes passed for that po^rpose."

Many sumptuary edicts were in former times published by proclamation, regulating the material, colours, and decorations of the garments to be worn by people in different ranks of life; amongst the trimmings, the fur of various animals made a very distinguishing part, and were particularly appropriated.*

FINSBURY AND MOORFIELDS.—The earliest records relating to Finsbury and Moorfields is in the reign of William the Conqueror, who gave to the Collegiate Church of St. Martin-le Grand all the moor land without Cripplegate.

From a very early period the neighbourhood of Finsbury and Moorfields were the principal places of resort for the practice of Archery. In the latter place many changes were made before it was finally devoted to shooting, being at one time, as its name denotes, a moor, and but little better than a swamp, in which all manner of refuse was deposited for many years.

An Ordinance was issued on the 12th of January, 1412, for the removal of the gardens in Moorfields.†

During the reign of Henry V., in the year 1415, we are told that in consequence of the default of provision being made for the proper management of a certain watery and vacant piece of land called "The Moor," and of a latrine there, the cellars and dwelling-houses in many streets and lanes adjoining were overflowed, and much sickness arose from the horrible corrupt and infected atmosphere proceeding from the latrine. The Mayor and Aldermen, together with an immense congregation of many reputable men of the City, assembled in Common Council, at the Guildhall, on the 2nd of July, when it was stated that at divers times the moor had been changed into a garden, and at another time into a vacant piece of land, and so repeatedly altered and changed. It was then decided that the moor should be allotted and divided into different gardens, and let at a proper rent, and that the latrine should be removed!‡

* Grose's Military Antiquities, Vol. I., p. 138.

† Letter Book I, f. 111.

‡ Letter Book I, f. 152 (Latin). See Riley's Memorials of London, p. 614.

MOORFIELDS.—On the 10th of October, 1497, the Court of Aldermen directed that the moor ground should be viewed, and a report made thereon.* Several writers state that in this year, Archery having acquired so high an estimation in the Metropolis, all the gardens and orchards on the north side of Chiswell Street, which had continued time out of mind, without Moorgate, were destroyed, and of them was made a large field, containing eleven acres eleven perches, for archers and other military citizens, to shoot in.† Others corroborate this circumstance, and speak of them as the gardens and orchards about Chiswell Street and Finsbury.‡ On the 28th of July, 1502, the Chamberlain was ordered to prepare a lease of the moor ground to William Cure; and also of five acres lying beyond it.§ A subsequent Order, dated the 24th of January, 1512, directed that the Moorfields were to be levelled and a convenient place provided for the doghouse of the common hunt, and the old one to be removed.|| On the 12th of February of the following year two Aldermen were appointed to inspect the ground and give orders to keep it clean, and no dirt or rubbish was to be put there any more.¶ The southern part of Moorfields, known as Windmill Hill, was first raised by upwards of a thousand cartloads of bones from St. Paul's charnel-house, which were removed there in 1549, and was afterwards covered with dirt from the street and converted into a "laystall"; three windmills were afterwards erected on the spot. Upper Moorfields was so called from the ground having been raised in a similar manner.**

FINSBURY.—The Manor of Finsbury was in a much better state, and it was in "ffynysbury felds" that the famous annual competitions in shooting for prizes were generally held.

Robert de Baldock, Prebendary of Haliwell and Finsbury,

* Repertory, Vol. I., f. 28.

† Hollingshed, Vol. III., p. 785.

‡ Stow, Book IV., p. 54. Maitland, Vol. I., pp. 16, 219, 223.

§ Repertory, Vol. I., f. 105.

|| Idem, Vol. II., f. 126.

¶ Letter Book X, f. 199.

** Maitland, Vol. II., p. 1,370. Ellis's Shoreditch, p. 161.

with the consent of the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's, on the 22nd of May, 1315, granted to the Mayor and Commonalty of London, all his right and claim in Mora de Halywell and Finsbury, at the yearly rent of twenty shillings.*

On the 29th of January, 1512, three of the Aldermen were appointed "to speke w^t the Chaunceler of Powlys for ffynnesbury felds."†

There was evidently some disagreement between the parties even at this early period, as, on the 2nd of October, 1553, the Court of Aldermen decided to defend the suit against the Prebendary of St. Paul's, Guy Wade, gentleman farmer, of the Manor of Finsbury, paying one-third of the costs.‡

A lease was afterwards granted to the Mayor and Commonalty by Edward Moyle, Prebendary of Finsbury, dated the 14th of December, 1554, from Michaelmas following, for ninety years, at a rent of £39 13s. 4d.; and, by indenture bearing date the 16th of February, 1568, John Spendlowe, then Prebendary of Haliwell and Finsbury, granted and let to farm the same for the term of seventy years, from the expiration of the term made in the former lease. It was at the same time agreed that the said Prebendary, for and in consideration of twenty fodder of lead, given by the said Mayor and Commonalty towards the repairs of St. Paul's Cathedral, should grant them an additional term of seventy years at the same rent.§

The first mention of archers mustering in Finsbury Fields occurs in the reign of Henry VIII., on the 2nd of April, 1520, when the Court of Aldermen ordered that the Bowmen should muster there on the following Tuesday afternoon.|| On the 12th of October, 1549, the Chamberlain was ordered to pay the trumpeter and two drummers five shillings "for their reward touching their pains taken at the muster of the harnessmen yesterday in Moorfields—that is to say, to each of them twenty-pence."¶

* Maitland, Vol. II., p. 1,369.

† Repertory, Vol. II., f. 128.

‡ Repertory, Vol. XIII., f. 207.

§ Maitland, Vol. II., p. 798. Highmore, p. 288.

|| Repertory, Vol. V., f. 278^b

¶ Idem, Vol. XII., f. 163.

The following year a meeting of a very different sort was threatened. On the 25th of September, 1550, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen wrote to inform the Privy Council* that, upon the dispersion of the garrisons beyond the seas and other parts of the realm, a number of soldiers had come to the city, and that, unless speedy means were taken to remove them to the country, there would be a disturbance, as they said they could and would not work, and if they could not obtain at the King's hands what they expected, in consideration of their long service to him and his predecessors, they would form themselves into companies, and meet together in some place, and set upon the citizens and their houses, and take their share of booty and spoil that they could lay hands on, and then depart from the city, and would not then care if ten thousand men come after them. They also say that if something is not ordered according to their expectations, they will turn all England upside down at their pleasure; and further state, that they have appointed Finsbury Fields as their place of muster. The Corporation, therefore, begged the Privy Council that speedy steps might be taken to prevent it, which was probably done, as no further mention is made of the affair.

During the reigns of Henry VIII. and Elizabeth "feats of shooting," or open competitions for archers, were held frequently, indeed, probably, annually, in Finsbury Fields, when prizes were awarded to the best marksmen. They generally took place in the months of July, August, or September; and notice of the event was given by the Lord Mayor previously by proclamation. On the 16th of September, 1572, the Court of Aldermen decided that the charges and costs of the game of shooting should be borne by the Sheriffs, instead of the Lord Mayor, as had been customary in olden times.†

The first of these meetings on record is that held on the 13th of September, 1521. The following is the form of Proclamation generally issued by the Lord Mayor on such occasions:—‡

* Journal, Vol. XVI., f. 91.

† Repertory, Vol. XVII., f. 367.

‡ Journal, Vol. XII., f. 134.

"A PROCLAMACON FOR SHOOTINGE IN FFYNNEBURYE FFELDE.

"BY THE MAIER.

"My Lorde Maier and my M^{rs}. the Aldermen of the Cite of London callinge to theme remembraunce the manyfolde benefits and comodities that have comen to this realme by the feate of archerie and showtinge in the longe bowe and wherby (God be thanked) this saide Realme hathe ever in tyme heretofore past ben defended against the cruell mallice and daunger of outwarde enymyes. And so from thensfurthe (God willinge) shalbe for ever, which saide feate of showtinge evye good true Englishe man is naturallie bounden to maynteyne supporte and upholde to the best of his power, and to thintent that the saide feate of archerie shulde be the better maynteyned and upholden to incorage the Kings subiects more and more to use and exercise the same, My saide Lorde Maier and M^{rs}. the Aldermen have appointed and fullie concluded That on Sondaie come sevenights which shalbe the xxixth daie of this present monethe of August shalbe a severall game of showtinge in the felde called ffynness-burie feld at ij of the clocke at afternone. And who will come thither and take a longe bowe in his hande haveinge the standarde therin therefore provyded, and fairest drawethe clensiest deliverethe and farthest of grounde shootithe shall have for the best Game a Crowne of golde of the value of xij^s. iiij^d. or xij^s. iiij^d. in money therefore. And for the seconde game of the said Standarde he shall have a Crowne of Golde of the value of x^s. or x^s. in money therefore. And for the third game of the saide Standarde he shall have another Crowne of Golde of the value of vj^s. viij^d. or vj^s. viij^d. in money therefore. And for the best game of the bearinge arrowe he shall have an arrowe of golde of the value of xij^s. iiij^d. or xij^s. iiij^d. in money therefore. And for the seconde game of the saide Arrowe he shall have another Arrowe of Golde of the value of x^s. or x^s. in money therefore. And for the thirde game of the saide Arrowe he shall have one other Arrowe of Golde of the value of vj^s. viij^d. or vj^s. viij^d. in money therefore. And for the best game of the flight he shall have a flight of golde of the value of x^s. or x^s. in money therefore. And for the seconde game of the saide flight

he shall have a flight of golde of the value of viij^s. or viij^s. in money therefore. And for the thirde game of the saide flighte he shall have a flight of golde of the value of vj^s. or vj^s. in money therefore. And God saue the Kinge and Quene."

No person was allowed to approach near enough to be in danger of any shot, or stand within twenty yards of any of the stakes appointed for marks. Ignorance of the rules was not accepted as an excuse, and a trumpet was blown before each shot as a warning.

The above Proclamation was made in the reign of Philip and Mary, in 1557;* and similar ones were issued in the reign of Elizabeth, in 1564,† 1583,‡ 1589;§ and on the 19th of August, 1596, notice was also given of a meeting on Wednesday, the 30th of August, at two o'clock, the prize for the best game being a standard of gold, worth 13s. 4d. or the value in money.||

1539.—An interesting account of a muster of the City forces before Henry VIII., on the 8th of May, 1539, gives the following description of the proceedings:—¶

The king having been "lately informed by his trusty and faithful friends, that the cankered and venomous serpent Paul, Bishop of Rome, by that archtraitor Reynold Pole, enemy to God's word and his own natural country, had moved, excited and stirred divers great princes and potentates of Christeudom," not only to invade the kingdom, but by fire and sword to destroy the whole nation.

Whereupon the king personally without delay took steps to have the coast fortified, and the Navy prepared for sea, and

* Journal, Vol. XVII., f. 46, and Letter Book S, ff. 147, 148.

† Journal, Vol. XVIII., f. 250b.

‡ Letter Book Z, f. 288.

§ Journal, Vol. XXII., f. 315.

|| Letter Book AA, f. 68.

¶ The True Order, Conduct, and Cause of the Muster which was made and showed before the Most High, Noble, and Puissant Prince, King Henry VIII. by the Citizens of London, the 8th of May, in the thirty-first year of his most noble and prosperous reign. MS. Guildhall Library, and Journal, Vol. XIV., f. 166. Stow describes this as occurring in 1532, which is an error. See Strype's Stow, Book V., p. 451; see also Grafton's Chronicle, pp. 1240-42.

issued commissions to have the people mustered, and all harness and weapons viewed so that everything should be in readiness. Amongst others a Commission was sent to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen to certify the number of men in the City between 21 and 60, and the number of harness and weapons. The Corporation were informed that the king's Highness "of his most gentle nature and loving affection that he bare his City and Chamber of London" would take the pains to see them muster, and so they decided that only able persons who had white harness with white coats, bows and arrows, halberds, bills, or poleaxes, and none others should appear, except such as bare "moryse pykes" or hand-gonnes, and white coats, and caps with feathers, and white hose cleanly shod.

Then every man of substance provided himself with a coat of silk, and garnished their bassenetts with turbes of silk, &c. Some had their harness and poleaxes gilt, and breastplates covered with silver bullion; the meaner sort had coats of white cotton, with the arms of the City before and behind. The Wyffelers and Minstrels were all in white, and so were the Standard-bearers, who were the tallest men in every ward, and carried thirty new standards, with the arms of the City thereon. Every Alderman inspected the men of his ward to see that they all had swords and daggers.

Before six in the morning, they mustered in the common field between Milend and Whitechapel, and all the gonnes, pikes, archers and billmen were collected into separate bodies and divided into three parts. It was a grand thing to behold, for all the fields from Whitechapel to Milend and from Bethnals Green to Ratcliff and Stephney were covered with men in bright harness and glistening weapons. About eight o'clock they marched out of the fields, thirteen pieces of light ordnance, carried on carts, with powder and stone, leading the way. These were followed by the two other divisions or battles, each consisting of a third of the pikes, archers, and billmen, and marched through the City to Westminster, where the king and all the nobility stood and beheld them as they passed through the Great Sanctuary at Westminster, round St. James's Park into a great field, so that the king, standing in

his gatehouse at Westminster could see them all. And the great gones and hand-gones when discharged shook very terribly. They returned through Holborn and Cheapside, where they did not arrive until about five o'clock.

THE FIELDS FOR ARCHERY.—The citizens of London appear always to have been well disposed towards the practice of Archery, in which they received every encouragement, more especially during the reigns of Henry VIII. and Elizabeth. The fields which they were in the habit of using extended to Islington, Hoxton and Shoreditch, and they were accustomed to fix butts and targets there to shoot at. But as the inhabitants of those villages increased in number, they enclosed their grounds, which had been common fields, and thereby prevented the practice of Archery. This produced a serious contest, amounting (according to Grafton's Chronicles) to an insurrection, in the year 1514, in which the citizens practising Archery, tenacious of what they had long enjoyed as a right, assembled and destroyed all the fences.*

As London increased and land became more valuable, great difficulty was experienced in keeping such large tracts of land open for the purpose of shooting, and it is not surprising that the owners did all in their power to make the best use of their property, and threw every obstacle in the way of the Archers by removing their butts, and trying by means of hedges and ditches to drive them elsewhere. For many years they were unsuccessful, Archery being considered of such importance as a means of defence, that for the benefit of the nation at large it was always encouraged, and private interests had to suffer.

In 1561, Elizabeth found it necessary to issue Letters Patent, dated the 26th of November, in which, after reciting the laudable Statutes and Proclamations formerly made for the maintenance of Archery and Artillery, whereby the defence and safety of the realm had been greatly strengthened against foreign powers; and that as shooting could not then be so well carried out in consequence of persons having land about the City attempting

* Chamberlain, p. 183. Maitland, Vol. I., p. 223. Stow's Chron., p. 902.

to enclose it for their own advantage, without respect to others, and had thereby prevented the profitable exercise of shooting in such fields and closes as time out of mind had been used for that purpose, but had made banks, hedges and ditches, and removed the old marks, to hinder and discourage the exercise. The Queen being also informed that there would probably grow a great strait and want of room about the City, causing Archery to fall into disuse, and that other kinds of unlawful games to which many were inclined, "but which shall not in anywise be suffered."

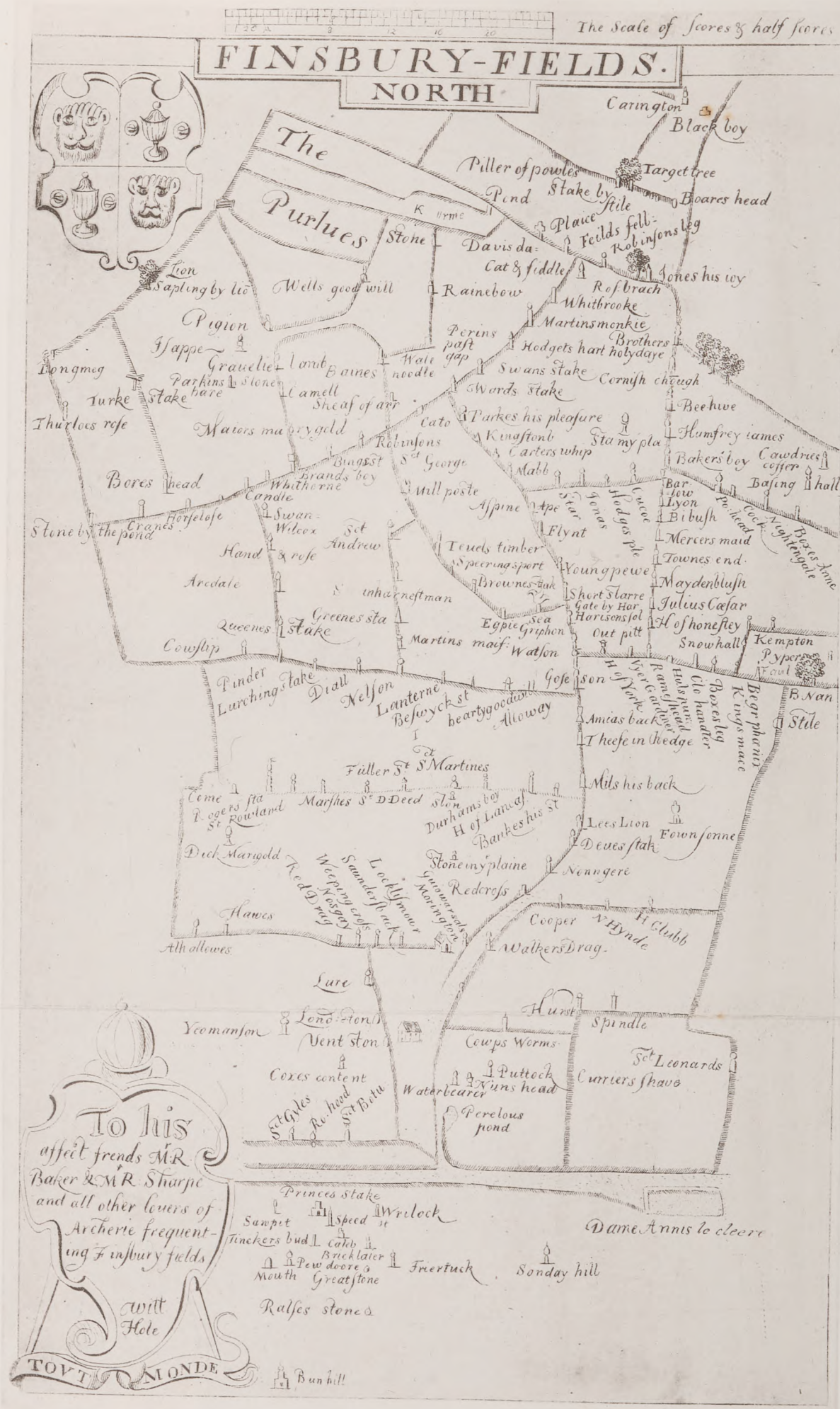
Her Majesty therefore appointed Commissioners to survey all such ground within two miles' radius of any part of the City and suburbs which had formerly been used for shooting, and have it restored to the same condition it was in at the beginning of the reign of Henry VIII., at the cost of the owners, and within such time as they should think proper. All who resisted their authority were to be fined or imprisoned until they conformed to their orders.*

In April, 1665, the citizens petitioned the King to grant a Commission, as formerly had been done, to prevent the marks being destroyed, as the farmers not only did this, but also set dogs at them and were very insolent. Their request was granted, and a Commission ordered to be prepared, but there is no trace of one to be found in the Patent Rolls.†

THE ARTILLERY GARDEN.—A piece of ground was set aside at an early period for the use of shooting, which afterwards became famous as the Artillery Garden. It was originally a Roman Station and used by them as a field of Mars, for training the

* Similar Patents were issued by Elizabeth, dated 23rd April, 1570, and 20th August, 1596; also by James I., dated 1st February, 1605, and Charles I., dated 20th December, 1632. The copies of the Patents of James I. and Charles I., given by Blackwell in his *Military Discipline*, 1726, and by Highmore in his *History of the Company*, 1804, state that they were for the encouragement "of our Ancient Artillery Company"; and these two Patents have consequently frequently been quoted as confirming the Charter of the Company; but in the Original Rolls no mention is made of the Company by name. See Appendix C.

† Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. CXVIII., No. 101. See Appendix C. No. 6.



PLAN OF THE ANCIENT MARKS FOR SHOOTING. IN FINSBURY FIELDS.

(Heliotype Facsimile, from Malcolm's Londinium Redivivum.

British as well as the Roman youth, in the exercise of Arms.* It was afterwards a part of Lolesworth, or Spital-Fields, and the upper part of it was a Roman cemetery. After the establishment of the Christian Church it became part of the foundation of the convent of St. Mary Spittle, which was founded in 1197, but was surrendered afterwards to Henry VIII. It was a spacious enclosure, called Tassell's Close,† from the tassel which was planted there for the use of the clothworkers, by whom it was used for raising the knap on cloth, and carding wool.

A Writ was issued by Edward II., dated 30th of May, 1326, from Saltwood, near Hythe, in Kent, to the Mayor and Sheriffs of London, forbidding the exportations of teasels and fullers' earth—"desire that none of the thistles that in English are called taseles, and no fullers' earth shall be carried out of the kingdom."‡ The ground was afterwards let to the Crossbow Makers, where they used to shoot at the game of popinjay.

THE FRATERNITY OF ARTILLERY.—In 1537, William Major, the last Prior of the Convent of St. Mary Spittle, gave a lease of this ground for thrice ninety-nine years for the use and practice of great and small artillery.§

The Charter granted by Henry VIII. to the Fraternity of Artillery, or Gunners of the Tower, appointed this field to be their place of exercise, the lease being held by Sir William Pelham, Lieutenant of the Ordnance. This Charter was afterwards delivered to Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer to Elizabeth, and appears to have been lost.

This "Fraternity of Artillery in Great and Small Ordnance" must not be confounded with the "Fraternity or Guild of St. George," as the Artillery Company was then called, although they were at first so closely associated; both being incorporated in the same year, and using the same ground in common for their exercise.

* Leland's Collect., Vol. I., p. 61. Ellis's Shoreditch, pp. 156-9.

† Stow, Vol. I., Book II., pp. 96, 97. Maitland, Vol. II., p. 798.

‡ Letter Book E, f. 168 (Latin). See Riley's Memorials of London, pp. 150, 151.

§ Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CLIX., No. 97.

William Thomas, the Master-Gunner of England, was very active in trying to maintain the powers and reputation of these "Gunnners of the Tower," by which name they were then generally known. All the men who came there to learn were solemnly sworn not to teach any foreigner or alien this art, nor to serve any foreign prince, without the leave or commandment of the King of England, their sovereign Lord.*

In 1581, in a petition to the Queen, he states that the Gunners of the Tower of London, and the Navy, which they supplied, were almost the only gunners in the kingdom skilful in the science and knowledge of shooting with great ordnance. The Navy required eight hundred gunners to complete it for service, but fourscore able men could not be found to supply their place; and when one of the Queen's ships of 400 tons was required for service, thirty-six gunners were wanted, amongst whom six able men could not be found, as they were all pressed men and altogether unskilful. To reform this state of things he suggested that the Master-Gunner of the Kingdom, with four of the most experienced gunners in the Tower, should have powers to send deputies to the principal seaport towns, viz., Falmouth, Plymouth, Dartmouth, Lyme, Bristol, Chichester, Poole, Portsmouth, Berwick, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, Hull, Boston, and Yarmouth; and that they should be empowered to test the skill of persons, and take charge as master-gunner of any ship. A Register ought also to be kept of all qualified persons, and licences granted to them to continue in their posts, so that no one could serve on any ship as master-gunner without a certificate. He also proposed that for the future every ship of 60 tons and upwards should carry two gunners, 100 tons four gunners, and one gunner for every additional 60 tons.

At Michaelmas every year all the gunners were to be required to appear at the Tower, and give in their names, and

* Strype's Stow, Book II., pp. 96, 97. Stow gives a long and interesting account of the Ordnance Office and the various offices at the Tower, Vol. I., pp. 104-8

afterwards assemble in the Artillery Garden upon an appointed day, and in the presence of the Master-Gunner prove their knowledge and cunning in the use of great and small ordnance.*

1582.—The following year, the Master-Gunner, William Thomas, drew up a number of articles similar to the proposition above quoted, showing the want of trained artillery men, and the necessity for the incorporation of a Company of Gunners; this he followed up with a summary of what the proposed charter should contain and confer, which was almost identical with the one granted to the Artillery Company, and evidently copied from it; but he does not seem to have been successful in his endeavours, and, after having long sought for an opportunity to appeal to the Privy Council in person without success, he presented his reasons in writing, praying that the Charter granted to the Fraternity of Artillery by Henry VIII. might be confirmed, with certain needful additions.†

CAPTAINS OF THE ARTILLERY GARDEN.—During the long reign of Elizabeth, the City having been greatly troubled, and charged with continual musters and training of soldiers, many gallant, active, and forward citizens, who had had experience, both at home and abroad, voluntarily enrolled themselves in the Company in 1585, and trained up others for the wars, so that within the space of two years there were about three hundred merchants, and others of like quality, very sufficient and skilful, to train and teach common soldiers the management of their pieces, pikes, and halberds; to march, countermarch, and ring; who, for their own perfecting in military affairs and discipline, met every Thursday in the year, practising all usual points of war, and every man, by turns, bare office, from the

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CXLVII., Nos. 94, 95; See Appendix D, Nos. 1 and 2.

† Idem, Vol. CLVII., Nos. 40, 41, and 42. See Appendix D, Nos. 3, 4 and 5. Howe's Continuation of Stow, pp. 699, 700, and Strype's Stow, Book II., pp. 96, 97. Maitland, Vol. II., p. 798.

Corporal to the Captain. Some of them afterwards, in the dangerous year 1588, had charge of men in the great camp at Tilbury, and were generally called Captains of the Artillery Garden.*

1585-88.—Very important services were rendered to Queen Elizabeth by the Company at this critical period; when the storm which had gathered in Spain, and threatened the entire destruction of the government and constitution of England, called forth all the active energies of the people. Divers citizens of London, who were members of this Company in 1585, were chosen from it, and, to their great honour, were appointed, by order of the Queen in Council, to the rank of officers in several parts of the kingdom; and it was by their care and indefatigable application that the Trained Bands in most parts of the country were put into a good state of defence.†

THE CITY FORCES.—The City of London, at the same time, not less mindful of the common safety (the more effectually to prevent any sudden and traitorous attempts of the enemies to the Government in favour of the Spaniards), framed some regulations, in 1586, for registering all citizens capable of service, and dividing them into companies, divisions, and sections, and appointed places of rendezvous. They also established day and night watches, and took other precautions, which were submitted to the Lord Mayor, Sheriffs, Aldermen, and such other grave persons in the City as they chose to assist them. Edmund York, a gentleman, who had acquired great knowledge of tactics by service in the Low Countries, formed, at the desire of the Privy Council, a more enlarged and methodical arrangement for marshalling and ordering the military forces of the City, which bears date March, 1588.‡

1591.—The first Order in Council relating to the Company is dated from Whitehall, the 20th of November, 1591, and is

* Strype's Stow, Vol. II., Book V., p. 457.

† Highmore, p. 49; Maitland, Vol. II., p. 1,226.

‡ Maitland, Vol. II., pp. 1,226-31; Strype's Stow, Book V., pp. 453-6.

addressed to the Lord Mayor of London and his brethren, requiring, as the Artillery Yard belonging to the City was made for the training of young gentlemen in London, and had been lately discontinued, that the same was to be forthwith renewed, it being a matter of importance for the common weal.*

1596.—A letter from the Lords of the Council, dated from the Court at Richmond, 31st October, 1596, to the Lord Mayor, states that directions had been given to the Lieutenants of the maritime and inland counties to have in readiness a number of men well armed, to protect the havens and places of descent on the coast, and directed the City to provide 3,000 men, to be sent to the Lieutenants of the counties of Kent and Essex, if the enemy should attempt to land their forces in those counties; and that the forces to be raised should be put into *bands*, to be led by some of the principal gentlemen of the City. With every thousand foot one hundred pioneers were to be furnished, with intrenching tools; also a good supply of powder, lead, matches, provisions, and carts, with small nags to carry their arms, &c.. also a reasonable number of horsemen, with lances, staves, or petronels. These were to be furnished with all diligence, as her Majesty had been credibly informed that the King of Spain, moved with the shame and disgrace done to him in his own kingdom by Her Majesty's Army in the enterprise at Calais, had resolved to take some speedy revenge, and had made great preparation of shipping and forces at Lisbon and other parts of Spain for that purpose.†

On the 3rd of November, 1596, the Lord Mayor wrote to the Council, praying them to reconsider their demands, and alleging that in the year 1588, the City only furnished 1,000 men out of the 10,000 ordered to be sent by them to Tilbury, the citizens being very dissatisfied, seeing no fruit at all nor any part of the principal of £19,000, spent by them in the late successful

* Council Register, Eliz., Vol. X., p. 59.

† Remembrancia, Vol. II., No. 56. See Motley's United Netherlands Vol. III., chap. 32, pp. 367-421.

expedition to Calais.* But the Council replied, on the 8th November, directing them, being the chief city of the whole realm, and in wealth far exceeding many of the rest, to raise 10,000 men as they did in 1588, well armed, to assist the forces, in Kent and Essex, in the defence of the coast.†

Upon which the Corporation gave certain reasons to induce a rebatement of the number of ships and trained soldiers required, to the number supplied in 1588.‡

1597.—The Queen, by Letters Patent, dated the 8th of June, 1597, appointed certain Commissioners to ascertain the boundaries of the City of London, and the Tower, and to report the same by the 20th of December.§

1598.—The defeat of the Armada restored these active citizens to their civil rights and occupations, and they discontinued the frequent exercises which they had so long practised; but the Artillery Company continued to thrive during the remaining years of the reign of Queen Elizabeth; for many of the nobility, the Lord Mayor, and most of the Aldermen, and all the commanders and commissioned officers of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries, exercised arms in the Artillery Garden, the whole Company consisting, in 1598, of six hundred men.||

1600.—In April, 1600, the Lord Mayor applied to the Privy Council for permission to appoint a competent number of discreet freemen to be instructed “how to use themselves and their weapons in warlike manner,” so as to be able to lead the rest for the defence of the City.¶

1601.—On the 6th of January, 1601, the Queen issued a warrant for levying 500 men from the Trained Bands, to be armed and provisioned at the expense of Her Majesty, for employment in

* Remembrancia, Vol. II., No. 58. † Idem, No. 61. ‡ Idem, No. 140.

§ Tanner MSS., Vol. 168 (Miscellaneous, No. 1), p. 24. Bodleian Library.

|| Highmore, p. 50.

¶ Remembrancia, Vol. II., No. 173.

Ireland, on account of the invasion of that kingdom by the Spaniards; and the following day orders were received for them to embark at Bristol.*

The Trained Bands had plenty of employment at this time, both within the City as well as abroad. On the 30th of June the Aldermen ordered that the City Captains should be paid £200 for themselves and their officers, for their services within the City during the rebellion of the Earl of Essex.†

* Remembrancia, Vol. II., Nos. 185 and 186.

† Repertory, Vol. 25, f. 247.

CHAPTER III.

PROGRESS OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF
JAMES I.

FROM 1603 TO 1625.

CONTENTS.—Petition of Bowyers and Fletchers.—Revival of Military Exercises by the Company.—The Armourers' Company.—Number limited to 250.—Uppermost Field in Finsbury granted for their use, 1614.—Increased to 500 by Privy Council.—Capt. Panton's Dispute, 1616.—His Appeals to Privy Council.—Master Gunner claims Artillery Garden.—Capt. Panton's Case referred to Lord Justice and others.—Their Report thereon, 1619.—Capt. Bingham elected *vice* Panton.—First Grant to Company by Corporation, 1620.—Artillery Yard at Colchester.—The Musters in Finsbury and St. James's Fields.—The Disputed Right to the Artillery Garden.—Petition of Lieutenant of Ordnance to the King, 1624.

DURING the last four years of the long reign of Elizabeth, and for nearly two years after James I. had succeeded to the throne, little or nothing remains to show the condition of the Company.

1604.—On the 6th of December, 1604, the Lord Mayor wrote to the Lord High Treasurer, and Lord Chancellor, enclosing a petition from the Bowyers and Fletchers, "and other poor companies belonging to Archery," complaining of the great disorders and abuses which, by reason of certain Letters Patent formerly granted under a pretence of maintaining the exercise of shooting, there were daily unlawful games in common bowling alleys. They were informed that the Patent was about to be renewed to Mr. Cornwallis, "a Trompeporter" of His Majesty's household, who had exhibited a petition in the names

of the poor companies, in favour of the renewal, entirely without their consent. These games were daily resorted to, especially by the younger sort and apprentices, the result being beggary and ruin to many citizens who used and frequented such places. They therefore humbly desired their Lordships with their usual consideration for the well-being of the City to prevent the said Letters being passed under the Great Seal until His Highness had been informed of the inconvenience and abuses thereof.*

1605.—But they were unsuccessful in their endeavours, for, on the 1st of February, the King granted a Patent, confirming those granted by Elizabeth for preserving the fields about London for archery, and in precisely similar terms.†

1610.—Stow mentions that in this year Philip Hudson, a Lieutenant in the Company, Thomas Laverock, Robert Hughes, Samuel Arthois, Robert Greenhurst, and divers other members, took active measures to revive the practice of the military exercises and discipline which had apparently been much neglected for some years past.‡

This fact is partly borne out by the Great Vellum Book, the earliest record the Company now possesses, which commences in this year, and contains all the above names, but in some cases the orthography differs.

1612.—In this year they applied to the Privy Council for permission to assemble, so as to prevent all future misconstruction of their honest intentions and actions there; and undertook, at their own private charge, to have a weekly exercise after the modern and best fashion and instruction then in use; and in order to encourage the practice of the art they erected a handsome armoury, and furnished it with several sorts of arms of such extraordinary beauty, fashion, and goodness for service, as were hardly to be matched elsewhere.§

* Remembrancia, Vol. II.. No. 249.

† See pp. 29, 30, and Appendix C, No. 4.

‡ Howe's Stow, pp. 906, 907, and Strype's Stow, Book V., pp. 456, 457.

§ Idem, p. 457. Highmore, pp. 54, 55.

The Privy Council granted their request on the 3rd of July, and issued an Order of that date stating that a petition having been presented to them by divers citizens of London, declaring that the example of other flourishing cities and states in foreign parts, together with certain worthy citizens who had hitherto exercised arms, had moved the petitioners with like zeal and affection to do His Majesty and their country service by applying themselves to some laudable exercise to improve their knowledge and experience in the use of arms. And in order to avoid incurring any danger of infringing the laws for the restraint of armed assemblies, they applied to the Council for permission to exercise arms and be instructed in military discipline in the Artillery Garden, or any other convenient place in or near the city, under such commanders and officers as they should chose. Their Lordships having considered their request, and being informed by the Recorder that they were men of good means and well affected, and that the Lord Mayor and Aldermen approved of their endeavours, saw no objection to their being trained by Captain Edward Panton,* or such others as were thought fit to instruct them; and that, subject to the approval of the Lord Mayor, they might admit any citizens to the Company, and chose any officers, provided their number did not exceed 250.†

On the 8th of December the Captain and President of the Society practising arms in the Artillery Garden, near London, applied to the Armourers to grant them the use of their Hall, kitchen, and other offices, for their feasts and other general assemblies, and also for holding their Courts at such times as they required. The Society not only offered to pay to the Masters and Wardens of the Company any reason-

* Capt. Edward Panton (?) was a common adventurer, who, finding the trade of evidence so successfully carried on by Oates, Bedloe, Dugdale, and other desperate characters, seemed to have been determined not to remain idle while so much good employment might be obtained at the trifling expense of a few false oaths. He made a large fortune by gambling, and acquired property on which he built Panton Street and Square, in the neighbourhood of Leicester Fields. (Caulfield's *Memoirs of Remarkable Persons*, pp. 238, 239.)

† Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. LXX., No. 3. See Appendix B, No. 2.

able consideration, but also promised to provide and furnish themselves with all manner of provisions, such as brass, pewter, spits, linen, plate, and all other necessities, and to make ample satisfaction for all manner of goods, implements and necessities, and household stuff belonging to the Armourers, which should be spoiled or defaced at any time by them or their servants.

The Masters, Wardens and Assistants, after duly considering their offer, and being desirous to comply with their request as far as possible, granted their application for the yearly rent of £3 6s. 8d., to be paid quarterly viz. 40s. for the use of the Fraternity of Armourers, and 26s. 8d. to the Beadle, for his attendance and pains at every meeting of the Governors and Assistants of the Society. They might therefore have free use of the Hall (except at such times as it was required by the Armourers themselves), on giving six days' notice beforehand. This agreement was to remain in force for one year, and as long after as the Masters and Wardens of the Armourers' Company should think fit.*

1613.—On the 6th of May, Sir Thomas Lowe, and others, the Committee appointed by the Court of Aldermen for Martial

* Court Book (1559-1621) of Armourers' Company, pp. 727, 728.

NOTE.—The Armourers' Company was incorporated by Henry VI., on the 8th of May, 1432, under the title of "The Masters, Wardens, and Brethren and Sisters of the Fraternity or Guild of Saint George, of the men of the Mystery of Armourers of the City of London." It was confirmed by James I. on 29th of September, 1619, and by James II. on 12th of May, 1686 (see Charters of City Companies, pp. 87-92, in Record Office, Guildhall). Queen Anne, on 17th of June, 1708, gave them a new charter as the *Armourers and Brasiers*. They established themselves on the site where their Hall now stands, at the corner of London Wall and Coleman Street, in 1428.

There appears to have been another Guild of St. George, mention being made of one in the King's Book of Payments between April, 1509, and April, 1515, in which entries several times appear for the payment of 13s. 4d. to the "Fraternity of Saint George's Guild," in some cases with the word "Southwark" after it; but there is nothing to show what Guild this was, or on what account the payments were made. See Printed Calender, State Papers, Domestic (Henry VIII.), Vol. II., Part II., pp. 1,441-71; also a duplicate copy in the British Museum, Additional MSS., No. 21,481.

Business within the City, reported to the Court that they had elected and chosen Richard Morris, Captain, and Peter Hudson to be Lieutenant, of the Society practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, of whose election the Court approved.*

The Court directed the Chamberlain, on the 6th of July, to pay forthwith to Captain Edward Panton the sum of £40, and to Richard Morris, and Philip Hudson, Lieutenant, the sum of twenty marks apiece, as the free gift of the Court, for their care and pains taken with the Society practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, and for the better supporting and encouraging of the said Society.†

1614.—The Society of Arms in the Artillery Garden, near London, presented a petition, on the 10th of February, desiring, for some reasons therein expressed, to have some convenient place assigned to them within the City, to exercise in, and likewise some safe place appointed for the custody of their armour and munitions. Whereupon a committee of the Aldermen was appointed to meet forthwith and take into consideration the said petition, and confer with the committee for letting the lands and tenements belonging to Gresham College, for a fit place to keep their armour and munitions in, and to certify to the Court in writing of their having done so.‡

The Committee presented their report, dated Monday, the 11th of May, to the Court of Aldermen on the following day, stating that the Society practising Arms in the Artillery Garden had applied for a convenient place for exercise, &c., and, after mature consideration, they came to the conclusion that, for the continuance of so commendable an exercise, so worthily undertaken for the honour of this City by the gentlemen of the said Society, they thought that the uppermost field near Finsbury was the most convenient place for the exercise of arms that the City afforded, in which place (if it appeared unto the Court that the said exercise might be continued without hurt or danger of

* Repertory, Vol. XXXI., Part I., f. 94.

† Idem, f. 125.

‡ Idem, Vol. XXXI., Part II., f. 258.

passengers) they earnestly desired that his Lordship and the Court would be pleased to grant them the use of the said field for the practice of arms during the good liking of his Lordship and the honourable Court.

The report, being openly read, "was well liked and allowed of," and ordered to be in all things observed accordingly.*

Upon the humble petition of Captain Richard Morris and Philip Hudson, Lieutenant, the Court of Aldermen, on the 24th of September, ordered the Chamberlain to pay them £26 13s. 4d. each, as a gift from the Court in regard of their pains taken in the instructing and training the youth of the City in military discipline, and for their better encouragement to continue the same; the allowance to be paid to them yearly during the pleasure of the Court.†

On the 16th of November the Company presented a petition to the Court of Aldermen, reciting that, on the 3rd of July, 1612, it had pleased the Lords of His Majesty's Most Honorable Privy Council, in their honorable and worthy disposition towards their exercise, and for the reviving of the practice of arms, to license and authorise the petitioners, for their better experience in the use of arms, to train in any place in or near the City, so as their number should not exceed 250. This number was now complete, and although divers of the better sort of citizens of the best means and quality were desirous to be admitted into the Company, for their better instructing in military discipline, they could not safely receive them into their Company without danger of incurring a contempt of their Lordships' Order. They therefore humbly prayed the Court would be pleased, for the advancement of this worthy exercise, to recommend their humble petition unto the Council, that their Company might be augmented to such a competent number as their Lordships should think convenient; and that none should be admitted but such as were known to be of good means, and soundly and religiously affected to the King and State, and approved of by the Court of Aldermen. Whereupon the Court, much

* Repertory, Vol. XXXI., Part II., f. 313, and Letter Book EE, f. 242.

† Idem, Vol. XXXI., Part II., f. 419.

commending the practice of arms, and conceiving their suit to be very reasonable and honest, ordered that the City Remembrancer should forthwith send a letter to the Privy Council as requested.*

On the 11th of December the Recorder applied to the Privy Council, stating that many other citizens of the best sort and quality, having seen by experience, during the last two years, the great good and benefit which ensued from the training and exercise of the said Company, desired to be admitted into it; but the Company, being full, were unable to receive them. He therefore, in the name of the whole City, humbly requested that the number might be increased to 500, which the Council sanctioned, provided that none should be admitted but such as were known to be of good means and well affected in religion, and to His Majesty, and were approved of by the Court of Aldermen, who were to establish such rules for the good government of the Company as should be thought meet.†

The Company was now grown great and in good estimation; and not only Prince Charles, but also many country gentlemen of all shires resorted to the Artillery Garden, and diligently observed their exercises, which they saw were excellent; and returning home to their own countries, practised and used the same with their trained bands.‡

1615.—In the the Court of Aldermen on the 23rd of January, it was ordered that, as Capt. Panton was formerly granted £40, and Lieut. Morris and Lieut. Hudson twenty marks each yearly, as a gift from the Court, that Capt. Panton should be paid £60 at once, being his allowance for a year and a half; and the Lieutenants the arrears remaining unpaid up to Christmas last, and from thenceforth the payment was to cease.

On the 26th of January Capt. Panton was ordered to bring to the Court of Aldermen, on the following Tuesday, the list of

* Repertory, Vol. XXXII, f. 9.

† Council Register (Jas. I.), Vol. I, f. 251. See Appendix B, No. 3.

‡ Stow, Book II., p. 457. Highmore, p. 55.

names of all those under his conduct and leading in the Artillery Garden.

A Committee was appointed, on the 26th of April, to confer immediately with the Clothworkers, who held "Taynters" in the Upper Moorfields, regarding some reasonable compensation for their removal from thence. At the same Court certain propositions or articles were submitted, by the Society of the Artillery Garden, to be confirmed, for their better establishment and government in the practice and exercise of arms in or about the City; and it was agreed to recommend them to the next Common Council.

The mud wall by the Tainters and windmill was ordered to be pulled down, at a Court of Aldermen held on the 26th of June, and the soil in the Little Moorfields carried away.

From this date Capt. Panton and the Society practising in the Artillery Garden were ordered to suspend their training and meeting until further orders were given for some special reason. On the 6th of July, Capt. Panton, and divers of the Society, humbly prayed that they might be admitted to exercise as formerly, and upon their promising to behave in an orderly manner to the Government of the city, the former order was rescinded.*

1616.—On the first of January a grant was made to Sir Richard Morrison, of the Lieutenancy of the Ordnance, and keeping of the Store-houses near Aldgate, and the Artillery Garden, for life.†

On the last day in February the Remembrancer wrote to the Privy Council, recommending for their favourable consideration the Petition presented by the Society of the Artillery Garden, to be permitted to continue their exercises there.‡

On the 17th of March, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen recommended a complaint, presented by the Society of Arms, practising in the Teazell Ground, then called the Artillery Garden, showing that, according to ancient custom, and by a lease (for

* Repertory, Vol. XXXII., f. 43, 46, 100, 136, 141.

† Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. LXXXVI., No. 1, and Grant Book, p. 165.

‡ Repertory, Vol. XXXII., f. 253.

many years to come) granted by the Prior and Convent of St. Mary's, Spittal, to the Fraternity or Guild of Artillery, using hand-guns, long-bows, and cross-bows, and other martial weapons, and confirmed since by his Majesty unto William Hammond, Esq., his Majesty's Master-Gunner, of England, for the sole use above mentioned and no other. The Company had, for the space of almost five years, by licence and order from the Board, trained there without contradiction of any. But William Hammond pretended that the sole right in the property and estate belonged to him, and would not admit their claim to exercise there; forbidding their servants and armourers to clean and repair their arms there contrary to the meaning of the lease. The truth of these allegations appeared by affidavit made before the Barons of the Court of Exchequer, to whose order the lessee is, by the covenant in the lease from his Majesty, to submit himself upon any controversy concerning the premises.

The Barons, for the reasons above given, required him not to disturb the Society or any of their servants, armourers, or gun-makers, in the exercise of their arms in the said place, but by all in his power to aid and assist them, until, by a Bill to be exhibited on his behalf in the Court of Exchequer, other orders should be given in the cause.

The said Hammond was then called before the Board, and charged by the petitioner (also present) that, notwithstanding the said order and directions, he continued obstinate and would not permit them to exercise in the ground; to which he replied by insisting on the validity of the lease, and did not hold himself tied to give them any such liberty as was claimed without some rent or other consideration being given him by the Society. Their Lordships, considering this answer frivolous and insufficient to excuse him for not obeying the order or warrant of the Barons, commanded him, upon his duty and allegiance, to submit thereto, and to fulfil it in all points. And in the meantime, until the matter was judicially heard and determined as prescribed in the warrant, that he was not to presume to demand anything by way of fine, rent, or other consideration from the Society for the use of the ground by them or their servants; and any of their arms which

he had detained were to be immediately given up, as he would have to answer to the contrary.*

A disagreement arose between Captain Panton, Captain Bingham, and the members of the Company, in this year, which continued for a long period, during which time frequent applications were made to the Privy Council on the subject. Early in the year, probably in February, Captain Panton petitioned the Privy Council, setting forth that, during the last five years, at the earnest request of divers citizens of London, he undertook the leading and exercising of the Society of Arms, practising in the Artillery Garden, which, to his great charge and excessive labour, he reduced to that form and state as it then stood, having first procured their Lordships' leave to enrol persons not exceeding the number of 250. The then Lord Mayor and the Corporation gave great encouragement thereunto, and, in testimony of their grateful acceptance of his services therein, made him a freeman of London, and withal ordained a yearly pension of £40 to be paid him out of the Chamber of London, promising, upon further approbation of his care and endeavour therein, to enlarge their liberality towards him. But since their last musters the Court of Aldermen, finding the great honour and safety redounding thereby to the City, themselves became suitors to the Privy Council for the increase of that number, and it had pleased their honours, upon Mr. Recorder's motion, to authorise the number of 500 of the better sort of citizens to be trained by the petitioner, in or near the City of London. After so many years' acceptable and beneficial service to the City at his great expenses, the Court of Aldermen refused to pay him any longer £40, or any other satisfaction, for his time and the expenditure of his means. And as by their Lordships' letter, dated the 30th of November, to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, concerning the mustering and training of the 6,000 citizens, advising them to use the assistance of some man of experience in furnishing the companies with fit arms, according to the modern use of other nations, in their training and discipline, as should be most beneficial for the practice of their arms, and advancement of that

* Council Register (Jas. I). Vol. II., p. 196.

service. He therefore prayed their Lordships, in regard for his past services, to nominate and recommend him for the place, and to direct the Lord Mayor and Aldermen to appoint him, with such fees as the Privy Council should think proper for an officer of that quality.*

On the 4th of April the Lord Mayor and Aldermen wrote to the Privy Council, in reply to Captain Panton's petition, which had been sent to them for consideration. First, they said, it seemed that the petitioner complained of them, pretending that he had heretofore a yearly pension of £40, granted unto him out of the Chamber of the City, which was then denied him. Secondly, he had made a request to their Lordships to be recommended to them to be the City's Officer to oversee the arms; and, for his merit, he alleged his labour and painstaking in training the citizens that practised arms in the Artillery Garden. Their Lordships might vouchsafe to be informed, that such as came to be trained in that place were but as voluntary scholars to Captain Panton, and followed the practice of arms only for their pleasure. Howbeit, every particular man of his company (as they are informed) respecteth his pains, more or less, with some consideration, which, by the increase to 500, had become double as much to him. For their parts, they had also been benevolent unto him out of the City's purse; but they never (as he pretended) granted him any yearly pension, neither had they reason to charge the City, either with any pension to a captain, or with the employment of any officer to oversee the City arms. For, as in times past, upon all necessary occasions of levies of soldiers, their predecessors had always carefully performed the will and pleasure of their Sovereigns and the directions of the honorable Board, without the help of any such officer. With their Lordships' approbation, they had quartered the City, and had appointed colonels over the several City captains, who would take the whole care upon themselves, and see that their companies of the City were furnished with serviceable and proper arms. They hoped their Lordships would see that there was much

* Remembrancia, Vol. IV., No. 24.

less cause now to burden the City with any such officer, neither would the citizens be content to have such an officer over them!"*

It was not long before the Privy Council were again appealed to, but on a more important subject, viz., the right of the Company to the Artillery Garden, which for a long time was a cause of contention. On the 3rd of May, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen wrote to the Council, enclosing a petition from the Society of Citizens Practising Arms and Military Discipline, complaining that William Hammond, His Majesty's Master-Gunner of England, had lately restrained them from using the Artillery Garden, and would not suffer them to exercise there any longer, or allow their servants and armourers to repair their armour, or mend and clean their arms, without paying him a great rent for the use of the ground, which had never been demanded before. It was only lately that Hammond had obtained a grant from His Majesty of the ground, which was intended by the Master-Gunner to be for the use of the Society, and he had influenced them on that plea to join with him in writing; but when he had obtained the grant he pretended that the whole property and right in the ground belonged to him.

The Company had therefore complained to the Barons of the Court of Exchequer, who, upon sight of the grant (whereby it appeared that upon any controversy happening concerning the premises he was to submit himself to the order of the said Barons), and also of a Certificate from Sir Francis Bacon, Knight, Attorney-General (whereby it was conceived that Hammond's grant was intended for the use of the said Society, and not for his own benefit); the Barons, by Warrant under their hands, did command and require the said Hammond to forbear interrupting the petitioners in the use of the place until he exhibited a Bill in the Court of Exchequer, or other order should be taken in the cause.

Notwithstanding this Warrant, Hammond continued obstinate, and would not permit the petitioners to continue their exercises in the ground. As the petitioners were citizens of

* Remembrancia, Vol. IV., No. 25.

good worth, and out of zeal and affection, to enable themselves to do His Majesty and their country service, applied themselves to the exercise of arms, they (the Corporation) thought fit to recommend their petition to the Council's consideration. By an Order of that Board, dated the 3rd of July, 1612,* the Society, and their exercise of arms was approved of in any place in or near the City; and as they knew of no place so fit for that purpose as the Artillery Garden (to prevent which would be likely to frustrate so commendable an exercise), they humbly prayed the Council to issue an order for the petitioners to be freely permitted to use the ground, according to the Warrant of the said Barons, until the differences between them were heard and determined in the Court of Exchequer.†

1618.—Captain Panton having been suspended by the Court of Aldermen, they, at the request of divers members of the Society, who were present at a Court on the 15th of December, publicly declared their dislike of his behaviour, as, since his suspension, he had neglected his duties; he was therefore discharged from his place in the Artillery Garden in the exercise and training of that Society in harness.‡

On the 31st of December the Society of the Artillery Garden presented three officers (Captain Bingham being one) to the Court to be put in election in place of Captain Panton; and, after receiving good testimony from divers persons touching his breeding and efficiency, he was duly elected to be the leader in the Artillery Garden during the Court's pleasure.§

1619.—These proceedings led to further appeals to the Privy Council; and, early in January, Captain Panton again petitioned the Council to uphold him, as he had for the past seven years by their authority, trained the Society of Arms in the Artillery Garden, to his great charge, loss of time, and excessive labour; by which he had enabled divers of the said Company to become officers and leaders to discipline the Trained Bands of

* See page 40, and Appendix B, No. 2.

† Remembrancia, Vol. IV., No. 29.

‡ Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 24.

§ Idem, f. 27; and Letter Book GG, f. 123b.

the City, not only to the great honour and safety of the same, but also to the saving of the City's purse, who otherwise must of necessity have been at the charge for the entertainment of officers to have taught their Trained Bands the use of their arms. Although he had served so many years as Captain of the Company, and with their approval and authority, the Court of Aldermen had lately suspended him from the execution of his place, to his great discredit; but upon what grounds he knew not. By this the Company was likely to be dissolved, the greater number thereof having already refused to carry arms, and ceased their practice. He therefore prayed that, in consideration of his care and industry, which he had always used for the upholding of the Company and that worthy exercise, that they would order him to be reinstated until the Court of Aldermen had shown good cause to the contrary, or against his life or behaviour.*

The Privy Council immediately complied with his request, and at a meeting of the Council, on the 5th of January, they issued an order that, as Capt. Panton had for several years past by their authority exercised and trained the Society of Arms in the Artillery Garden, in which charge he had hitherto not only demeaned himself without blame, but that they had good testimony of his pains, and commendable endeavours in the performance of his duties; and being informed that the Aldermen had suspended him, without informing him on what grounds—he having been placed there by authority of the Council, it therefore appertained unto them to displace him if there was sufficient cause, with which their Lordships ought first to have been made acquainted. They therefore ordered the petitioner to be sent immediately to the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen for an explanation, and for the reasons of their proceedings, of which the Council would judge, and decide whether to continue or remove him. In the meantime Capt. Panton was to retain his place as before without prejudice or hindrance in the execution of his office until their answer was returned.†

* Remembrancia, Vol. V., No. 5.

† Idem, Vol. V., No. 6, and Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., p. 71.

On the 19th of January it was stated, at a Court of Aldermen that, although Capt. Panton had been dismissed as leader, he had summoned members to train that afternoon under him in the Artillery Garden. It was therefore decided that no more training should be held either by Capt. Panton or Capt. Bingham, until further orders. A Committee was at the same time formed, with the Recorder, to inform the Privy Council of the reasons and grounds upon which Capt. Panton was displaced.*

On Sunday, the 31st of January, the Court of Aldermen returned their answer to the Privy Council regarding Capt. Panton's complaint, charging him with neglect of duty, misdemeanours, and abuses of the Company. The Council desired further impartial evidence against him, and reprov'd the Aldermen for electing a new officer without first acquainting them. They then referred the question to the Lord Chief Justice, Sir H. Vere, and Sir Edward Conway to report on, "for the honor of the Board and the reasonable satisfaction of the Company," which their Lordships were inclined to encourage in so laudable an exercise by all good means that might be.†

The report of the Lord Chief Justice (which is dated the 21st of February, and signed by H. Montague, Edward Conway, and H. Vere) states that they had before them Capt. Panton, and divers citizens of good sort, and entered upon the examination prescribed by their Lordships; but soon found by the divided affection of the men of the Company what a distraction it would make—some charging him, and others defending him; and so by proving and disproving it was likely to grow to a rent, if not a disbanding of the Company. They therefore proposed that both parties should leave the case in their hands, and do what they directed, provided it was approved of by the Privy Council, to which they readily agreed.

Upon consideration of the whole matter they submitted the following opinion:—

Firstly, That the City had taken upon themselves to settle Capt. Panton's case, but had no right to displace or elect the Captain without informing the Privy Council.

* Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 35.

† Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., p. 83.

Secondly, That the Company should be encouraged in their exercise by every possible means.

Thirdly, That the reputation of a soldier might be so wounded by personal accusations that it might render him unworthy of any employment afterwards ; therefore he should not be examined upon all his doings. Two persons who "professed arms" bore witness that they had seen his training and the ordering of his men, which proved his discipline and teaching to be as good as they had seen in Trained Bands anywhere.

Fourthly, To the end that neither Capt. Panton nor Capt. Bingham should either of them seem wronged, "they wished, and it was well liked, that the place should be cleared of them both for a time," and that the Company might elect from any whom the Council might recommend to them.

They suggested that three should be nominated, including Capt. Panton and Capt. Bingham, and that the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, assisted by the City Captain, should choose one of them for the place. This course they found pleasing to all parties. And although Capt. Panton might not be chosen, yet the Lord Chief Justice would arrange with the City to satisfy him and clear his reputation.*

But the Company were still discontented, and petitioned the Council, setting forth that they had already presented a petition to the Council on Sunday, the 31st of January, regarding the distractions of the Company ; which their Lordships had referred to the Lord Chief Justice and others, who, as they were informed, had sent their opinions on the subject to the Council. The petitioners being desirous to uphold so laudable and necessary an exercise if it met with their Lordships' approbation, and finding that they were inclined to encourage them, it had emboldened them once again to trouble them, seeing that the present condition of the Company required that some speedy steps should be taken to settle it again. They hoped that as, at their great cost and charge, they were the first example to others to establish such an exercise, they might not then, especially in those times, be the first dissolved, which they more than feared, unless they were "cherished and comforted" by their Lordships.

* Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CV., No. 122.

They, therefore, prayed to be informed of their Lordships' pleasure therein, that they might go cheerfully forward in their exercise; and as they had been, so would they always be, ready and willing to offer their persons and purses to enable and fit themselves to render that service to His Majesty and the State as became dutiful and loyal subjects.*

The Privy Council wrote to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, on the 5th of March, on the subject of the complaints which had been made to them against Capt. Panton, who appeared to be disliked by some members of the Company; and they had referred the case against him to the Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, Sir Horatio Vere, and Sir Edward Conway, Kt., who, upon hearing the cause in the presence of both parties, had sent them their opinion in writing,† of which the Council approved; and forthwith recommended Capt. Panton, Capt. Bingham, and Capt. Thomas Brett for the post, and required the Lord Mayor, with the assistance of the Captains of the City Companies, to choose one of them to supply the place of Captain of the Artillery Yard, to train and teach the Company the use of arms as formerly."‡

At a meeting of the Court of Aldermen, on the 6th of March, the letter from the Privy Council of the previous day was read, and the captains of the several Companies of the City being called according to the directions of the letter, and their opinions taken of the three officers commended to the election of the Court by the Privy Council, for the directing and instructing of the Military Company Exercising Arms in the Artillery Garden who were then without a leader. All the captains present, thirteen in number, voted for Capt. Bingham, and the Court, proceeding to the election, with one voice chose Capt. Bingham; and it was ordered that the Recorder, with several Aldermen and Captains, should the next day attend the Privy Council to signify to them the proceedings of the Court, and humbly pray the Council to approve of their election. It was further resolved to make Capt. Bingham a freeman of the City of whichever

* Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CV., No. 123.

† See pp. 52-3.

‡ Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., No. 14, and Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., p. 119.

company he preferred, and before he took up his place to take the Oath of Allegiance and the oath of a freeman in open court, and, with all convenient speed, commence his duties, that the "Company may be reunited again." And the Court specially recommended that no person should be admitted into the Company who, by reason of his ability and quality, was not well fitted for the same.*

On Sunday, the 7th of March, one of the four Pleaders of the City, accompanied by Capt. Bingham, presented themselves before the Lords of the Privy Council, and informed them that the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, with the advice of the City Captains, had chosen Capt. Bingham as Leader in the Artillery Garden, and desired their approval, which was given; their Lordships remarking that the gentleman whom they had chosen was well known to them for his "sufficiency" and experience in arms; and authorised him to train the Company in the Artillery Garden, or other convenient place, with the same privileges and liberty as formerly. They also thought he should be admitted a freeman and take the oath accordingly.†

On the 9th of March Capt. Bingham took the Oath of Allegiance, and was admitted into the Company of Ironmongers, paying for the City's use the sum of 6s. 8d.‡

1620.—The Lord Justice Montague and Sir H. Vere wrote to the Lord Mayor, on the 24th of January, saying that the Lords of the Privy Council had referred to them certain differences between the City of London and Capt. Panton, concerning the Company training in the Artillery Garden, and that the Recorder and Ald. Hamersley attended in behalf of the City, and Capt. Panton, with divers citizens on his behalf. The matter in question seemed to them of small moment, yet, as it might have occasioned much trouble, all parties freely agreed to leave it to them to decide without further examination. Only Capt. Panton besought that his reputation should be established, and that the City should recompense him for his seven years' employment

* Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 74.

† Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., p. 120.
Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 75.

and expense, all of which they thought very reasonable, and to which the Recorder and Alderman Hamersley assented.

They therefore informed the Privy Council, in writing, of the result, and directed the Recorder to inform the Lord Mayor and Aldermen that they thought that Capt. Panton should be recompensed for his services, considering it was for the public good, especially for the City of London.

They were informed by Capt. Panton that he had not yet had any recompense or satisfaction from them, they therefore thought good once more to recommend him to them on his own merits, so that the Lords of the Privy Council might not be again informed of his grievance and cause of complaint.*

In this year occurs the first mention of a grant made by the Corporation to the Company, which was continued for many years afterwards, towards the charge of their annual feasts, to which the Lord Mayor and principal officers of the Corporation were always invited.

On the 9th of May, the Chamberlain was ordered to pay to the President, Alderman Hamersley, £10 17s. 4d. for provisions sent into the fields on the 26th of April, when the "Artillery-men" mustered there; and for wine sent to the stewards for their supper at Merchant Taylors' Hall.†

Several persons having, by an abuse of trust, obtained for their own use leases from the King of ground in and about the Tower, which had been encroached upon to such an extent "that the splendour and magnificence of the Royal Castle was destroyed," by public property being thus diverted to private use; and complaint having been made of these abuses, all the leases were declared void.

By direction of the Privy Council the Lord Chamberlain, Sir H. Vere, the Earl of Arundel, Lord Craven, Mr. Secretary Naunton, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and Sir E. Coke, personally inspected the ground, and found it much worse than they expected. Sir E. Coke was requested to consider how the abuses might be legally reformed, and upon his report the Privy Council issued an Order on the subject, dated the 4th of July,

* Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., No. 37.

† Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 428.

in which the following statement is contained :—That as a lease was procured from His Majesty by William Hammond, Master-Gunner, of the “ Artillery Yard, near the Minorytes,” under an ancient obsolete name of the “ Tesell Yard,” for 223 years, and as the lease was apparently defective and void, and acknowledged to be so by Hammond and his counsel, for manifest imperfections found in it by Sir E. Coke, it was delivered up to him by Hammond, and was then in the Council chest. It was then ordered that the said Artillery Yard should be for the future restored to the public use for which it had been formerly employed, viz., for the exercise of Arms and Artillery, and that from henceforth it should not be alienated or converted to any other use.”*

On the 3rd of October, a petition was presented by the citizens of London practising arms in the Artillery Garden, to the Court of Aldermen stating that the petitioners, out of their special love and affection to the City, had, for the space of ten years and upwards, to their great cost and charge, exercised the use of arms, and had been ready upon all occasions to supply and furnish the City with captains and other officers of chief respect, and were ready armed for defence of the same upon all sudden occasions. The Company, which not long since consisted of very nearly 500 worthy citizens, had of late diminished unto 200, or very few more, being discontented, as they had expected the Court to help to maintain their charges (which amounted to £250 per annum) for the maintenance of officers, and other needful expenses, besides arms, powder, and match; to meet which charge the petitioners had been forced to make private collections, by reason of the decrease of the Company. Whereupon the Court taking the subject into their consideration, and being desirous to encourage such a commendable exercise to be performed within this City by freemen thereof, were well pleased to grant that the said petitioners should from henceforth receive out of the Cham-

* Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., pp. 145, 542, 543, and Vol. V., pp. 344, 353, 385. The full Report or Survey, dated 31st December, 1623, of the condition of the Tower, &c., by Sir Allan Apsley, Lieutenant of the Tower, Sir Richard Morrison, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, Sir John Ogle, Kt., and Colonel Sir John Kaye, Surveyor of Ordnance, is given (with plans) in Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CLVI., No. 13.

ber of London the sum of one hundred marks per annum, for and towards their better encouragement to continue and maintain the said exercise. And the same to be paid quarterly during the pleasure of the Court, unto their treasurer for the time being, appointed by the said Company, and the first payment to begin at Christmas next.*

1621.—The example set by the citizens of London in voluntarily enrolling themselves in the Artillery Company for the purpose of learning the use of arms and military discipline, led other towns to follow their example. On the 18th of June a petition was presented to the Privy Council by the Bailiffs and Aldermen of Colchester, stating that, by the most worthy example of London in the "Artillery Yard," they wished for permission to establish a similar organisation to enable them to render service to the country by training in military discipline under some worthy captain, who should be approved of by the Council. Their request was acceded to; but their Lordships directed that only such persons as were approved of by the Aldermen of that town were to be admitted members. A similar application was made on the 25th of October of the following year, by the Aldermen of Bury St. Edmunds, and likewise granted.† These may be considered the earliest form of Volunteer Corps in this country, and they probably differed but little from the "Military Associations" raised towards the close of the last century.

It was usual for the Trained Bands to assemble every year on May-day and Shrove Tuesday, in Finsbury Fields, nominally for training and exercise, but in fact to be prepared to suppress any disorders which might occur, as the apprentices and others, having a holiday, often attempted to create a disturbance.

On the 12th of April, 1621, the Privy Council wrote to the Lord Mayor to have the City Forces ready to assemble at all times for His Majesty's service; and reminded him to have the Military [Artillery] Company, or a sufficient number of Trained Bands, in Finsbury Fields on May-day, as usual.‡

* Letter Book GG, f. 295, and Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 566.

† Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. V., pp. 64 and 502.

‡ Idem, p. 31; and Repertory, Vol. XXXV., f. 112, and Vol. XL., f. 185.

1622.—The following year, the Council remark, in an Order dated the 6th of April, that (Finsbury Fields being rather out of the way) the Trained Bands were to march, by Fleet Street and the Strand, to St. James's Fields, so that such foreign ambassadors then with the King might take notice of the troops, which latter was probably the true reason of the alteration, Finsbury being really so much nearer.*

A petition was presented to the Privy Council, on the 5th of April, by the Company, complaining that William Hammond, Master-Gunner to His Majesty, had encroached upon their ground and place of exercise in the "Teazell Ground," or Artillery Garden, by enclosing certain cabbage gardens, and restraining them from using a butt with a mark, erected in the ground, and very useful in their exercise. They also begged, as the place in which they lodged their arms was so decayed that it was ready to fall down, they might have licence to build a new armoury of brick and stone, in some convenient part of the Teazell Ground.

Upon consideration it was agreed that, as the case of Hammond had been already decided by them, on the 4th of July, 1620, their Lordships thought it sufficient to confirm their previous Order, and commanded that the same should be forthwith put in full and due execution, both in laying open the said cabbage gardens, and restoring to the Company the free use of their butt and mark, as in what else should have relation thereunto; and that Hammond should be sent for to the Board to show cause why it had been so long delayed. With regard to the Armoury, their Lordships (in favour to that Society whom they held worthy of all lawful encouragement) ordered that they might build and erect a new house for that purpose at their own charge, provided it was made of brick and stone in such a manner as might be least subject to be surprised.†

The Court of Aldermen, being informed, on the 30th April, that the Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, were going, at their own charge, to make an extraordinary feast that day week, and had invited the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, the Court, in token of their good respect to the Society, thought fit

* Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. V., p. 321.

† Idem, p. 319.

to bestow on them for the feast "one hogshead of clarrett wyne, thirty gallons of sacke, and thirty gallons of Rhenishe wyne," and the Chamberlain was ordered to pay Alderman Hamersley, the President, as much money as would provide the same.*

On the 1st of May, the foundations of the New Armoury were commenced, and it was completed on the 31st of November the following year. The Armoury was furnished with 500 sets of arms, of extraordinary beauty, which were lost in the Civil Wars.†

An annuity of 100 marks per annum having been granted by the Court of Aldermen to the Society for their better encouragement to continue that laudable exercise, upon a motion and humble request made to them on the 30th of July by divers of the City captains, the Court, out of their favour and good respect to them, ordered the Chamberlain to pay to their treasurer four years' payment of the said annuity, he giving an acknowledgment for the same.‡

1623.—The Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, intending to make a great feast on Thursday week at Merchant Taylors' Hall, to which the Lords of His Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen were invited, the Court of Aldermen, on the 10th of June, were pleased, in token of their good respect to that Society, to bestow upon them, towards the charge of the feast, one hogshead of claret, thirty gallons of sack, and the same number of Rhenish wine as formerly allowed on like occasions.§

A Report, dated the 31st of December, by the Lieutenant of the Tower, Sir A. Apsley; the Lieutenant of the Ordnance, Sir J. Ogle, and Sir John Kaye, Surveyor of Ordnance, stating what had been done in accordance with the latter part of the instructions delivered to them by the Privy Council on the 4th of December (touching the report made by the Right Hon. the Lord Chamberlain, the Earl of Arundel, Lord Carew, Mr. Secretary Naunton, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and Sir Edward Coke,

* Repertory, Vol. XXXVI., f. 115.

† Strype's Stow, Book II., pp. 96-7; Highmore, p. 57.

‡ Repertory, Vol. XXXVI., f. 219. § Idem, Vol. XXXVII., f. 179.

on the 4th of July, 1620), which directed that they should not only report what had been done since, in the execution of their Lordships' report, and the Order of the Council, but also suggest what might be done therein, humbly reported as follows:—*

First. Concerning the lease of the Artillery Garden, procured from his Majesty by William Hammond (late Master-Gunner of England), under an ancient obsolete name of the Tessel Yard, for 223 years, which lease, being found apparently defective and void, it was (upon report of Sir Edward Coke) ordered by the Privy Council that the said Artillery Garden should be for the future restored to the public use for which it had been formerly employed, viz., for the exercise of arms and artillery. Notwithstanding that the lease above mentioned, was unadvisedly and indirectly procured by the said Hammond, yet during all his time, and long before, and since, the Lieutenants of the Ordnance, and the Master-Gunners of England under them, had and still held and enjoyed the said Garden for His Majesty's service, and so for the public, as anciently, beyond the memory of man, had been always customary. But they now found a fair house lately erected there by the citizens of London, to lodge their arms in for their training days, who had also pulled down some of His Majesty's houses there of ancient and necessary use. This they pretended to have done by warrant from the Honorable Board; and if it pleased their Lordships to allow of this house, they humbly advised that there might be an acknowledgment from the City made and entered in the office of the Ordnance, that they hold it only by favour, to the end that His Majesty's interest and title might not be prejudiced by any claim of theirs hereafter. And that in lieu of the houses by them pulled down they might be enjoined to erect others for His Majesty's necessary service.†

1624.—On the 22nd of June, the Court of Aldermen, upon request made to them on behalf of the Society, who were going

* There is no trace of the instructions here referred to of the 4th December, 1622, several pages in the Council Register of this date being left blank.

† Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CLVI., No. 13. See also p. 56.

to make a feast, bestowed on them a hogshead of claret, to be by them provided, but paid for by the Chamberlain.*

On the 16th of December, it was stated that as it had pleased the Court, in the Mayoralty of Sir Edward Barkham, Kt., on the 22nd of July, 1621, to grant the Society four years' payment beforehand of an annuity of 100 marks, granted them in the Mayoralty of Sir William Cockayne, Kt., in 1620, for their better encouragement to continue that worthy exercise; upon the humble petition of the Society, and at the request of divers of the City Captains present, the Court, out of their good respect to the said Company, ordered the Chamberlain to pay the treasurer of the Society three years' payment in advance of the said annuity of 100 marks, the treasurer giving his receipt for the same.†

Sir Richard Morrison, Knight, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, and John Reynolds, Master-Gunner of England, petitioned the King, on the behalf of themselves and the officers of the Ordnance and all His Majesty's feed-gunners within or belonging to the Tower of London, and of all scholars trained up in the art of artillery, stating that as the said Lieutenant and his predecessors, and the Master-Gunner and his predecessors, under the said Lieutenant for the time being, partly by virtue of a lease granted by the late prior and convent of the new hospital of Our Blessed Lady without Bishopsgate, in the twenty-ninth year of the reign of King Henry the Eighth: for many years then to come, and partly by virtue of His Majesty's grant unto the said Lieutenant for the time being of the Teazell ground or Artillery Garden, next adjoining unto the said late Hospital; they had for a long time beyond the memory of any man living always quietly held and enjoyed the said Artillery Garden, and that the said Master-Gunner for the time being had always and still continued to teach and train up scholars there in the art of artillery, to make them able to serve the Crown and State as "Cannonyers," either by sea or land, upon all occasions of service; for whose encouragement King Henry the Eighth established divers fees, to the number of a hundred, or thereabouts—

* Repertory, Vol. XXXVIII., f. 160.

† Idem, Vol. XXXIX., f. 48^b.

some of twelve, some of eight, and some of sixpence per diem, which were then continued.

The citizens of London having, about twelve or thirteen years ago, obtained leave for their captains to exercise within the said garden a Company of Pikes and Muskets, and also of late, within these two years, or thereabouts, further leave to erect at the one end of the said garden an armoury or house to lodge the arms for the said Company,—the said citizens, upon this leave and extraordinary favour afforded unto them, had not only presumed to pull down two of His Majesty's houses, viz., a store-house and a proof-house, both of very ancient and necessary use upon many occasions for His Majesty's service, and to make a gate into the Ordnance way, where the scholars were taught, but commanded them to avoid that place, used threatenings unto them, and committed many other "insulteries and misdemeanours—too long to be here particularly inserted." They had also lately further presumed to offer a petition unto the High Court of Parliament, seeking, by cunning and untrue suggestions, to obtain an Act to gain the inheritance of the said garden to themselves, thereby to disinherit His Majesty, and to divest the petitioners, and all the officers, gunners, and scholars, belonging to the office of the Ordnance, of their ancient right and interest, so long enjoyed and used, for the service of the Crown and State, and never controverted, except by these unthankful guests, lately and unadvisedly admitted, only out of favour.

They, therefore, most humbly besought His Highness to be pleased to take these things into his Princely consideration, and to be a means to establish such order therein for the preservation of His Majesty's inheritance and the advancement of His Highness' service as should be thought fit. And they should pray for His Highness' happy days long to continue.*

* Endorsed, "Lieutenant of Ordnance and Master-Gunner of England, &c., Complaint against the Artillery Company for Intrusion into the Artillery Garden, and divers other Wrongs, to the Prejudice of His Majesty's Service in the Trial and Practice of the Ordnance, desiring Redress," &c. Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CLIX., No. 97.

CHAPTER IV.

ACCESSION OF CHARLES I. TO THE GREAT REBELLION.

FROM 1625 TO 1642.

CONTENTS.—The Company's Feasts.—First Rules and Orders made, 1631.—The Armorial bearings of the Company.—Dispute between John Reynolds, Master-Gunner, and the Company.—Their Petition to Privy Council.—Decision of the Council.—Disturbance in the Artillery Garden.—Company elect their own Officers.—Corporation Appeal to Privy Council.—The Council censure them.—King's Warrant to encourage the Company.—Council's Letter of Remonstrance.—The King to elect the Captain.—First Election of Court of Assistants and Officers, 1633.—Commissioners of Archery and the Brickmakers.—William Neade, inventor of the "Bow and the Pike."—The March of the English Nation, 1634.—Further Orders for appointment of Officers.—Captain to have £50 per annum.—"Artillery Yards" formed in London and Provinces.—Captain Walter Neale.—Bunhill Fields to be viewed, 1635.—Flourishing Condition of the Company, 1638.—The New Artillery Garden, 1640.—Prince of Wales and others become Members, 1641.—Suspension of Enrolments during Civil War.

1625.—The annual feasts of the Company, which were generally held in June, were for many years supported by the Corporation, who used to vote them £10 annually towards the expenses.

On Tuesday, the 9th of June, at a Court of Aldermen, the Chamberlain was ordered to deliver £10 to Alderman Hamersley as a gratuity towards the charge of a supper intended to be made by the Company on the Tuesday following, as in former times had been customary.

The same amount was voted annually, in June, in the following four years.*

* Repertory, Vol. XXXIX., f. 233; Vol. XL., f. 242 (1626); Vol. XLI., f. 249 (1627); Vol. XLII., f. 206 (1628); Vol. XLIII., f. 198 (1629).

1626.—Sir William Heydon, the Lieutenant of the Ordnance, describes the objects of the Artillery Garden (as used by the Gunners of the Tower) to be for the training and trial of gunners; and that having once passed approbation there, their sufficiency and capacity of serving the King would be no more questioned. Those who came or were sent to seek this trial, would find him, or the Master-Gunner of England, in the Garden on known days.*

1627.—Capt. Bingham did not long continue leader of the Company, as, by His Majesty's recommendation, he was chosen to take charge of Kilmore Castle, in Ireland. The Company therefore being without a Captain, the Court of Aldermen, on the 30th of January, wishing well to the exercise, and desirous that the place might be well served, recommended Capt. Philip Jefford, a freeman of the City, to the Society for the place, having a good opinion of him, and also good testimony of his well-deserving and efficiency; and he was so well known to them, that they could not think of a better choice themselves.†

1628.—The Council wrote to the Lord Mayor, on the 16th of February, ordering him to issue a proclamation requiring the citizens to furnish themselves and their servants with bows and arrows, according to the Statutes of 33 Henry VIII.‡

1631.—The first mention of Rules being made for the government of the Company occurs in this year, when, on the 20th of January, the Court of Aldermen appointed a Committee, consisting of eight of their number (most of whom were members of the Company) to carefully peruse and consider the orders to be observed by every member of the Society exercising arms in

* Memorandum by Sir W. Heydon, dated 20th August, on the back of a certificate in favour of William Ellef, as gunner of one of the pinnaces newly built at Chatham. Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. XXXIV., No. 11.

† Repertory, Vol. XLI., f. 92^b.

‡ Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. III., p. 306.

the Artillery Garden (which were drawn up on the 29th of December, 1629), and to report to the Court in writing their opinion thereon.*

On the 22nd of April, John Reynolds, Master-Gunner, and the Company (who were represented by the Recorder), appeared before the Privy Council, the latter claiming the liberty and freedom they had formerly enjoyed, for the exercise of arms, and the use of a butt or mark in the Artillery Garden, according to an Order of the Exchequer, and previous Orders of the Board, with His Majesty's permission. Their Lordships well approved and much commended the forwardness of the citizens in such warlike and commendable practices.

Sir John Heydon, Kt., Lieutenant of the Ordnance, also claimed the command, under His Majesty, of the said Artillery Garden, by right of his office and patent for the same; but the Council thought fit and ordered that the Company were to have liberty to exercise in the Artillery Garden, according to the former Orders of the Exchequer and of the Council, and also the free use of the butt on the platform there; and as the Master-Gunner complained that their frequent exercise was prejudicial to His Majesty's Service, as it hindered His Majesty's "cannoneers" from their exercise and proofs, for which they alleged that place to be ordained, their Lordships thought fit (in case the parties themselves could not agree upon the days and times for exercise of Artillery and other arms), to recommend the Council of War to set down such days and times on their behalf as might be best for His Majesty's Service. And as the Company alleged that they had spent about one thousand pounds in building an armoury and fort there, for the better continuance and advancement of their exercise, which would require the bringing in of materials from time to time for their maintenance and repair, it was thought fit and ordered that the said citizens should have liberty at convenient times to bring in materials to repair their fort and building, when and as often as needs should require, without the interruption of the Master-Gunner for the time being, or any under him. And, lastly, it was

* Repertory, Vol. XLV., f. 105. See p. 45.

ordered (for the avoiding of further occasion of future difference) that a servant of the said Company should keep the door of the said Artillery Garden on the days of their exercise, and was to lodge in the chamber which they had built for that purpose to the armoury, for the better safety of their arms. The Master-Gunner, and all others whom it concerned, were required to take notice, and to conform themselves accordingly.*

Neither parties were satisfied with this Order, and on the 18th of May, John Reynolds, the Master-Gunner, petitioned the Council, stating that upon the last hearing their Lordships had been pleased to permit divers citizens of London, and others exercising arms, to use and exercise their said arms in His Majesty's Artillery Garden, at such times as were not prejudicial to His Majesty's Service or Officers, in the due attendance and execution of their duties, which was expressly recommended to their Lordships by His Majesty. And their Lordships likewise directed that the manner and times of their exercise should be referred to the Council of War. By the draft of their Lordships' order, the days and times only were so referred; but their Lordships' order was to refer likewise the manner and place of their exercise, which was to be only in the open Artillery Garden, and not in the Ordnance way (where they could have no use in training), and which would greatly disturb the exercise and teaching of scholars in great ordnance. This was contrary to His Majesty's commands, who directed him to put on a lock and keep them out of the said Ordnance way.

And as there was mention made in the said draft of the use of a butt (which was in truth the butt for the great ordnance in the said Ordnance way), and the keeping of the door of the said Garden, and lodging there by one of their servants, which was never spoken of before, nor any mention made of it at the hearing, therefore the petitioner prayed that the consideration thereof, with power to set down rules and orders for the regulating of the premises, and preserving the petitioner and scholars from any injuries or affronts from the said citizens

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VI., pp. 463, 464; and Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CXCI., No. 57^a.

(which had been frequent and were still threatened) at their days of exercise, with such other alterations as might be recommended, should be referred to the Council of War.*

The Company at the same time presented a petition stating that as at the previous Council it had pleased them to confirm to them their former liberty of exercising arms in the Artillery Gardens, with some other necessary additions incident thereunto, yet the Master-Gunner, although being made acquainted with the said order, refused to submit to and obey the same.

The petitioners therefore humbly prayed that the Master-Gunner might again be summoned to attend their Lordships, to show the reasons of his refusal, and to answer his contempt, so that the petitioners might quietly enjoy the benefit of His Majesty's grace and favour towards them, and be encouraged to go on in their exercise without interruption or molestation, according to the several orders of the Honourable Board.†

These two petitions being read at a Council at Whitehall, their Lordships called both parties before them, and heard what was said on behalf of Reynolds, but found that he could say nothing in excuse of his not conforming thereto, but only a verbal command pretended to have been given by His Majesty about seven years previously, that the citizens should neither use the butt or the Ordnance way in their exercise, and that some hurt might befall Reynolds' person by the unskilfulness of the persons who exercised arms there.

The citizens in reply stated that the exercise they used would do no injury to the butt, and if it did they were willing to repair it at their expense; that it was no hindrance to the scholars who learnt the use of great artillery in the "ordnance way," and it was far from their thoughts to injure his person by their exercise.

Their Lordships therefore thought fit to ratify and confirm their former order in every respect. And as by a clause thereof it was reserved to the Council of War to fix such days and

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VI., p. 512: and Domestic (Chas. I.) Vol. CXCI., No. 57.

† Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CXCI., No. 58.



ARMORIAL BEARINGS OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY

times for exercise as should be best for His Majesty's service, the Earl of Danby, Lord Viscount Dorchester, Lord Viscount Falkland, and Mr. Secretary Coke, being then present (who were members of the Council of War), agreed that Mondays and Tuesdays should be the ordinary days for the Artillery Company, and in case of any extraordinary occasion they might, by mutual consent, alter the day. The Privy Council "did intreat" the above four Lords of the Council of War, at their earliest convenience, to repair to the Artillery Garden and see whether the inconvenience the Master-Gunner complained of was likely to be increased by the Company exercising there or not, and to report the same to the Board, so that such further course might be taken to settle the matter as should be necessary; and meantime the former order was to remain in force, and the Company was to have a key to the door of the platform where the butt was, upon their day of exercise, without the interruption of the Master-Gunner or any under him.*

On the 23rd of June the Court of Aldermen, with the consent of the Masters and Wardens of the Company of Bowyers and Fletchers, directed that bows and arrows should be sold at such prices as the "Captain over the Band of Archery shall think fit to allow and set down."†

On the 4th of October the Court voted £10 towards the supper which was shortly to take place, to be paid by the Chamberlain to the stewards.‡

The Armorial bearings of the Company are stated, by Blackwell, to have been conferred on them by James I.; the exact date is unknown, but they were certainly granted previous to this year, as an engraving of them is given in a work on tactics by Capt. John Bingham, the late Leader of the Company, he having been then succeeded by Capt. Henry Waller.§

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VI., pp. 512, 513.

† Repertory, Vol. XLV., f. 392.

‡ Idem, f. 516.

§ Blackwell, p. 2; and "The Art of Embattailing an Army, on the Second Part of Ælian's Tactics;" by Capt. John Bingham. London, folio, 1631. The arms are also given in a work entitled "Militarie Discipline, or the Young Artillery Man." By Lieut.-Colonel William Bariffe. London, 1638.

This officer did not long live to occupy the place, and on the 8th of November, the Court of Aldermen ordered Sir Hugh Hamersley, Kt., the President of the Society, to inform them that, as the place of Captain and Leader had become vacant by the death of Capt. Waller, they were to nominate three or more such as they thought the most fit and able men for the place, from whom the Court would elect a Leader for a year, provided he demeaned himself to the liking of the Court and the Company. On the 10th of November, the Company presented Capt. Marmaduke Rawden, Capt. John Fen, and Capt. Edmund Foster, to the Court as their nominees; from whom Capt. Rawden, with a free and general consent, was elected to be Leader for one year.*

A Committee was appointed by the Court of Aldermen, on the 6th of December, to confer with C. Porter, Esq., one of His Majesty's Bedchamber, "touching certain propositions lately sent to Capt. Rawden, of the Society of the Artillery Garden, and desire that there may be no further proceedings thereon."†

1632.—On the 21st of February the Court of Aldermen directed, that as by an Order of the Court, of the 20th of January, 1631, Sir Thomas Middleton, and others, were appointed to carefully peruse and consider the orders to be observed by every member of the Artillery Company, and as the Committee had not yet done so, at the request of the Society the Recorder was added to the Committee in place of Sir Thomas Middleton, deceased, and they were directed to report their opinion in writing to the Court.‡

On the 1st of March a Committee of the Court was appointed to attend the Lords of the Privy Council, at two o'clock the following day, with a petition from the Lord Mayor and Commonalty about the City's supply of water, which was taken away by divers persons inhabiting the Strand, and in or near the Common Garden; and to inform their Lordships of the disorders of the Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden. Mr.

* Repertory, Vol. XLVI., ff. 4^b, 5, 7^b, and 8.

† Idem, f. 33^b.

‡ Idem, f. 106.

Bacon, the City Remembrancer, was to attend them, and a barge was ordered to be ready for their conveyance.*

Sir Hugh Hamersley, Kt., together with Mr. Alderman Fen, Alderman Clitheroe, Alderman Garroway, and Alderman Abdie attended the Council the following day, and informed the Board of the disorderly and mutinous conduct of sundry persons of the Artillery Yard; "near the City of London," in refusing the Captain chosen by the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen to succeed Capt. Waller, deceased, and in assuming to themselves the power of choosing another of their own liking; and also in getting three hundred and nine hands, in a factious manner, to a petition presented to the Lord Mayor; in disobeying Warrants sent by the Lord Mayor, and in other acts and courses tending to the disturbance of the peaceable government of the City, and to the contempt of lawful authority.

Their Lordships, having taken into serious consideration the dangerous consequence of these proceedings, first thought fit to confirm and ratify two former Orders of the Board made touching the said Artillery Yard; the one of the 3rd of July, 1612; the other of the 11th of December, 1614; adding thereunto that the choice of the Captain and other officers, and the whole ordering of that body, should rest in the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen wholly and exclusively from any other. And more particularly that they of the said Artillery Yard should not presume or undertake to present any names, thereby to restrain the liberty of the election which was to be made of such person or persons as the said Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen should think fit for the place of Captain, or any other officer. And as it concerned His Majesty's honour and service, and the good government of the City, that the disorders before mentioned should not pass unpunished, their Lordships likewise ordered and expressly required the Lord Mayor to inquire particularly, who got the hands to the petition; who called Sir Hugh Hamersley "base fellow;" by whom a Vice-President was made without the Lord Mayor's knowledge, and who accepted the said office; who kept the Register of the Company; how the Vice-Presidents have

* Repertory, Vol. XLVI., f. 122^b.

demeaned themselves; and who took on themselves to call a Court, and proceeded to the election of a Captain without warrant or consent of the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, and without the President; and, lastly, what other persons have disobeyed the Lord Mayor's Warrants, or had their hands in those mutinous courses; and upon full examination to inflict such punishment on every such offender by imprisonment and otherwise as he should find the quality of the offence to deserve, and to be exemplary for the repressing and beating down the like insolencies and disorders in time to come; and, finally, he was required to give particular account to the Board of his proceedings in every point.*

On the 8th of March the Lords of the Council wrote to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, stating that upon the information which Sir Hugh Hamersley gave them of divers disorders and mutinous conduct of sundry persons of the Artillery Yard, near the City, they found how ready they were to assist them with their authority in cases which concerned their place and quality. But they were to take notice that they greatly blame the Court of Aldermen, who were so far wanting to themselves, and so remiss in using that power which His Majesty entrusted to them, that the disorders which at first might easily and without noise have been suppressed, were allowed to grow to such a height that might have had dangerous consequences if it was longer tolerated. This neglect and slackness deserve a sharp censure, and if His Majesty should call them to account for the same they would not be able to answer it. But for this time they have only thought fit to admonish them to be more careful hereafter in the suppressing of like disorders as soon as they appear, so that they might have cause to commend their care and vigilance rather than to take further notice of their neglect.†

The King apparently took the part of the Company, and sent them the following letter from Newmarket:—

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VII., pp. 438, 439; Repertory, Vol. XLVI., f. 127; and Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., No. 91. A rough draft, giving directions for drawing up the Order, endorsed "Council Table," is given in Vol. CCXIV., No. 2, Domestic (Chas. I.).

† Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VII., pp. 450, 451.

“CHARLES R.

“Trustie and wellbeloved we greet you well. Whereas we are informed that the worthie and commendable institution of yo^r voluntary Company of the Artillerie Garden, hath been soe well pursued by yo^r industrious and forward endeavours that you are not only become ready and skilfull in the knowledge and use of Armes and military discipline, but that from thence, as from a fruitfull Nursery, all the trayned bands of our Cittie of London, and divers of the Companies of the counties adjoyning have beene supplied wth fitt and able Leaders and Officers, whereby our Service hath received much Advantage, and the kingdome in generall a very great benefitt. And being unwilling that a Societie of soe good use to the publike, and of soe much safetie and honor to our renowned Citie of London should be dissolved or discontinued, as we are given to understand it is in great danger through some distractions which you have lately suffered about the Election of your Captaine. We have thought fitt hereby to will you not be hastie to disband, but if ye find that ye are molested needlesly or unjustly by any there, have recourse to us and you shall find such due encouragement as soe comendable a Societie deserves. Given att our Court at Newmarkett, the Eight day of March, in the Seaventh yeare of our Raigne.

“To our trustie and wellbeloved Humfrie Smith, Ald^r president of the Company exercisinge Armes in the Artillerie Garden, London, and to the Rest of the Companie.” *

On the 12th of March the Order of the Privy Council of the

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXIV., No. 17. A copy of Order in Council annexed, dated 3rd July, 1612: endorsed, “Received Mch. 1632.” There is also a letter in the Public Record Office from Secretary Windebank, endorsed by the writer “Minute of my letter to His Majesty concerning the business His Majesty left with me in charge to be proposed to the Lords in his absence at Newmarket. Concerning the City’s trained men [practising in the] Artillery Yard, the Lords submit to the King the nomination of a Captain in place of him who is lately dead, and humbly desire to understand your further pleasure therein.” Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXXIV. No. 40.

2nd inst. was read at a Court of Aldermen, by which the Lord Mayor was required to take particular information of the disorders which were committed by divers practising arms in the Artillery Garden; and of a letter sent from their Lordships, admonishing the Court to be more careful for the future in the suppressing of like disorders so soon as they appear; and also of a copy of a letter from His Majesty directed to the President of the said Artillery Garden, whereby the Company was commanded not hastily to disband.

It was thought fit and ordered that a Special Court of Aldermen should be held the following afternoon, and that the names of two hundred, or thereabouts, of those practising arms in the said Garden, should be summoned to appear then before the Court to state whether they would continue their practice under the rule and government of the Court; and Sir Hugh Hamersley, Kt. and Alderman, Mr. Alderman Clitheroe and Mr. Alderman Abdie, were directed, that night, to address themselves to the Right Hon. Sir Edward Coke, and acquaint his honour with the proceedings of that Society upon the receipt of that His Majesty's letter, and also of the proceedings and intentions of the Court of Aldermen, and to receive his honour's directions in the matter on behalf of the Court to stop further proceedings of that Society to His Majesty.*

The Court of Aldermen appointed a Committee on the 13th of March, who, with Capt. Rawden, Capt. Bond, Capt. Langham, Capt. Ditchfield, Capt. Lee, and Capt. Crispe, or any four of them, were directed to wait on the Privy Council, at two o'clock the following afternoon, touching the proceeding of the Court and the Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, and to report their proceedings to the Court.†

The Privy Council were much displeased at the letter addressed by the King to the Company; and on the 16th of March they wrote to His Majesty, stating that complaint had been made to them by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen that a tumultuous company of those who had leave to exercise arms in the Artillery Garden had presumed, without warrant, to assemble and choose

* Repertory, Vol. XLVI., ff. 127, 132.

† Idem, f. 134.

a new President and Deputy-President, and to call a Court and to reject a Captain whom the Lord Mayor had chosen, who had been nominated by themselves. The election of a new Captain was also proposed; and that for his choice the house (as they called it) was divided, the doors locked, and the key brought to the Deputy, with other factious acts which required further examination. Since this they had seen a copy of the letter obtained from His Majesty, and thought it their duty to acquaint him that, in their opinion, the procurers thereof deserve to be blamed for causing it to be directed to Alderman Smith, as President of the Company, who, being factiously chosen, did, in duty to His Majesty, and the City, refuse to accept the charge which this superscription might seem to impose upon him; and so to authorise all the rest of their irregular actions, if by his own princely wisdom a clause had not been inserted, whereby the justice of their pretences was reserved to a fit and necessary examination. But before they knew of this letter they ratified former orders of the Board to support the City's government in this business, and withal reproved by letter the remissness of the Mayor and Aldermen, in letting fall that authority which the State had committed to their trust.

Of this order of theirs the Company taking notice, chose a Committee of twelve, with liberty to be assisted with as many more as they pleased, both to petition the Lord Mayor and that Board, which they performed in such manner as the Council conceived to be without precedent, and worthy of censure, to which the Council would have proceeded, if in regard of the reservation in His Majesty's letter they had not in duty first ascertained his further pleasure.

But they found, upon a second examination of former Acts of Council, that howsoever the wisdom of the State had cherished and encouraged this martial company, yet it still made it subject to the government of the Lord Mayor as the King's Lieutenant, and of the Aldermen, by committing unto them the appointment of officers, and establishment of orders; yet in the choice of their Captain there was other reservation for the approval of the Council Board, without which neither Mayor nor Aldermen, and much less the Company, had, or ought to have, any power of election or nomination. And they thought fit that their orders

should also be confirmed by the approval of the Board, which, if His Majesty should be pleased so to regulate, there was hope that (if a moderate hand was carried in the choice of such a Captain as might be free from the exceptions taken to others, though in other respects worthy soldiers,) the Mayor and Aldermen would see that the Company was upheld with more able men than many that were admitted, and who (they say) were the authors of all those disorders. Their only care was, for His Majesty's service, to reduce the Company to obedience, "and to suppress popular faction within this your Royal Chamber, which may produce evil effects, if the least way be given to it." Dated the 16th March, and signed by Lord Keeper, Earl of Kellie, Lord Viscount Wentworth, Lord Viscount Falkland, Lord Bishop of London, Lord Cottington, and Mr. Secretary Coke.*

On the 4th of April the Privy Council ordered that the Aldermen, and such as were employed by the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen about the business of the Artillery Garden, should attend on Wednesday, the 11th of April, in the afternoon, at which time those appointed by the Artillery Company were likewise to attend.†

At a Council held on the 18th of April, His Majesty (being present) did declare his resolution in the controversy between the Lord Mayor and Aldermen and the Company of the Artillery Garden, which had been formerly heard by His Majesty and the Lords of his Council on the eleventh of that month, as well as on several previous occasions. And, first, His Majesty, according to the true meaning of the orders for the first institution of the Company, and according to the voluntary submission of both the parties, resolved to take the election of the Captain of the Company of the Artillery Garden in his own hands. And declared, with the advice of the Board, that neither the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, nor the Company, ought to have the election of the Captain. And for that purpose, His Majesty did declare the election made by the Lord Mayor

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VII., pp. 462, 463.

† Idem, p. 500. These proceedings of the 11th of April are not entered in the Council Register.

and Aldermen, as by the said Company, of the Captain and of all other officers, void and of none effect. And, further, His Majesty resolved and ordered, with the advice of the Board, that the election of the President and of all other officers should be in his own hands; yet, because he would not at all times be put to the trouble to choose those officers, he commanded the Lord Mayor and Aldermen now and hereafter to elect them, saving the Captain, whom His Majesty himself would think fit to take the pains to choose; in which number of officers the Treasurer's place was not included, but that, being a particular trust, was left to the choice of the Company.

And whereas, upon examination of the said controversy, it was found that orders for the government of the Company had not yet been made, as was first intended, His Majesty would be pleased to consult with His Lords of the Council for such orders to be framed and established for their government as should be requisite. And, lastly, as His Majesty, with the advice of the Board, held it reasonable that the authority of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen should be countenanced and upheld in the government of the several parts of the City, under His Majesty, and should always approve their fitting endeavours to vindicate the same, so he did not approve the expressions used by word of mouth, and in some petitions by the said Company, intimating a consequence of disbanding if their desires were not yielded unto, nor the disorders and contentions which appeared in their proceedings.*

1633.—The Lords of the Council wrote to the Lord Mayor, on the 23rd of January, saying that as His Majesty had reserved to himself the choice and nomination of the Captain, to instruct and direct the Company of the Artillery Garden; and having taken especial notice of the sufficiency and long experience of Sergeant-Major Taylor,—both by his long employment in the wars of the Low Countries, and since his return from thence in His Majesty's own service, where he had borne the office of Sergeant-

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VII., pp. 520, 521: and Remembrancia, Vol. VII., No. 29, and Vol. VIII., No. 92.

Major and Lieutenant of Ordnance in the field, in which he had behaved with good commendation, as it became an honest, valiant, and expert soldier. And as the Captainship of the Artillery Garden was then vacant by the death of Colonel Hacklewit, lately deceased, they were directed by His Majesty to express his pleasure, and to let them know, that His Majesty had elected, nominated, and appointed the said Sergeant-Major Taylor to the place of Captain. And, in His Majesty's name by virtue hereof, they required them not only to cause him to be admitted and received into the said place and charge, but also to be treated with all courtesy and respect, as a person whom His Majesty esteemed. And, further, they required them, as soon as convenient, to call the Company together, and deliver unto them His Majesty's expressed pleasure. And so, not doubting of His Lordship's care to perform His Majesty's directions they bid His Lordship farewell.*

On the 28th of February, Sir Hugh Hamersley, President of the Company, informed the Court of Aldermen that, in accordance with their Order of the 19th of February, he summoned the Company together, and presented unto them Sergeant-Major Taylor, and signified unto them that His Majesty had chosen him to be their Captain; and caused His Majesty's letter to that effect to be read to them. He then desired the Court to discharge him from the place of President of the Society, which, they having duly considered, granted his request, and nominated Sir James Campbell, Mr. Alderman Bloomfield, Mr. Alderman Fen, Mr. Alderman Harvey, and Mr. Alderman Smith, from whom Sir James Campbell was chosen President; but as he alleged his inability to undertake the place, in consequence of his want of experience, and Alderman Fen having only one vote less for the place, the Court nominated them both again; and although the latter much desired to be excused on account of his age, being unfit to take upon him the duties, yet the Court, from their knowledge of his worth and efficiency (he being one of the City's Colonels), elected him Captain of the Company; but

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VIII., p. 385; and Remembrancia, Vol. VII., No. 83.

he requested time to consider whether he would accept the place.*

On the 7th of March, the Court ordered that the President of the Company, calling unto him such members as he thought fit, should consider proper persons for officers, and present their names in writing to the Court, so that they might elect them in accordance with His Majesty's commands.†

At a meeting of the Court of Aldermen, on the 12th of March, Alderman Fen accepted the place of President of the Company, and presented the names of divers persons for election, as also the names of those to be elected officers. The Court, with the advice of the President, elected the following :—Capt. Rayden, to be Deputy-President; Capt. John Milward, Capt. George Langham, Capt. John Fen, Capt. Edward Ditchfield, Capt. Nicholas Crispe, Mr. George Dun, Mr. William Flye, Mr. Alexander Rormington, Mr. Nathaniel Thornell, Mr. Jonathan Gauthorne, Mr. John Trench, Mr. Nathaniel Sheppard, Mr. William Manby, Mr. William Stretton, Mr. Robert Davys, Mr. Thomas Whitehead, Mr. Henry Saunders, Mr. Rowe, Mr. John Shawe, Mr. George Stretton, Mr. Timothy Crusoe, and Mr. Edward Peirce, to be the Assistants; and of Mr. William Stretton and Mr. Thomas Whitebread, to be the Lieutenants; and of Mr. Bartholomew Philpott and Mr. Henry Saunders, to be the Ensigns; and of Mr. Robert Lewes, Mr. John Shawe, Mr. George Stretton, and Mr. Martin Pinder, to be the Surveyors of Arms; and of Ralph Mabb, Henry Nevell, Ralph Cotchford, and Robert Salter, to be the Sergeants; and of Henry Pollard, Richard Armstrong, Henry Russell, and John Beeby, to be the Drummers; and of William Fox, to be the Fife; of William Crowther, to be the Armourer; of John Norcott, to be the Gunsmith; of Edward Mathewes, to be the Clerk; and Edward Glover, to be the Beadle.‡

The King having been informed that the place of Captain of the Artillery Garden was void, by the death of Captain Taylor, recommended Captain Walter Neale, in consequence of the faithful favours done by him, and his abilities in military disci-

* Repertory, Vol. XLVII., f. 143.

† Idem, f. 151.

‡ Idem, ff. 153, 154.

pline, and doubted not that they would readily confer the place on him; which the King would retain in his princely remembrance for their benefit as occasion should present.*

On the 12th of December His Majesty's letter was read at a Court of Aldermen, recommending Captain Walter Neale to be Captain of the Artillery Garden in place of Captan Taylor, deceased; and Mr. Alderman Fen, the President of the Company, was directed to communicate it to them, so that he might be admitted, in obedience to His Majesty's commands.†

The Commissioners for Archery‡ petitioned the Privy Council on the subject of the Brickmakers destroying the fields, which, according to their Order of the 17th of July, they had provided for the laudable exercise of archery. The Brickmakers had not complied with their Lordships' Order to fill up the ground, but continued to dig earth. One of them, Robert Needle, promised the Commissioners not to make up the earth, but soon after set a number of men to work, and then went out of town. They had lately broken up fresh ground within twenty yards of the place the Commissioners had taken such care to preserve; and one Adam Crispe had also dug up new ground adjoining his former work. The Commissioners begged the Council to consider the matter, and take such steps against the two offenders as they should think fit, and also that they would ratify their former order for levelling the ground and preserving the same.§

Subsequently Joseph Oldfield, a brickmaker, petitioned the King, saying, that upon the unjust information of four or five of the Commissioners for Archery, he had been obliged to take other ground which the Archers never had anything to do with, and prayed for liberty to make bricks of it, like other subjects. For the superfluous pleasure of the citizens he had for five years been

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCLIX., No. 76.

† Repertory, Vol. XLVIII., f. 39^b.

‡ Appointed by the King's Letters Patent. See Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXXVI., No. 49. Patent Roll 8 (Chas. I.), part 8 (in dorso), and Appendix C. No. 5.

§ Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCLVII., No. 106. See Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VIII., p. 557 (12th April), pp. 591, 592 (26th April); Vol. IX., p. 160 (17th July), and p. 508 (28th February, 1634).

exiled from his whole estate, which was then worth £1,200, and not only left without means of livelihood, but was £40 in debt.*

The Artillery Garden had now become a recognised School for Gunners, on a similar plan to that which William Thomas, the Master-Gunner in 1581-2, so long advocated and tried to establish; certificates being granted from thence to candidates for the appointment of gunners in the Navy.

On the 16th of December, Horatio, Lord Vere, Master of the Ordnance, recommended John Spencer to the Lords of the Admiralty, as a gunner in one of the new ships, as, amongst other qualifications, he had been a scholar in the Artillery Garden. He was also recommended by the Master-Gunner of England for the same reason, and also because he was "able to do well at the tail of a piece of ordnance."†

The post of gunner in the Artillery Garden was evidently sought after. On the 6th of June, 1634, Sir Edward Nicholas wrote to the Secretary of Lord Vere, soliciting for John Andrews, an honest and faithful servant of his, an able man of body, and very apt, who belonged to the Artillery Garden, the place of a gunner, lately void by the death of a brewer in Southwark, and stated that he was ready to pay what others usually gave.‡

William Nead, an Archer, invented a weapon, consisting of a bow and a pike combined, which was used for some time by the Company. In 1625 he published a description of it, dedicated to the King, in which he says that he gave a pike and bow and sheaf of arrows to the two Gardens of London and Westminster; and that the worthy Society of the Artillery Garden in London had practised it ever since. The Lord Mayor every year issued a proclamation for the encouragement and maintenance of archery; and formerly it was from the best of these Archers that the King's Yeomen of the Guard were chosen; which encouraged many, in hope of such preferment, to exercise shooting, and become very expert bowmen.

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCCVII., No. 99. See also Vol. CCCLXXVII., No. 59, and Vol. CCCXV., No. 102.

† Idem, Vol. CXCVII., No. 4, and Vol. CCLII., Nos. 53 and 65.

‡ Nicholas's Letter Book, Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. CCXIX., p. 103.

By new inventions war had become altered, and the bow was cast aside as altogether unserviceable. Some inventions were both wicked and an offence to God and man, "amongst which Bartholdus Swart, the Franciscan friar, with his most devilish invention of gunpowder, is the most damnable, and from hell itself invented." The ancient and famous weapon of the bow and arrow had become quite extinguished, and although other nations made use of new inventions, they did not leave off the bows; but with us hand-guns and muskets were in request, although a man could shoot six arrows in the time required to fire a musket.

It had then (1625) been in use for the last twelve months by the Artillery Company, and was approved of by them and by Captain Bingham.*

In 1633 he presented a petition to the Privy Council, stating that His Majesty had approved of his warlike invention, and given directions for it to be practised in martial discipline, which had been done accordingly in the Artillery Garden. He had also presented it to Parliament in the first year of the reign of His Majesty, who appointed a Committee of thirty members to inquire into the subject, and they unanimously approved of it. After the dissolution of Parliament he was referred by His Majesty to the Council of War, to arrange some course for the general exercise of it, and to reward him. At the King's desire it was performed by 300 of the Artillery Company, in St. James's Park, before His Majesty, and the Council of State and Council of War, with their approbation. It was then referred by the King to the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal and the Attorney-General, to advise a "loyal way how to command the general exercise of this service." After being again referred to the Council at War to arrange about its being practised, His Majesty directed a Commission to be drawn up authorizing him to teach it; and a Proclamation, to be prepared by the Lord Keeper, to command the general exercise thereof, both of which were drawn up by the

* The Double-armed Man, by the New Invention. By William Nead, Archer. 1625. Illustrated with plates showing the exercise of the bow and the pike.

Honourable Sir Robert Heath, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, then Attorney-General.

As the Lord Keeper was not willing in a case of this nature to approve of it alone, all proclamations being especially appointed to pass the Council, he humbly prayed them that having regard to the general good which this invention might do to posterity, both for offensive and defensive war, as well as to the laudable exercise of Archery, they would be pleased, for the advancement of this public service, to put an end to the petitioner's long attendance, by taking the said petition and proclamation into their favourable consideration.* On the 19th of May, 1637, he again petitioned the Council, at the Inner Star Chamber, begging that some reward might be conferred on his son and himself, and also that they would favour and advance the said exercise, which was approved of and ordered to be used by the Lords-Lieutenants of many counties. The Council requested those Lords-Lieutenants who were members of the Council to give them their opinion on the subject in writing, so that further course might be taken as should be best for His Majesty's Service.†

The Court of Aldermen appointed a Committee, on the 22nd of April, 1634, to consider this exercise (which had been ordered by Royal Proclamation in August, 1633), and on the 13th of May they presented their report, stating that the said Proclamation had been several times publicly read to the Captain and Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, which they considered the best place for it; and recommended that the Lord Mayor should give power to the Aldermen and Deputies to call out some of the Common Council in every ward to assist them to take the names of persons fit and able for the said exercise, and especially those of the Trained Bands; and the exercise was to be performed on holidays as much as possible, so as not to interfere with business.‡

Stow describes the Artillery Garden in this year as being surrounded by a brick wall, and that the gunners from the Tower practised there every Thursday, "levelling certain brass pieces

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXLIII., No. 70.

† Idem, Vol. CCCLVI., No. 148.

‡ Repertory, Vol. XLVIII. ff. 328-30.

of great artillery against a butt of earth made for that purpose : they discharged them for their exercise." *

1634.—On the 14th of February, Alice Taylor, widow of Nathaniel Taylor, petitioned the Privy Council, stating that her husband, when a Sergeant-Major, was recommended by His Majesty to be Captain of the Artillery Garden, and was confirmed in that appointment by the Privy Council, which he held whilst his health and life permitted, viz., twelve months, but did not receive any satisfaction for his pains. She was desired by the President of the Company not to trouble the Council on the subject until he had conferred with the Company, who, having been assembled, refused to *grant* her anything, and she was therefore obliged to appeal to them as her husband died in debt, and had left some children. She therefore humbly besought them to consider the sorrowful state of the comfortless widow and fatherless son.†

On the 14th of February, the Council wrote to Alderman Ven, President of the Artillery Garden, stating that Sergeant-Major Taylor having been formerly recommended by the King and Council to be Captain of the Company, it was expected that the Company would allow him such salary and "entertainment" in keeping with his quality and employment. The Council had that day been informed by the petition of Alice Taylor, the widow of the deceased, that he had never received any salary or recompence, and that they had since refused her all satisfaction. The Council considered it very just and reasonable that some competent allowance should be given to her by the Company, and required the President to deal effectually with the Company, as she was left in debt; and he was to inform the Council, in writing, of their proceedings by Wednesday, the 16th of February.‡

At a Court of Aldermen, on the 26th of February, Alderman Fen, having been a year President of the Company, made his

* Howe's Stow, Book II., pp. 96, 97.

† Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCLVII., No. 108; and Council Registers, Vol. IX., p. 500.

‡ Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. IX., pp. 500, 501.

earnest request to be discharged in respect of his great age and inability of body ; but the Court, being desirous for him to continue, nominated him again, together with Mr. Alderman Bromfield, Mr. Alderman Smith, and Mr. Alderman Garroway, which resulted in Alderman Smith being elected.*

On the 13th of May, the Recorder was ordered to speak with Mr. Attorney-General, touching the writ of distringas brought against the Lord Mayor, citizens, and commonalty of the City, for and concerning some intrusion upon the Artillery Garden, and the City Solicitor was directed to attend the Recorder, and take care to defend as much of the said cause, at the City's charge, as concerned the City ; and as much as concerned the Society Practising Arms in the said Garden, was to be defended by them at their own charge.†

In compliance with an Order of the Privy Council, it was thought fit, and ordered by the Court, on the 24th of May, that Sir Hugh Hamersley and Sir James Campbell, Kts. and Aldermen, Mr. Alderman Clitheroe, Mr. Alderman Fen, Sir Maurice Abbott, Kt. and Alderman, Mr. Alderman Garroway, and Mr. Alderman Abdy, should on the following Monday morning attend the Lords' Committee, appointed by His Majesty for the settling of the Company of the Artillery Garden.‡

A curious Order in Council was issued on the 10th of March, stating that His Majesty, having been pleased to reform "the March of the English Nation," which had become corrupted by time and the negligence of drummers, and for the honour of the kingdom, to restore it to the ancient gravity thereof, by the establishment of one constant measure to be hereafter observed and beaten by all English drummers ; directions were given for it to be imparted to the Colonels, and by them to the Captains and Officers of the several regiments of the City, to be duly observed in all musters or military exercises of the Trained Bands.§

A document drawn up about this period, probably by the

* Repertory, Vol. XLVIII., f. 118.

† Idem, f. 327.

‡ Idem, f. 340.

§ Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., No. 136.

Secretary of State, gives a sketch of the proceedings connected with the Company during the previous four-and-twenty years, and suggests improvements, which were afterwards adopted by an Order in Council on the 4th of July:—

“The Military Company of the City of London continued about four-and-twenty years in the laudable and orderly exercise of arms, to the good liking of His Majesty, the benefit of the kingdom, and honour of the City, until after the death of Captain Henry Waller, at which time a question arose, betwixt them and the Lord Mayor, and Court of Aldermen. The controversy was about the election of their Captain; the Company pretending they had the free election, and were only bound to present one whom they should choose for Captain unto the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen for approbation. The Lord Mayor and Aldermen allege, on the contrary, that they ought to present three, or, at least, two, and of them the Lord Mayor and Aldermen to make choice of one.

“This difference could not be reconciled but by the interposed authority of His Majesty and the Lords of his Council.

“After many allegations at the Council table on the one side and the other, it was at last determined by their Lordships (the King being then present) that neither the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, nor the Company, should have hereafter choice of the Captain nor any other of the Officers, but their election should wholly be reserved unto His Majesty (the Treasurer only excepted, which was left unto the Company’s free choice). It was then likewise ordered that His Majesty should immediately choose the Captain himself; but command was given unto the Lord Mayor and Aldermen as his substitutes, and until His Majesty should please to take that trouble upon himself, to make choice of all the other officers of the Company, as at large appears by Order, dated 18th April, 1632.

“Since that Order the accustomed exercise of Arms hath been neglected, and those officers of the Company which ought to have salaries have not been paid, and at the general days of exercise the appearance of the Company hath been so small that it hath seemed only to have the name of a Company, but really to be none

“Some of the Company, notwithstanding, are well pleased with what hath been established by the last Order, but they are so few in number that their goodwill for the present avails but little or nothing.

“Unless, therefore, some convenient order be taken for the reuniting of this disjointed Company, or else for the erecting of another (both which must be done by one and the same means), the commendable and most necessary exercise of Arms will be totally neglected in this City.

“But because His Majesty is pleased this Company shall not disband, but continue as heretofore, for the reuniting therefore of the said Company either of these ways may probably be taken :

“1. If His Majesty would be pleased to grant unto the Company all the privileges they formerly enjoyed ; or the same to be conferred upon the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen.

“2. If His Majesty would please that the Company might present three, whereof His Majesty to nominate one for Captain, as is done for the pricking of Sheriffs ; or else that the Lord Mayor and Aldermen might make the same presentment.

“3. If His Majesty will not alter the last Order made, then some privileges more than ordinary to be granted to the Company, which may invite men, besides the love of arms, to be of that Society.

“Whichsoever of these may be chosen, yet it may seem necessary that the Captain at his election be sworn an Officer to His Majesty.

“It may likewise be considered that none but the Captain or the Company in general can conveniently choose the inferior officers under the Captain, because none else can know who are fitting for the places.

“May it also be taken into consideration that whosoever shall elect the Captain, yet the entertainment for his service may be certain, and not arbitrary at the pleasure of the Company ; which entertainment may not seem to be less than ten shillings per diem, considering his continual attendance, the neglect of other employments, and his great expenses, which of necessity he

must be at for the honour of the City and reputation of the Company.

"Also, the present Captain (having been chosen by His Majesty) desireth so to continue, and not to lose so much honour as to be new elected by any other, although His Majesty should confer the election of the Captain upon the City, or Company.

"Lastly, when it shall be resolved what course must be taken for the settlement of the Company, that then orders be drawn up by such as the Lords Commissioners shall appoint, and then presented unto their said Lordships for confirmation." *

At a meeting of the Privy Council, on the 4th of July, it was stated that His Majesty, having a gracious care that the Company of the Artillery Garden might be settled, so that all subjects of contention should be wholly removed, and that from henceforth all things should be conducted quietly and decently, and the Company the more encouraged to continue their laudable military exercise, did, for the effecting thereof, signify his Royal pleasure in manner following, viz.,—That His Majesty would reserve to his own choice the appointing of the Captain; that the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen should have the election of the President, and that all other officers who did in any way belong or have relation to the Company should be chosen and appointed by the members of the Company; and, lastly, that both the Captain, for his pains in the execution of his place (wherein he was to use all care and diligence) should have an allowance of £50 a-year out of the money paid quarterly by the members of the Company; and that the officers who formerly received pay were also to have their accustomed salary. The Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, the President, Captain, and all others whom it might concern, were required, and in His Majesty's name expressly charged, to take particular notice, and to conform themselves accordingly thereunto. And the members of the Company, putting aside all differences, were speedily to return to their accustomed exercise of Arms, otherwise they

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCCVIII., No. 177.

would be esteemed contemptuous of His Majesty's commands and incur his high displeasure.*

1635.—During the reigns of James I. and Charles I. many towns petitioned the Privy Council for permission to form Military Societies similar to the Artillery Company. On the 22nd of October, 1625, the Captains and trained men of Bristol humbly begged to be allowed to establish "an Artillerie Yarde"; North Yarmouth next applied, on the 10th of January of the following year; and William Dutton, gentleman, of Chester, asked to be permitted to establish an Artillery Yard in that city at his own expense, and to be appointed Captain of it.† Ipswich applied for a like permission on the 29th of September, 1629, and Nottingham on the 31st of December in the same year; all of which were authorised to establish an "Artillery Yard," as requested, but in all cases they were to be under the control of their respective Aldermen.‡

Captain Francis Grove, and others exercising Arms in the Martial Yard in Southwark, petitioned the King, stating that they had taken ground at "Horssey down," Southwark, called the Martial Yard, which they had surrounded with a brick wall, for the practice of martial discipline; and asked for a licence to build an armoury, and that the ground for that purpose should be set out by the Earl Marshal, Chief Commissioner for Buildings.§

Maitland describes this ground in 1739 as having in olden times been a grazing-ground, called Horsedown, afterwards corrupted into Horselydown, and the ground then occupied by the church and cemetery of St. John's, Southwark, was formerly called the Artillery Ground, where the Trained Bands of Southwark used to exercise; there was also a large handsome building in Parish Street, called the Artillery House, afterwards converted into a workhouse. There was also another Military or Artillery

* Council Registers (Chas. I.) Vol. X., pp. 72, 73; Remembrancia, Vol. VII., No. 121, and Vol. VIII., No. 131.

† Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. I., pp. 141, 212, 325.

‡ Idem, Vol. V., pp. 446, 569.

§ Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCXL., No. 41 (with plans, &c.).

Ground, where Gerard Street was afterwards built, where the Middlesex Militia and Westminster Trained Bands used to exercise, in the parish of St. Anne's, Westminster, which had been taken from St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, and created a separate parish in 1678.*

On the 6th of March, the "Military Company" by petition, informed the Council that they had purchased a piece of ground then called the Military Yard, in the name of certain feoffees, then members of the Company, and had lately erected an armoury on it for the safe keeping of their arms. The said Company were content and agreed that the said feoffees, for their indemnity should hold the ground and armoury in their own right until the money borrowed was repaid by the Company, to which effect they made a public Act, and thereupon all the feoffees had engaged themselves for the said moneys, save only one, John Collier, who, though he had been often entreated, refused either to engage himself for the said money, or to release the trust in him reposed. Their Lordships, taking these particulars into consideration, ordered, according to their petition, that the said Collier should either continue a member of the said Society, and stand engaged with the rest of the feoffees for such moneys as in his behalf were and should be necessarily borrowed, or else release the trust; and that if he would do neither of these he was to attend the Board without delay, to show cause to the contrary.†

On the arrival of the Ambassador of the Emperor of Morocco, on the 19th of October, 1637, about 400 of the gentlemen of the "Military," or Trained Bands, commanded by Capt. E. Porter, formed a guard of honour in the Strand, near Somerset House.‡

The above-named "Military Company" is probably the one referred to in the following:—

On the 8th of May "a Warrant directed to Endimion Porter, Esq., Captain at the Military Company, and to the Colonel of the Artillery, London."

"As the Council were given to understand that the Company of

* Maitland, pp. 716, and 787, 788.

† Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. X., p. 461.

‡ Pageants: Guildhall Library.

Trained Bands are willing to honour the interment of the body of the Lord Vere, with their attendance upon it, the Council in respect of the nobleness and merit of his person think fit to give them leave to assemble and wait thereupon this evening, the 8th of May." A postscript says their Lordships' pleasure was that the funeral should be over before six o'clock.*

This was probably one of the societies formed in imitation of the Artillery Garden, which sprung up throughout the Kingdom, and of which mention has already been made.†

On the 25th of February, 1634, a Royal Warrant was issued to Sir John Heydon, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, to give orders for the making of a butt and platform at Foxhall [Vauxhall], similar to the one at the Artillery Garden.‡

The Artillery Company having applied for a piece of ground for their own exclusive use; at a Court of Aldermen, held on the 15th of October, it was ordered that, upon the humble petition of the President, Captains and Citizens exercising arms in the Artillery Garden, the Court, for the reasons expressed in the said petition, thought fit and ordered that Sir Hugh Hamersley, Sir George Whitmore, Knights and Aldermen, Mr. Alderman Broomfield, Mr. Alderman Fen, Sir Maurice Abbott, Knight and Alderman; Mr. Alderman Smith, Mr. Alderman Andrews, Mr. Stone and Mr. Pheasaunt, or any five of them, calling unto them Mr. Controller of the Chamber, should view so much of Bunhill Fields ‡ as was desired by the said petitioners for exercise of the Company, and the Trained Bands of the City, and consider how the said Company might, with convenience, be accommodated in their desire, and report the same in writing to the Court.§

1637.—On the 1st of March Alderman Smith, President of the Artillery Garden, requested the Court of Aldermen to dis-

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. X., p. 564.

† See p. 58.

‡ Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCLX., No. 102.

§ On the 13th of January, 1570, Henry, Lord Hudson, wrote from Berwick to Sir William Cecil, "If there was a fort made at Bunhill, it would be a great security to the Archers of Finsbury Fields." Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. XVII., 1570, and Addenda, Calendar of State Papers, 1566-79, p. 195.

§ Repertory, Vol. XLIX., f. 329.

charge him in consequence of weakness of body: the Court acknowledging with thankfulness his long and good service in that position, complied with his request, and elected Alderman Andrews in his place.*

1638.—At a Meeting of the Council of War, at Hampton Court, on the 16th of September, it was stated that the proportion of powder ordinarily allowed for a charge for a musket was the full weight of the bullet, which was found too great, as the recoil occasioned made the men forbear to take aim, and to fire with rapidity and effect. The Earl of Newport was therefore requested to assemble some of the officers of the Artillery Garden, and others, to make trials with the full, and also with half, the ordinary charge, and to report thereon.†

Captain Walter Neale, the Captain of the Artillery Garden, presented a petition to the King, stating that he was formerly a suitor for the post of Muster-Master of the City, but that His Majesty did not then think it necessary to appoint such an officer, but had since recommended Captain Fisher for that place. He had, at great expense and continual trouble, effectually reunited and established the Company of the Artillery Garden, and had brought it to greater perfection than it had ever been before. There was also a necessary relation and dependence between the Muster-Master's place and that of Captain of the Company, who was bound to continual attendance and labour in exercising the principal citizens in martial discipline, whereby the forces of the City were always furnished with able commanders out of the Company, and the private soldiers made ready for the general musters, for which trouble he had only the small allowance of £50 per annum, and was then, from want of competent means, driven to great extremities. He therefore begged that His Majesty would consider his claims for the post, or refer them to the Privy Council.‡

The Corporation offered great opposition to the appointment

* Repertory, Vol. LII., f. 104.

† Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCXCVIII., No. 95.

‡ Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. LXXXIV., No. 42. This document has been inserted in a volume for the year 1615, which must be an error.

of a Muster-Master, as unnecessary; but, in the end, Captain Fisher was appointed.

As there had formerly been, for the security of the Colonies, "an experimented soldier with the title of Marshal," who had charge of all martial affairs, Captain Neale afterwards applied to be appointed Marshal in Virginia, with an allowance of 20s. per diem; which, he said, was, in proportion, far less than that formerly allowed to others,—to be paid out of the customs arising from the commodities of that Country, and that he might have means to plant some people of his own there.*

Later he again petitioned the King, setting forth his pretensions to the Government of New England, as he had served in all the King's expeditions for the past twenty years; commanded for four years and brought to perfection the Company of the Artillery Garden; lived three years in New England, and made greater discoveries than had ever been made before. "Exactly discovered" all the rivers and harbours in the habitable parts of the country; exerted himself for the general good of the country by reforming abuses; punished the cruelties of the natives, and compelled them to make peace; and he was also able to settle a staple trade of commodities, especially for building ships. He therefore prayed that he might be appointed Governor, but was not successful.†

At the request of the Captains and others exercising arms in the Artillery Garden, the Court of Aldermen, on the 21st of June, directed that the Committee appointed on the 15th of October, 1635, to view Bunhill Fields, which the Society Practising Arms in the said Garden had petitioned for exercise of themselves and the Trained Bands, might forthwith meet and pursue the directions of that order, as they are much hindered

* Colonial (Chas. I.), Vol. VI., No. 24.

† Colonial (Chas. I.), Vol. IX. No. 131. In 1631 (?) the Council of New England granted, by indenture, to Sir F. Georges and others the house and plantation situated on the River Piscataqua, lately belonging to Capt. W. Neale; and on the 4th of November, at Warwick House, Holborn, the Council sealed patents containing a grant of Capt. Neale's plantation to Capt. Thomas Cammock, consisting of 15,000 acres on the east side of the Blackpoint River. Colonial (Chas. I.), Vol. VI., Nos. 28, 29.

in performing their exercise in the Artillery Garden. The Court, having respect to that noble and worthy exercise, thought fit to order that Mr. Alderman Garroway, Mr. Alderman Gurney, and Mr. Alderman Gayer should join with the former Committees, and that they, or any five of them, calling unto them the Controller of the Chamber should, with all convenience, view as much of Bunhill Fields as the Company required, and report their opinion to the Court.

On the 31st of July, Aldermen Cranmer, Harrison, and Abbott, were added to the Committee, and were ordered to inquire into the objections of the Bowyers and Fletchers and others to Bunhill Fields being converted into an Artillery Garden.*

The Company having invited the Lord Mayor and Aldermen to their feast at Merchant Taylors' Hall, the Court of Aldermen, on the 16th of October, ordered the Chamberlain to pay the Stewards £10 as a gift towards the expenses.†

At a meeting of the Council, at Oatlands, on the 10th of September, their Lordships, by His Majesty's command, heard Sir J. Heydon, Kt., Lieutenant of the Ordnance, and Mr. Wemys, Master-Gunner of England, touching the difference between them concerning a dwelling-house, and the Artillery Garden, where His Majesty's feed and other gunners practised to discharge ordnance. As it appeared that the custody of the Garden was granted by Letters Patent, in express words, to the said Lieutenant of the Ordnance, notwithstanding that it was testified by several ancient men, that the said house and ground had for many years been enjoyed by the Master-Gunner of England, their Lordships referred the point of right to the Lord Treasurer and Lord Cottington, who were desired to call the Attorney-General, and to consider where the right did rest, and to certify to His Majesty their opinions thereof. In the meantime Sir J. Heydon promised their Lordships to deliver the possession of the said house to Mr. Wemys, in obedience to His Majesty's command, reserving still his right and interest therein, until it should be legally adjudged against him.‡

* Repertory, Vol. LII., f. 196, and 231^b.

† Idem, f. 280.

‡ Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCXCVIII., No. 50. This Order is not contained in the Council Registers.

The Company had now attained great proficiency in the use and exercise of arms, and it was at that time held to be the most laudable exercise for diversion in use and practice amongst the citizens of London, they having almost an universal taste and relish of, and pleasure in, military achievements or exercises; so that not to be a complete soldier was not to be a man of note fit for the best company and conversation.*

On the 18th of October, the Company performed an exercise at arms in Merchant Taylors' Hall, before the Lord Mayor and other eminent citizens. About eighty members took part in this performance, which, from the accounts given of it, appears to have been more of a theatrical than a military display. Forty of them were equipped with modern arms, and twenty-two as Saracens, armed with short Barbary guns and scimitars, and broad Turkey daggers in their girdles, carrying an ensign with a Turkish device.†

Blackwell states that the Lord Mayor and Aldermen were so pleased with this performance that they presented the Company with the military field or ground which they now occupy; but this is not correct, as, although they applied for it in October, 1635, it was not granted them until 1641.

The Company was then in a very flourishing state, and there were but few citizens of eminence who were not members of it.

1639.—At a Court of Aldermen, on the 23rd of January, Alderman Soame and Alderman Rudge were nominated for the place of President of the Company, when the former was "freely and lovingly chosen President of that Society."

On the 30th of September the Aldermen voted their usual gift of £10 towards the Company's feast, to which the Lord Mayor and Aldermen had been invited, "as a loving token from this Court."

His Majesty's letter of recommendation of Captain Philip

* Blackwell, pp. 2, 3.

† Mars: His Triumph, &c. An Exercise performed on the 18th of October, 1638, in Merchant Taylors' Hall, by certain Gentlemen of the Artillery Garden. London: 1639.

Skippon, as leader of the Company, was approved of, and he was duly admitted at a Court, on the 23rd of October.*

1640.—THE NEW ARTILLERY GARDEN.—On the 22nd of September, divers Captains, and others exercising arms in the Artillery Garden, humbly requested the Court of Aldermen, that the hither part of Bunhill Fields (to the stake, or near to it), might be granted to the Company for exercising themselves and the Trained Bands. The Court, taking it into consideration, thought that the City, as much as in them lay, should accommodate the Company with a grant of the said field; and for that purpose the Recorder, Alderman Soame, Alderman Wollaston, and Mr. Sheriff Adams, were added to the surviving Committees formerly assigned for that purpose. And that they, or any six or more of them, with some of the Captains, and others whom they should think fit to call unto them, should, with all convenience, view the said ground desired for the purpose, and cause a plan to be drawn and presented to the Court, and advise and consider all objections that might be made against the quiet enjoyment of the ground, and what was fit and requisite to be done for the firm and sure establishment thereof unto the said Society.†

1641.—The Committee appointed to consider the application of the Company for Bunhill Fields presented their Report to the Court of Aldermen on the 4th of February, stating that, according to an Order of the 22nd of September last, made upon the humble request of divers Captains of the City and others exercising Arms in the King's Artillery Garden, for the hither part of Bunhill Fields as a place for exercise, they were of opinion, and held it very fit and requisite, that for the better encouragement and advancing of that worthy exercise, the Society Practising Arms in the said Artillery Garden should be accommodated and granted their desire, by taking in and enclosing such part of Bunhill Field as they

* Repertory, Vol. LIII., ff. 74-5, 268, and 328.

† Idem, Vol. LIV., f. 307.

should think fit, to make them a new Artillery Garden for the exercise of themselves and the Trained Bands only, and not otherwise to be employed or disposed.

The Society had agreed with Mr. Dash, the City's tenant, for so much of the said field as they should think necessary to enclose for their use for all his time (which was fifteen years at Lady-day next), and he was to pay during that time the whole rent to the Chamber; which piece of ground they found the City held as lessees from the Prebend of Finsbury.

They were also of opinion, and thought it very fit that the Society should have, hold, and enjoy the same ground and field, by them to be set out and enclosed, for the exercise of arms, and that the Captains of the Trained Bands should have liberty, freely and without any charge or other thing to be given or required, to train and exercise the Trained Bands in the same ground, and that the ground should not be converted to any other use or purpose; for the better preventing whereof they thought fit that the lease to be granted to the Society should be conditional to the effect aforesaid. They also thought that, from and after the fifteen years, the Society should pay to the Chamber some small yearly rent, and their lease should be for such term of years as his Lordship and the Common Council should think fit. Dated 27th January, 1641.

The Report was approved of and recommended to the consideration of the next Common Council.*

At a Court of Common Council, held on the 24th of March, Sir George Whitmore, Kt. and Alderman, Mr. Alderman Gurney, Mr. Alderman Gayer, Mr. Alderman Wollaston, and Mr. Alderman Adams (Committees formerly appointed to consider of the humble request of the Captains and others exercising Arms in the Artillery Garden, London, that they might have the hither part of Bunhill Fields granted to the said Society for exercise of themselves and the Trained Bands of the City), delivered to the Court a report in writing, under their hands, dated the 4th of February, of their opinions therein, which was as follows, viz. :—

* Repertory, Vol. LV., f. 64.

"To the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor of the City of London and his Right Worshipful Brethren the Aldermen of the same City. May it please your Lordships that according to an Order of this Honourable Court, of the two and twentieth of September last passed, made upon the humble request of divers Captains of this City, and others exercising Arms in the King's Artillery Garden, London, that the hither part of Bunhill Fields, to the stake, or near thereunto, might be granted to the said Society for exercising of themselves and the Trained Bands of this City. By which Order this Honourable Court, taking that worthy exercise into due consideration, did think fit that this City, as much as in them lay, should by grant accommodate the said Society with the said field. We, whose names are hereunto written, Committees appointed by the said order (and former orders in that behalf made by this Hon. Court), do certify our opinions concerning the same, as followeth, viz. :—

"We are of opinion, and hold it very fit and requisite, that (for the better encouragement and advancing of that worthy exercise) the Society practising Arms in the said Artillery Garden be accommodated, and granted their desire, by taking in and enclosing such part of Bunhill Field as they shall think fit to make them a new Artillery Garden, for exercise of themselves and the Trained Bands of this City, only and not otherwise to be employed or disposed.

"That the said Society practising Arms have agreed with Mr. Dash, the City's tenant, for so much of the said field as that Society shall think necessary to enclose for their use, for all his time, which is fifteen years from our Lady-day next; and Mr. Dash to pay, during that time, the whole rent to the Chamber. Which piece of ground we find the City holdeth as lessees from the Prebend of Finsbury.

"We also are of opinion, and think it very fit, that the said Society exercising Arms as aforesaid, shall have, hold, and enjoy, the same ground and field, so by them to be set out and enclosed, for the exercise of arms for themselves and the Trained Bands this City; and that the Captains of the Trained Bands of this City shall have liberty freely, and without any charge or other

thing to be given or required, to train and exercise the Trained Bands of this City in the same ground. And that ground not to be converted to any other use or purpose; for the better preventing whereof we think fit that the lease to be granted to the said Society be conditioned to the effect aforesaid. We also think fit that from and after the fifteen years the Society pay to the Chamber some small yearly rent, and their lease to be for such term of years as your Lordship and the Common Council of this City shall think fit. All which, notwithstanding, we humbly leave to the grave judgment of this honourable Court. This eight-and-twentieth day of January, A.D. 1641. George Whitmore, Richard Gurney, John Gayer, John Wollaston, Thomas Adams.

"The which Report being here openly read, was allowed of, and ordered to be entered into the Repertory. And for the better effecting of what is desired by the said Society, this Court doth recommend their suit, and the said Report, to the consideration of the next Common Council to be holden for the affairs of this City. The which Report, after the reading thereof, was well liked and allowed of. And, thereupon, it is enacted, granted, and agreed, by this Common Council, that the said Report shall, in all points, as much as in this Court lieth for to do, be ratified and confirmed. And this Court doth hereby ratify and confirm the same.

"And it is further ordered by this Court that a lease shall be made of the premises to such and so many persons of the said Society as they shall nominate for such term of years as the City hath to come therein, except the last four years of the City's term, which the City shall reserve to themselves and under such covenants and conditions for the better enabling of the City to renew their lease, or otherwise, as the learned Council of this City shall think fit, for and under the yearly rent of six shillings and eightpence, to be paid to the City for an acknowledgment. The first yearly payment to begin to be made at our Lady-day, which shall be in the year of our Lord God one thousand six hundred fifty-six."*

* Journal, Vol. XL., f. 1b, 2; and Letter Book QQ, f. 2.

At a Court of Common Council, held on the 25th of June, it was moved by Mr. Recorder, "That whereas, at a Common Council here, holden the 24th of March last, it was then ordered that a lease should be made of the hither part of Bunhill Fields to such and so many persons of the Society Exercising Arms in the Artillery Garden as should be nominated for such term as the City had to come therein (except the last four years of the City's term), which the City should reserve unto themselves, and under such covenants and conditions for the better enabling of the City to renew their lease or otherwise as the learned Counsel of this City should think fit, for and under the yearly rent of six shillings and eightpence, to be paid to the City for an acknowledgment; the first yearly payment to be made at our Lady-day, which should be in the year of our Lord God, 1656, as by the said Act of Common Council appeareth. And where it is now alleged that there is a covenant mentioned in the draft of the said lease, that if, in case the City during the said term should procure a new lease of the premises (amongst other things) for a further term of years, that then, upon notice given, or left to, or for the Trustees in the said lease named, or their Assigns, at the demised premises, of such their intent and purpose. That then the Trustees or their Assigns should within _____ next, after such notice, surrender and yield up the said lease, term, and interest of and in the premises, unto the Mayor and Commonalty and Citizens of this City, their successors or assigns. In regard whereof it is now desired by the Trustees, in the behalf of the said Society, that it may be ordered by this Court that, if in case the City shall renew their lease for a further term of years, that then, upon surrender by the Trustees, or their Assigns, of the said lease, as aforesaid, there may be a new lease made to the Trustees, or their Assigns, of the premises for all such term of years as the City shall have to come in their new lease (except the four last years thereof), for and under such rent, covenants, and conditions, as in the former lease are reserved and mentioned *mutatis mutandis*. Now, upon deliberate consideration had by this Common Council of the request of the said Trustees on the behalf of the said Society, this Court, being desirous to



Ch. Turner. Sc.

*Charles Prince of Wales.
(Afterwards Charles II.)
Joined the Company 1st June 1641.*

encourage that Society, and to have the exercise of Arms maintained and continued for the public good and discipline of the citizens of this City, doth grant and order, That if the City shall hereafter procure a new lease for a further term of years of and in the premises (and the Trustees or their Assigns surrendering up their lease to the City as aforesaid), that then a new lease shall be granted unto them for such term of years as the City shall have in their new lease (except the four last years thereof) for and under such rent, covenants, and conditions, as in their former lease was reserved and mentioned.”*

This year is also memorable as being the first in which any members of the Royal family joined the Company and added their names to their long roll of distinguished members. On the 1st of June, Charles, Prince of Wales (afterwards Charles II.); Charles, Count Palatine and Duke of Bavaria; and James, Duke of York (afterwards James II.), became members of the Company, from which time either the King or Prince of Wales have almost always held the command of the Company, under the ancient but now obsolete title of “Captain-General,” which is still retained. During the first year and a-half of the Civil War a considerable number of members were elected, but from the 22nd of April, 1644, to the 28th of January, 1657, the election of members was entirely suspended.

* Journal, Vol. XL., f. 3; and Letter Book QQ, f. 4.



CHAPTER V.

THE CITY TRAINED BANDS AND THE CIVIL WAR.

FROM 1642 TO 1660.

CONTENTS.—Trained Bands Officered by the Company.—Musters in reigns of Elizabeth and James I.—Four Regiments of Trained Bands raised 1616.—Lord Mayor appointed their General.—Petition of Long-bow Makers.—Four Companies of Archers formed 1627.—Office of Muster-Master.—Capt. Fisher appointed by the King.—Corporation refuse to pay him.—Orders of King and Privy Council thereon.—Trained Bands increased in 1642.—Six Regiments of Auxiliaries raised.—Skippon to command City Forces.—The City and the Parliament.—Trained Bands volunteer for Service.—Prepare to March.—Proceed to Gloucester.—Skirmish at Stow.—The Battle of Newbury.—Their return to London.—Entry into the City.—The Muster in the New Artillery Garden.—Strength of the Regiments.—Their Arms and Colours.—Again called out for Service in 1644.—Cost of Arms and Accoutrements.—Muster in Hyde Park, 1646.—London Volunteer Regiments.—Trained Bands disbanded, 1663.—London Trained Bands changed to Militia, 1794.

ALTHOUGH the Company never belonged to the force known as the "Trained Bands," nor took any active part as a body in the Civil Wars, as by many has been supposed, yet, as the Trained Bands were officered by members of the Company, or by men who had previously received their instruction and training in their ranks, the two were, consequently, so closely connected that no record of the Company would be complete without some reference to their existence, and the conspicuous part they played at this important epoch of English history.

From the time when the military forces of the country were reorganised by James I., by the name of Trained Bands, the officers seem to have learnt their duties and qualified them-

selves for their position by becoming members of the Company, and for this reason the Company is constantly referred to as forming a nursery from whence efficient officers were obtained. At a later period, during the reign of George III., the officers and sergeants were required to become members of the Company, and promotion was only given to those who could produce certificates of membership. William III., in his Warrant to the Company in 1697, says, "We therefore recommend unto your care that all the Commission Officers of the Trained Bands of our said City may list themselves members of the said Society, that so, by the frequent practice of Arms according to their rules, they may be the better qualified to perform their trust in their respective commands." This clause is contained in all the subsequent Warrants to the Company, including the last one from Her Majesty, dated the 3rd of July, 1863.

On the 2nd of July, 1559, a muster was held at Greenwich of the men of the City Companies, consisting of 800 pikemen, all in fine corselets; 400 haquebuts, in shirts of mail; and 200 halberders, in almanrinets, under the command of "Captains Robert Constable and Mayster Saunders," who brought them in battle array before the Queen, "which made a goodly show before Her Majesty,—the Emperor's and French King's Ambassadors being present."*

Early in the year 1585 about 4,000 men were chosen out of the Companies of the City by command of the Queen; they were composed principally of "shot," or men armed with hand-guns, the remainder having pikes or halberds. They mustered daily at Mile-end, and in St. George's Field, and were inspected by the Queen at Greenwich, the men being quartered about Blackheath.†

The Privy Council wrote to the Lord Mayor on the 30th of November, 1614, directing that, by virtue of His Majesty's Commission, dated the 21st of August, 1605, a General Muster was to be made of the forces of the City, and especially of such trained men as were enrolled in the reign of Elizabeth, who

* Stow's Chronicles, p. 1,112.

† Hollingshed, p. 1,402; and Strype's Stow, Vol. II., p. 451.

were to be organised into companies by the name of Trained Bands; and vacancies were to be completed from householders and substantial persons. All armour and weapons were to be repaired, and the Trained Bands trained at convenient times; and the 6,000 men lately enrolled under His Majesty's commission were also to be completely armed.*

Another letter from the Privy Council, dated the 17th of March, 1616, ordered that the City Bands should consist of four regiments of five companies each, and the Lord Mayor for the time being to be their General, thereby making the forces more useful in case of sudden alarm.†

The regiments were organised as follows:—

EAST REGIMENT.

Sir THOMAS LOWE, Kt., Colonel.

| | | | | | |
|--------------|----------|-----------------|-------------------------------|----------|---|
| Captain Bond | ... | Aldgate Ward... | ... | Supplied | Portsocken Ward. |
| " | Stiles | ... | Langbourn Ward | ... | " Billingsgate, Queen- hithe, Bishopsgate, and Dowgate. |
| " | Lasher | ... | Tower Ward | ... | " Castle Baynard Ward. |
| " | Robinson | ... | Coleman Street Ward | ... | " Bishopsgate Ward. |
| " | Spering | ... | { Lime Street & Corn- hill | ... | " Billingsgate Ward. |

Their rendezvous to be between Leadenhall and St. Mary Axe.

WEST REGIMENT.

Sir THOMAS MIDDLETON, Kt., Colonel.

| | | | |
|---------|--------------|-------|---------------------|
| Captain | Walthall and | { | Farringdon Without. |
| " | Walker | | } |
| " | Henshawe | ... | Farringdon Within. |
| " | Edney | | Part of both Wards. |
| " | Williams | | Bread Street Ward. |

Their rendezvous to be from Temple Bar to Serjeants' Inn.

* Letter Book FF, f. 34.

† Letter Book FF, f. 147^b and 148; and Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. II., 202.

NORTH REGIMENT.

Sir JOHN WATTS, Kt., Colonel.

| | | | |
|-------------------|-----------------------|----------|---------------------------|
| Captain Smith ... | Cheap Ward ... | Supplied | Queenhithe Ward. |
| „ Garraway | Candlewick Street... | „ | Aldgate and Bread Street. |
| „ Swinton & | { Cripplegate Without | „ | Portsoken Ward. |
| „ Venn ... | { and Within... } | „ | |
| „ Milward . | { Bread Street and | „ | Bishopsgate Ward. |
| | { Basinghall ... } | | |

Their rendezvous to be in West Smithfield.

SOUTH REGIMENT.

Sir JOHN SWYNERTON, Kt., Colonel.

| | | | |
|------------------|------------------------|----------|--------------------|
| Captain Leate... | Bridge Ward ... | Supplied | Billingsgate Ward. |
| „ Dike and | { Dowgate, Vintry, and | „ | Langbourne |
| „ Andrews ... | { Walbrook ... } | „ | |
| „ Hamersley . | Cordwainer Street... | „ | Queenhithe |
| „ Halsey ... | Castle Baynard ... | „ | Tower |

Their rendezvous to be from the Lord Bishop of London's house "allongest y^e Trunckemakers."

On the 9th of February, 1619, an Order in Council was issued stating that preparations were being made almost throughout Christendom, so that for the safety of the kingdom His Majesty ordered a Muster to be held, and the Trained Bands completed, with substantial persons fit for the same, with muskets and pikes, all to be ready at ten days' notice.*

On the 19th of September, 1620, the Court of Aldermen ordered the "training for martial affairs" for that year to be suspended, and the training in future to take place on the 10th of April, unless it fell on a Sunday.†

On the 28th of March, 1622, the Court sanctioned giving the twenty Captains of the City £5 each, towards the expense of the training, which was changed to the 11th of April in each year.‡

On the 10th of July, 1626, 4,000 soldiers were ordered by the Privy Council to be ready, besides the trained bands, on account of the great preparation, both in Spain and Flanders, with designs

* Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. IV., pp. 94, 95.

† Repertory, Vol. XXXIV., f. 553.

‡ Idem, Vol. XXXVI., f. 100.

upon the Kingdom. His Majesty thought it expedient for safety, and "wisely considered that the Militia, well ordered, is the constant bulwark and defence of this Kingdom, upon the strength and peace of which the safety of the West doth principally depend." A view of the Trained Bands was therefore to be immediately taken.*

The Long-Bow Makers of the City petitioned the Lords of the Council, in February, 1627, stating that they were incorporated by James I., and that their Charter contained a clause commanding that the exercise of the long-bow should be brought into use; but the Company had declined until there were not above four of them left, and they were unable to take apprentices, so that the mystery of making long-bows was likely to be utterly forgotten in the kingdom, and prayed that the Orders of the Court of Aldermen for their advancement might be confirmed.†

On the 30th of August, 1627, the Committee appointed by the Court of Aldermen to consider the Bowyers' petition reported that they had sent for several of the principal Archers then remaining in the City, viz., Capt. Walker, Mr. Ayscough, Mr. William Hodges, Mr. Rowland Wilson and Mr. Wood, to confer with them on the subject. They thought the best way to revive shooting with the long-bow was to divide the City into four parts, or regiments [companies], viz., North, East, West and South, with Alderman Hodges as Colonel, assisted by four Captains; Mr. Nicholas Ascough, Captain of West Regiment; Mr. J. Wood, North Regiment; Mr. William Hodges, South; and Mr. Rowland Wilson, of the East Regiment. The Captains were to furnish their several regiments with as many volunteers who could use the long-bow, as possible; and if volunteers did not come forward, then as many inhabitants residing in their districts as were liable by law to furnish themselves with a bow

* Journal, Vol. XXXIII., f. 267^b.

† Remembrancia, Vol. VI., No. 143. The principal City Companies who manufactured arms, &c., were the Armourers, the Fletchers (Charter exemplified 1st February, 1605; Journal, Vol. XXVII., f. 21^b *et seq.*), Bowyers, 1620 (Charter exemplified 25th May, 1627; Journal, Vol. XXXIV., ff. 119-25), and the Gun Makers (Charter exemplified 14th March, 1637; Journal, Vol. XXXVIII., f. 60-67^b).

and quiver of arrows. The constables and other officers in every parish and ward of the City were directed to put in force all the penalties for unlawful games under the Statute of 33 Henry VIII. Once a-year the Captains were to lead their regiments into the fields to practise, and to shoot for prizes; the first prize, of the value of 20s.; second, 13s. 4d.; third, 10s.; and fourth, 6s. 8d.: the charges being paid by the Chamber of London. Each of the four Captains was to provide an "antient" of taffeta colours, and an allowance was granted by the Corporation to the lieutenant, sergeant and drummer. These suggestions were approved of and ordered to be submitted to the Privy Council for confirmation.*

The office of Muster-Master† in the City having fallen into disuse, the King wrote from Windsor, on the 13th of September, 1635, to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, stating that this office was of such necessary use that there was not one county in England without one; and as His Majesty understood that there was no such officer in the City of London, and knowing the abilities of Captain John Fisher, recommended him to be chosen for that office for life, with such fees as should be fit.

The Corporation, not wishing to appoint such an officer, made numerous excuses; but on the 10th of March, 1636, Mr. Secretary Windebank wrote to them saying that their reasons were not satisfactory, and as the King thought it most necessary to have a Muster-Master, they were to assemble forthwith and choose one.‡

On the 16th of March, the Court of Aldermen appointed a Committee to attend the Secretary the following day on the subject; they were also directed to present a petition to the Privy Council to mediate for them, that Captain Fisher should not

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. LXXV., No. 74; and Remembrancia, Vol. VI., No. 147.

† There was at one time a Master of the Ordnance for the City. On the 4th of November, 1474, Richard Chamberlyn, Founder, was admitted to the office of Master of the Ordnance and Keeper of the Habiliments of War of the City. Journal, Vol. VIII., f. 89b.

‡ Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXCVII., No. 41, and Vol. CCCXV., No. 105.

be appointed, and also to intercede with the Lord Chamberlain not to press the matter further.*

On the 18th of December, 1637, Capt. Fisher was made Muster-Master in the City during the King's pleasure, with the same fees as the Muster-Master of Kent.† The Corporation, however, refused to admit him to the office, and he therefore petitioned the Privy Council.‡

He next applied to the Council, stating that he had viewed the Arms of the City Companies, and that they were willing to make the necessary repairs, and desired that the King should signify to the Lord Mayor that he was to be allowed to mark the arms; also to cause the drums to beat up for a muster, and that he might have a yearly allowance.§ To enable him to do real service, he petitioned the Earl Marshal for permission to inspect the Companies, and see that all the defects in his last view had been made good; that all men charged with furnishing arms should be required to serve with their own arms if able, or else find a good householder as a substitute; that, according to the King's direction to the last Lord Mayor, the arms might be marked to prevent the common abuse of borrowing; and lastly, that the Captains should deliver to him a true list of the strength of their Companies.||

On the 20th of October, 1638, the King sent a letter to the Lord Mayor, saying Captain Fisher complained that, although the post of Muster-Master had been granted to him under the Great Seal, that no allowance had yet been settled on him; and His Majesty required that he should be paid the same as Muster-Masters of other counties, viz., a shilling for every foot- and two shillings for every horseman.¶ The dispute about his pay continued nearly all the following year. On the 6th of January 1639, the Privy Council sent for the Recorder and Aldermen, as they had refused to pay him; and on the 26th of August

* Repertory, Vol. L., ff. 155, 157, 240.

† Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCLXXIV., No. 20.

‡ Idem, Vol. CCCVI., No. 97.

§ Idem, Vol. CCCXL., No. 42.

|| Idem, Vol. CCCXXXVIII., No. 5.

¶ Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., No. 210.

the Council issued an order for him to be paid, without delay, for the previous two years, at the rate of sixpence a head per annum for every soldier in the Trained Bands, being the same rate as allowed in Kent; and the Captains of the several Companies were to collect it from the men and pay it to him yearly.

The King again wrote, on the 1st of November, directing that Captain Fisher was to be paid what was due to him, and intimating that any further delay would be interpreted as a contempt of the Royal authority, and that some coercive means would be used; upon which all the City Captains were summoned to hear the decision of the Court of Aldermen, and decide on an answer to His Majesty's letter.*

On the 13th of February 1638, an Order from the Inner Star Chamber directed the reform of defects and abuses in the Trained Bands, and that the arms should be marked to prevent the abuses occasioned by borrowing; and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen should confer with Captain Fisher and give him every assistance.

On the 18th of February a Warrant was issued to raise 3,000 men from the Trained Bands for service against the Scots.†

The King sent a warrant to the Lord Mayor, dated the 15th of May 1640, requiring him forthwith to raise 1,000 able and well-affected men out of the Trained Bands, or as many more as he should think necessary, to suppress, slay, kill, destroy, and apprehend all such as should be tumultuously assembled in or about Southwark, Lambeth, Blackheath, or elsewhere in parts adjacent.‡

The Trained Bands were ordered to be increased on the 19th of January, 1642, and the pay of the Captains was fixed at 50s. for every day or night that they had been ordered abroad with their Companies since the 4th of that month, towards the payment of their officers, and other charges.

On the 22nd of January, the Committee of the House of

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCCIX., No. 33; Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., Nos. 213 and 222; Repertory, Vol. LIV., f. 2; and Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. XVI.

† Remembrancia, Vol. VIII., Nos. 220 and 221.

‡ Idem, No. 229.

Commons appointed to sit in Grocers' Hall directed the Court of Common Council to choose the Commanders for the Militia,* and present their names to the House the next day for approval; and on the 12th of February the House ordered the Common Council to include Sergt.-Major General Skippon in those nominated by them for the command of the Militia of the City, which was agreed to.

An Order was issued by the Common Council, on the same day, to increase the Trained Bands to forty companies of soldiers of 200 and upwards each, or 8,000 men. This was agreed to at a Court on the 19th of March, and fifty-five persons (twenty of whom were previously Captains) were nominated, from whom forty were to be chosen by the Militia Committee, who, on the 4th of April, recommended the appointment of six Colonels and thirty-four Captains, which was referred to them to carry out.†

At a Court of Common Council, on the 17th of May, 1642, the Earl of Holland and Lord Kimbolton attended, and said they were directed by the House of Lords to thank the Militia Committee, Colonels, Captains, and other officers, for their care and pains in keeping up the City forces so well, and especially at their last general training, for which they thanked them, and as they had found by experience that the citizens were so ready and willing to help them in defence of the Parliament, they would be ready to do anything in their power for the good and safety of the City. The House of Commons also sent a deputation at the same time with a vote of thanks for putting the ordinances for the Militia so speedily and orderly into execution.‡

On the 18th of October the Militia Committee reported to the Court of Common Council that, on the previous Saturday, some of them had attended, by order of the close Committee of Par-

* The Committee appointed by the City to arrange all military affairs and superintend the Trained Bands was known as the "Committee of Militia." Their functions afterwards devolved on the Court of Lieutenancy, who exist at the present day. The Trained Bands at that time were frequently spoken of as the "Militia."

† Letter Book QQ, ff. 19, 21, 24, 37, and 38. These additional companies were probably organised into the six regiments known afterwards as the Auxiliaries.

‡ Idem, f. 40.

liament, and were informed by them that, in all probability, Prince Rupert would be soon close to London, and inquired "what forces they were willing to spare for the present in a free and voluntary way to issue out of the City to meet and check the adverse party," and also what horses they could provide. The Militia Committee thought that twelve companies of the Trained Bands might be sent to join the forces of adjacent counties in repelling the "adverse party."

All the Companies, on being acquainted with this resolution, were unanimous in their desire to be employed on this service, and it was thought by the Captains that the decision ought to be by lot, which was accordingly carried out, with the following result; the Red Regiment, Sergt.-Major Mainwaring; White Regiment, Capt. Hooker; Yellow Regiment, Capt. Player, and Capt. Harvey; Blue Regiment, Capt. Tichburne, and Sergt.-Major Geere; Green Regiment, Lieut.-Colonel Foster, and Capt. Blackwell; Lieut.-Colonel Matthew Foster, and Sergt.-Major Owen Roe; and for the Orange Regiment, Lieut.-Colonel Willson, and Major Buxton.

The close Committee of the House were therefore informed that the said twelve companies, with such of their soldiers as were willing to go with them, were prepared to go to such rendezvous as the House should direct, for the defence of Religion, the King, Kingdom, Parliament, and the City.*

* Letter Book QQ, f. 51. See also Ordinance for raising Troops for the Defence of London, containing certain propositions made by Parliament to the Trained Bands of the City, 17th October, 1642, for drawing out fifty men per company to join the bands of other counties to stop the Cavaliers coming to London. Also, a list of the Colonels and their colours, Lieutenant-Colonels, Majors, Captains, and Lieutenants, appointed by the Committee of Militia, 1642—viz., Alderman Atkins, Colonel of Red Regiment; Alderman Pennington, Colonel of White Regiment; Alderman Wollaston, Colonel of Yellow Regiment; Alderman Adams, Colonel of Blue Regiment; Alderman Warner, Colonel of Green Regiment; and Alderman Tower, Colonel of Orange Regiment. (Guildhall Library.)

There is also an interesting MS. in the Guildhall Library, entitled, "A Few Words to the Trained Bands and Soldiers of London City in these perilous times. By C. Edmonds, Remembrancer. 19th June, 1642." This volume contains a description of the various formations and evolutions to be practised by the Trained Bands, somewhat similar to the drill books of the present day.

On the 17th of November, 1642, the Lord Mayor received a letter, dated the previous day, from the Lord General the Earl of Essex, from his quarters at Hammersmith, informing him that he had chosen Sergt.-Major Skippon to be Sergt.-Major General of the Army, being well assured of his fidelity and ability to discharge that trust. The Common Council approved of the appointment in consideration of the great and weighty reasons for his selection, although they were daily in need of his advice and employment, as they depended so much on his ordering the Militia for the safety of the City; yet they desired that if any sudden occasion should require him for the defence of the City, that he should return, nevertheless they would continue his salary during his absence.*

The City of Gloucester being closely besieged by the King, the Committee of Militia, by virtue of an ordinance of both Houses of Parliament, of the 17th of August, required all persons to close their shops until Gloucester was relieved, and the necessary steps were ordered to be at once taken with this object.

Six regiments—one of horse, two of the Trained Bands, and three of the Auxiliaries—were got ready with incredible celerity, and joined the main army, with a train of artillery, on the 4th of September, on Brackley Heath; and upon their arrival in the neighbourhood of Gloucester the Royalists raised the siege.†

The following interesting account‡ of the march of the Trained Bands, from the time they left London on the 23rd of August, until their return on the 28th of September, including the part

* Letter Book QQ, f. 52.

† Maitland, Vol. I., pp. 373, 374.

‡ "A true and exact Relation of the Marchings of the Two Regiments of the Trained Bands of the City of London, being the Red and Blew Regiments. As also, Of the Three Regiments of the Auxiliary Forces, the Blew, Red, and Orange, who marched forth for the reliefe of the City of Glocester, from August 23 to Sept. 28. Wherein the most materiall passages of every dayes Marchings are briefly delineated. As also a true description of the severall Battells and Skirmishes had against the Enemy at Stow-the-old, Sept. 4; at Aburne Chase, September 18; and at Newbery, Septem. 20. Set forth for the satisfaction of many who earnestly desired information herein. By Henry Foster, quondam Sergeant to Captain George Mosse. Oct. 2nd, 1643." British Museum ^{E. 69}/₁₅. London, 1643. 4^o.

they took in the Battle of Newbury, and other engagements, is given by one of the Sergeants:—

“Upon Wednesday, the 23rd of August, our Red Regiment of the Trained Bands, marched into the new Artillery Ground, and from thence that night we marched to Brainford, and came thither about one o'clock in the morning; from whence, the next day, many of our citizens, who seemed very forward and willing at the first to march with us, yet upon some pretences and fair excuses returned home again, hiring others to go in their room; others returned home again the same night, before they came to Brainford.

“Upon Friday, the 25th of August, we advanced from Brainford to Uxbridge, where our Regiments were quartered there that night, and marched away the next morning.

“*Saturday, the 26th of August.*—We advanced to a town six miles beyond Uxbridge, called Chaffan, where we were quartered that night; at this town, a soldier, belonging to Lieutenant-Colonel Tompson was accidentally slain by shooting off a musket by one of his fellow-soldiers, though at a great distance from him, yet shot him in the head, whereof he died.

“*Sabbath-day, 27th August.*—We advanced from Chaffan, near to a village called Chessun; this day, the Blue Regiment of the Trained Bands, and the three Regiments of the Auxiliary Forces, met us upon a great common, about three miles from Chessun. Our whole Regiment was quartered at one Mr. Cheyney's house, an Esquire, where we were well accommodated for beer, having great plenty; two or three hundred of us this night lay in one barn.

“*Monday, the 28th of August.*—We advanced from thence to a town called Asson-Clinton, a little village three miles from Aylesbury; we continued here one day and two nights.

“*Wednesday, the 30th of August.*—We advanced from thence to a village called Clayden; this day the Lord General's Army and our Regiment of the Trained Band, together with the Auxiliary forces, met at Aylesbury; the great guns were fired at every fort about the town as the Lord General passed by. This was the Fast-day: our Regiment was quartered this night

at Sir Ralph Verney's House—a Parliament man; his father, the King's standard-bearer, was slain at Edgehill.

*“Thursday, the 31st of August.—*We advanced from thence to a village called Stretton Ardley. This night all our Brigade, consisting of six Regiments, viz.: Colonel Manwaring's Red Regiment, two Regiments of Trained Bands, and three of the Auxiliary, were all quartered at this little village. It is conceived we were in all of this Brigade about 5,000. Here was little provision either for officers or soldiers, the night before we came hither. The Cavaliers were at Bister, two miles from this village, and six miles from Oxford, but were beaten out of it by our soldiers, and the Lord General with his Army quartered there this night.

*“Friday, the 1st day of September.—*We advanced from hence to a place called Bayards-Green, in Oxfordshire, being three miles distant from Brackley, and eight from Banbury, where our Brigade met my Lord General with his whole Army, whereat was great shouting and triumph as he passed by to take a view of our Regiments, the whole Army being drawn up in their several Regiments, continued there about an hour, and then we marched away. It was a goodly and glorious sight to see the whole Army of Horse and Foot together. It is conceived, by those that viewed our Army well, that we did consist of (to speak of the least) 15,000 horse and foot, some speak of many more. This day good news was brought us concerning Gloucester and Exeter. From hence we marched this day to a village called Souldern, four miles from Banbury, where our six Regiments, that came from London, were quartered, and my Lord General and the rest of the Army were quartered about a mile from us at a market town called Ano-on-the-Hill; we were very much scanted of victuals in this place.

*“Saturday, 2nd September.—*We advanced from hence to Hookmorton, twenty-five miles from Gloucester, at which village our whole Brigade was quartered. This day, the Lord General's Troops had some skirmish with the Cavaliers; it is reported there was eight slain of the enemy's party, and one of ours. From hence we marched away the next morning.

*“Sabbath-day, 3rd September.—*We advanced from hence to

a little village called Addington, about a mile from Stow-the-Old, the hithermost town in Gloucestershire, and about twenty miles from Gloucester, where in our march this day we again met the Lord General's Army upon a great common about half a mile from Chipping Norton; at which place also our five regiments departed from his army, and marched to the village aforesaid. The Blue Regiment of the Trained Bands marched in the van, and took up the first quarter in the town; the other three regiments of the Auxiliary Forces, were quartered at the adjacent villages; whereupon our Red Regiment of the Trained Band was constrained to march half a mile further to get quarter. We were now in the van of the whole Army, having not so much as one Troop of Horse quartered near us: but we were no sooner in our quarters, and set down our arms, intending a little to refresh ourselves, but presently there was an alarm beat up, and we being the frontier regiment nearest to the enemy were presently all drawn up into a body, and stood upon our guard all that night. We were in great distraction, having not any Horse to send out as scouts, to give us any intelligence; my Lord General with his army lay at Chipping Norton, about three miles behind us, who had an alarm there given by the enemy the same night also. Our regiment stood in the open field all night, having neither bread nor water to refresh ourselves, having also marched the day before without any sustenance, neither durst we kindle any fire, though it was a very cold night.

"Monday, 4th September.—We got some refreshment for our soldiers, which was no sooner done, but news was brought to us that the enemy was within half a mile of the town, which proved to be true, for presently one rid down to us, having his horse shot in the neck, all bloody, and told us the enemy was at the town's-end; also one trooper slain a quarter of a mile above the town; one of our soldiers stripped him and brought his clothes to us. It was a little open village, the enemy might have come in upon us every way, therefore we, conceiving it not safe to abide in the town, drew up our regiment presently into a body, and marched into a broad open field to the top of the hill; the Blue Regiment of the Trained Bands were quartered

within less than half a mile of us, but came not up to us. Being come into the field we saw about 4,000 or 5,000 of the enemy's Horse surrounding us: one rid post to my Lord General to inform him of it. One great body of their Horse stood facing us upon the top of the hill at our town's end, within less than a quarter of a mile from us; another great body of their horse was in the valley, upon our right flank as we stood; and a third great squadron of their horse were going up to the top of a hill in rear of us, by all which it appears they had an intent to have surrounded our City Regiments, and to have cut us off; we stood and faced one another for the space of half an hour, then six or seven of our men who had horses rode up to them, and came within less than musket shot, flourishing their swords, daring them; and one or two of our men fired upon their forlorn hope. We had lined the hedges with musketeers, which, they perceiving, did not move towards our body, but only stood and faced us. Then some of the Auxiliary Forces came up to us; at whose coming we gave a great shout, and then by-and-by after we saw my Lord General's forces coming down the hill, about a mile and a half behind us; my Lord drew out the forlorn hope upon the hill as they came down, who fired three or four drakes against the enemy's horse that were near them on the top of the hill that were coming upon the rear of us, and made them retreat to the rest of the body; their intent was to have compassed us in on every side, but the Lord prevented them; they might have spoiled our whole regiment, had they in the morning come down upon us when we were taking a little food to refresh ourselves, the enemy being then but half a mile off; a great many of the Cavaliers lay all night within less than half a mile of us, which we perceived in our march the next day; I hope the mercy of that day will not be forgotten.

"When this was done, my L. General's forces marched up to our brigade: when they were come we drew forth our forlorn hope, and marched up to the body of their horse that stood facing us on the top of the hill: we fired some drakes at them, they retreated; then the Lord General drew up his great guns, they faced us again, we fired two great pieces of ordnance at them and then they retreated up to the town of Stow, and

drew up all their horse into a body and stood upon the side of the hill facing us; then we let fly two or three of our greatest ordnance at them; they all fled, and we pursued them and followed them three miles; then they stood and faced the Lord General again about the going down of the sun; we fired at them a great while, marching up towards them five or six regiments together, all in a body, about 800 or 1,000 abreast, six deep, we having room enough, it being a brave champion country: which goodly show did so much the more daunt the enemy that (as it is reported) Prince Rupert swore he thought all the Roundheads in England were there.

"In the first skirmish we lost but one man, who was slain by our own cannon through his own negligence, and another sore burnt and hurt by the same piece. When we came to Stow, the Cavaliers reported that they had killed twenty of our men, and we two of theirs, but we hear there were six of their men slain, some horses killed, and five prisoners taken. Prince Rupert was there, and some say the Lord of Holland also. Our men pursuing them skirmished till nine o'clock at night; we marched after them till twelve o'clock at night; we lay all in the open field upon the ploughed land, without straw, having neither bread nor water, yet God enabled our soldiers to undergo it cheerfully; there was not one feeble sick person amongst us but was able to march with us the day following.

"*Tuesday, September 5th.*—We advanced from that field near to a town called Prestbury, within sight of Gloucester, about seven miles from it: this day the whole army marching together, it fell to our Red Regiment of the Trained Bands to march in the rear of the waggons, and had the charge of them; about six o'clock the Lord General coming to the top of a high mountain, or hill, called Prestbury Hill, where we might see the City of Gloucester, he commanded four or five great pieces of ordnance to be fired off; some say it was against the Cavaliers, who were about a mile off in the town below the hill: others say it was to give intelligence to Gloucester of our approaching to their relief. The army marched down the hill and hastened to the adjacent villages for quarters; but before the waggons could come to the top of the hill, night drawing on, it began to be

very dark, so that our waggons and carriages could not get down the hill; many of them were overthrown and broken, it being a very craggy, steep and dangerous hill, so that the rest of the waggons durst not adventure to go down, but stayed all night there: six or seven horses lay dead there the next morning that were killed by the overthrow of the waggons: our Red Regiment, having charge of the waggons, were constrained to lie all night on the top of the mountain, it being a most terrible tempestuous night of wind and rain, as ever men lay out in, we having neither hedge nor tree for shelter, nor any sustenance of food or fire: we had by this time marched six days with very little provision; for no place where we came was able to relieve our army, we leaving the road all the way and marching through poor little villages: our soldiers in their marching this day would run half-a-mile or a mile before where they heard any water was; such straits and hardships our citizens formerly knew not, yet the Lord that called us out to do his work enabled us to undergo such hardness as He brought us to. This evening the Lord General was fain to fight for his quarter, and beat the enemy out of it, at a market-town called Cheltenham, five miles from Gloucester, and two miles from this hill; about midnight we had two alarms upon this hill, in the midst of all the storm and rain, which, together with the darkness of the night made it so much the more dreadful, which also caused a great distraction among our soldiers, everyone standing upon his guard, and fearing his fellow-soldier to be his enemy. Many other particular sad stories of this tempestuous stormy night I leave to the relation of others: one young man of the Colonel's company was shot in this confusion upon this hill, whose death will be much lamented by his parents and friends, from whom he received a letter but a few days before to return home.

"The next morning being Wednesday, September 6th, our soldiers came down from that hill into the village aforesaid, being wet to the very skin, but could get little or no refreshing, every house being so full of soldiers; the Cavaliers were in the town but the day before. We stayed here but two or three hours that morning, and then we had an alarm that the Cavaliers were near the town with a great body of Horse. We were all presently

drawn up into a body in the field; our soldiers began to complain pitifully, being even worn out and quite spent for want of some refreshing, some complaining they had not eaten or drunk in two days, some a longer time. Yesterday the enemy raised their siege from before Gloucester. This day our two regiments of the Trained Bands marched to a little village called Norton, three miles wide of Gloucester and four miles from Tewkesbury, where our soldiers had some reasonable accommodation and refreshment. In this village we had many alarms; we continued here two days and two nights.

“Thursday, September 7th.—The King’s forces fell upon some of our troops of horse at Winscombe, they being secure; the enemy killed many of them, and took many prisoners and some colours. The regiments of our horse there did belong to Colonel Vere and Colonel Goodwin. The Auxiliary regiments were quartered within two miles where this was done. This night, about seven o’clock, there came a command for our regiments of the Trained Bands to march five miles back again in the night, but it being a very dark night, and our men worn out and spent with their former marching, they refused to go; but next morning, being Friday, September 8th, we did. The Lord General, with the whole army, marched into Gloucester this day. The city was exceeding full of horse and foot; the enemy besieged this town a full month and three days. They had many strong assaults against it, and battered some of their works; in two or three places they had begun to undermine the gates and outworks, but were met with by the City forces, who did undermine within to meet them; without they shot many grandoes of great weight, which, when they fell in the City, were red as fire, yet, blessed be God, killed not one man therewith, only tore up the ground as if a bear had been rooting up the earth. The inhabitants in the City report that the enemy shot 140 shot, great and small, in one day, and yet killed neither man, woman, nor child; they lost about thirty in this City during the time of the siege, most of which, as it is reported, were shot in the head, in peeping through some holes at the enemy. We found very loving respect and entertainment in this city, they being very joyful of our coming. We abode

here Friday night and Saturday, and marched away on Sabbath-day morning. The Lord General left in this city three great pieces of ordnance, as also many score barrels of powder, with match and bullet proportionable, furnishing them to their heart's desire.

"Sabbath-day, September 10th.—The whole army advanced from Gloucester to Tewkesbury, where we abode four days and five nights, till Gloucester had provided themselves with corn and other provisions. The enemy had cut off from the city all their pipes of water, and burnt their mills. My Lord General summoned this town of Tewkesbury, and demanded the twentieth part of their estates for the relief of Gloucester. We were at this town five days—from Sabbath-day till Friday.

"September 15th.—On Thursday night the enemy did fall upon some of our troops of horse, who were quartered about three miles from Tewkesbury, of the regiment belonging to Sir James Ramsey; they slew many of our men, and took many others prisoners. We took four of them prisoners; but the greatest loss was sustained on our side. Before we marched from this town the Lord General gave orders for the making of a bridge over the river Severn, near Tewkesbury, as if our intention had been to march with our army over there to Worcester, which caused the enemy to draw their forces thither as a place of refuge. The wisdom and policy of the Lord General and Council of War, as also their great care for the preservation of our army, is highly to be commended and never to be forgotten, and may serve to stop the mouths of all such as shall hereafter be opened against him; for had the enemy known which way we had marched they might have had us at a great advantage, by gaining the hills, we being now in the vale of Esum, and all our great ordnance and carriages to be drawn up those hills, they might have kept us there all this winter, and starved our army; but, blessed be God, we all marched away with safety. One that was present at Esum, where the King, with his army, lay, affirms that, when tidings came to the King that we were marched from Tewkesbury, they did stamp and swear, and curse their scouts exceedingly that they gave them no better intelligence of our departure. And the same

day we marched from Tewkesbury the King, with his army and train of artillery, marched from Esum after us, as will appear in the ensuing matter.

"Friday, September 15th.—Our whole Army advanced from Tewkesbury to Ciceter (*alias* Cirencester), seventeen miles; we marched all night, and sat down before it about three o'clock in the morning. When we came thither, Sir Robert Pye marched up to the town, and, with some musketeers, he gave fire upon the sentinels, killed one of them and wounded the other; Sir Robert himself received a shot in the arm. The Cavaliers yielded the town, and desired quarter. We took 225 prisoners, whereof ten were Commanders; we tied them two and two together with match, and brought them along with us; we took also twenty-seven waggon-load of provision, which the Cavaliers had provided for the relief of their own Army; they had taken the school-house belonging to the town, and made it their store-house, to lay in such provision as they made the country to bring in; they slew one man of ours, who was pistolled by one that took him prisoner; we killed two or three of them.

"Saturday, September 16th.—We advanced from Cirencester five miles, to a village called Letton, where our London Brigade was quartered that night. The Lord General, with his army, quartered a mile further, at a market town in Wiltshire, called Cricklet. At the village aforesaid were ten cart-loads of Cavaliers, who were sick and lame, and brought thither to be quartered, who, when they heard we were marching to this place, they then found their legs and ran away. This day we had a wet march, and in the night a false alarm.

"Sabbath-day, September 17th.—We marched from Cricklet to a market town, called Swindon, eight miles. This morning news was brought that the Cavaliers were come to Cirencester, and had taken and killed many of our men, who stayed behind drinking, and neglecting to march with their colours, who are not much to be pitied. This day we drove along with our Army about 1,000 sheep and 60 head of cattle, which were taken from malignants and papists in the country, for the maintenance of our Army. Eighty-seven sheep were allotted for our Red Regiment, but we afterwards lost them all when we came to

fight, it being every man's care then to secure himself, and to see to the safety of the Army. This night our London Brigade was quartered two miles beyond the Lord General's quarters, at a poor little village called Chisledon, where we could get no accommodation either for meat or drink but what we brought with us in our knapsacks; most of us quartered in the open field, it being a very cold frosty night. We marched away hence the next morning.

Monday, September 18th.—We advanced from this village about two miles, to a place called Abern Chase, where news was brought to the Lord General that the enemy was coming upon us with a great body of horse, which caused the Lord General to make a stand. Our whole Army being in a deep valley, and the enemy upon the hills on our left flank, we drew up all our Army into a body to the top of the hill, where we had a full view of the enemy over against us. There appeared a great body of their horse, it was conceived there was 7,000 or 8,000, but no foot that we could discern. We stood awhile and faced them; then one small body of horse, as a forlorn hope, marched up the hill to them, and fired upon them, and then retreated to their main body in the valley; the enemy followed our horse in their retreat, firing at them all the way very fiercely; then we fired some drakes at their horse, but did little execution; then our body of foot was drawn down from this hill to the top of another high hill, where we stood and faced the enemy, having a full view of all that was done between our horse and theirs; our foot were not engaged at all in this fight, except two regiments only. Then Colonel Meldram's and Colonel Harvie's troops drew up in a body, and gave the enemy a very fierce charge, which was performed with as brave courage and valour as ever men did, and then wheeled about to a regiment of our foot that stood in rear of them; the enemy pursued them in their retreat, skirmishing one at another all the way; what number was slain in this fight is not yet known. Here Captain Willet received a shot from the enemy, of which wound he is since dead; we lost no other man of note in this fight. One man of great note and esteem of the enemy's party was here slain, Marquis de la Veel; his father is Lord High Marshal of France, and chief Commander in the field.

We took up his body and carried it to Hungerford. I viewed his wounds ; he received three shots in his body from us, one in his right breast, another in the shoulder, and a third in the face. From this place all their horse gathered into a body when it began to be dark, and so ours likewise ; and we marched away that night to Hungerford, five miles. Our Red Regiment, with some other regiments, were quartered a mile on this side Hungerford, at a little village called Shelton ; those that marched in rear of the Army were marching this five miles all night. We were much distressed for want of sleep, as also for all other sustenance ; it was a night of much rain, we were wet to the skin. This day we took twenty-five Cavaliers at Hungerford, whereof one was slain.

“ Tuesday, September 19.—We advanced from Hungerford to a village called Embry, about a mile and a half from Newbury : the Lord General had intent to have quartered at Newbury that night, but the King got into the town the day before, and so we were prevented. This morning a trumpeter came from the King to the Lord General to desire that surgeons and doctors might have free access from them to the Marquis that we had taken. But the messenger came too late, for the Marquis was past their cure. The Lord General told him, if they pleased to send for his body they might have it. The death of this Marquis hath much enraged the enemy, being one whom they did highly esteem. This night our whole army quartered in the open field ; we had no provision but what little everyone had in his knapsack. We had now marched many days and nights with little food or any sustenance, and little sleep. This night the King sent a challenge to the Lord General, to give him battle the next morning, which accordingly was performed ; and in the night our enemies gained the hills where they intended to give us battle ; they planted their ordnance, got all advantages they could desire, before our army marched up to them. Yet now we see there is neither wisdom nor policy nor strength against the Lord ; yea, had not the Lord himself been on our side, they had swallowed us up quick, so great was their rage and fury stirred up against us, they being confident of the victory before we came to fight. But let not him that puts on his harness boast as he that puts it off. For it was not our own arm that

saved us, but the right hand of the Lord became glorious in that day, to get himself a glorious name.

“The next morning, Sept. 20, very early before day, we had drawn up all our army in their several regiments, and marched away by break of day; and then advancing towards the enemy with most cheerful and courageous spirits. The Lord Robert’s soldiers had begun to skirmish with them before we came up to the enemy, which, we hearing, put us to a running march till we sweat again, hastening to their relief and succour. When we were come up into the field our two Regiments of the Trained Bands were placed in open campania upon the right wing of the whole army. The enemy had there planted eight pieces of ordnance, and stood in a great body of horse and foot, we being placed right opposite against them, and far less than twice musket shot distance from them. They began their battery against us with their great guns above half an hour before we could get any of our guns up to us; our gunner dealt very ill with us, delaying to come up to us; our noble Colonel Tucker fired one piece of ordnance against the enemy, and aiming to give fire the second time, was shot in the head with a cannon bullet from the enemy. The Blue Regiment of the Trained Bands stood on our right wing, and behaved themselves most gallantly. Two regiments of the King’s Horse, which stood upon their right flank afar off, came fiercely upon them, and charged them two or three times, but were beaten back with their Musketeers, who gave them a most desperate charge and made them fly. This day our whole army wore green boughs in their hats, to distinguish us from our enemies, which they perceiving, one Regiment of their Horse had got green boughs and rode up to our regiments crying, ‘Friends, friends;’ but we let fly at them, and made many of them and their horses tumble, making them fly with a vengeance. The enemy’s cannon did play most against the Red Regiment of Trained Bands; they did some execution amongst us at first, and were somewhat dreadful when men’s bowels and brains flew in our faces: but blessed be God that gave us courage, so that we kept our ground, and after awhile feared them not; our ordnance did very good execution upon them, for we stood at so near a distance,

upon a plain field, that we could not lightly miss one another. We were not much above half our regiments in this place, for we had sixty files of Musketeers drawn off for the forlorn hope, who were engaged against the enemy in the field upon our left flank. Where most of the regiments of the Army were in fight, they had some small shelter of the hedges and banks, yet had a very hot fight with the enemy, and did good execution, and stood to it as bravely as ever men did. When our two regiments of the Trained Bands had thus played against the enemy for the space of three hours, or thereabouts, our Red Regiment joined to the Blue, which stood a little distance from us, upon our left flank, where we gained the advantage of a little hill, which we maintained against the enemy half an hour; two regiments of the enemy's Foot fought against us all this while to gain the hill, but could not. Then two regiments of the enemy's Horse, which stood upon our right flank, came fiercely upon us, and so surrounded us that we were forced to charge upon them in the front and rear, and both flanks, which was performed by us with a great deal of courage and undauntedness of spirit, inso-much that we made a great slaughter of them, and forced them to retreat; but presently the two regiments of the enemy's Foot in this time gained the hill, and came upon us before we could well recover ourselves, that we were glad to retreat a little way into the field, till we had rallied up our men, and put them into their former posture, and then came on again. If I should speak anything in the praise and high commendations of these two regiments of the Trained Bands, I should rather obscure and darken the glory of that courage and valour God gave unto them this day; they stood like so many stakes before the shot of the cannon, quitting themselves like men of undaunted spirits, even our enemies themselves being judges. It might be expected that something should be spoken of the noble and valiant service performed by the rest of the regiments of the Army, both horse and foot; but their courage and valour itself speaks, which was performed by them that day, our men fighting like lions in every place, the great slaughter among the enemy testifies. My noble and valiant Captain, George Mosse, who was with the forlorn hope, received a shot in the back from the enemy, of

which wound he is since dead. This 26th of September (*hinc illæ lachrymæ*) we lost about sixty or seventy men in our Red Regiment of the Trained Bands, besides wounded men; we having the hottest charge from the enemy's cannon of any regiment in the Army. Also that worthy and valiant gentleman, Capt. Hunt, was slain in this battle, whose death is much lamented. These two poor regiments were the very objects of the enemy's battery that day, and they have since made their boast of it. It is conjectured by most that the enemy lost four for one; seventy chief commanders were slain on their side. This is most certain, that they did acknowledge themselves to be beaten. It is credibly informed by those that were this day in the King's Army, that the King himself brought up a Regiment of Foot and another of Horse into the field, and gave fire to two pieces of ordnance, riding up and down all that day in a soldier's gray coat. The next day I viewed the dead bodies; there lay about 100 stripped naked in that field where our two regiments stood in battalion. This night the enemy conveyed away about thirty cart-load of maimed and dead men, as the town-people credibly reported to us, and I think they might have carried away twenty cart-load more the next morning; they buried thirty in one pit, fourteen lay dead in one ditch. This battle continued long; it began about six o'clock in the morning, and continued till past twelve o'clock at night; in the night the enemy retreated to the town of Newbury and drew away all their ordnance; we were in great distress for water, or any accommodatiou to refresh our poor soldiers; yet the Lord himself sustained us so that we did not faint under it; we were right glad to drink in the same water where our horses did drink, wandering up and down to seek for it. Our word on this day was 'Religion,' theirs was, 'Queen Mary in the field.' The great goodness of God in giving us victory this day is so much the more remarkable from these three considerations:—First, that great disadvantage we had this day in case we had been beat by the enemy, we having no place of retreat for safety nearer than Gloucester, which was above thirty miles, whereas our enemies had possession of Newbury, and, in a manner, of the whole country round about; secondly, we had great scarcity

of provision for our Army, having marched many days and nights, with little food or sleep, or any refreshment; had not God fed us with the bread of our enemies, which we took at Cirencester, we could not without a special providence of God have been able to subsist, whereas our enemies had the town of Newbury and the country all about for their relief; thirdly, we had great disadvantage by giving battle in that place; the enemy had made choice of their ground, planted their ordnance, gained all advantages they could desire. Besides many other disadvantages on our part, which I forbear to relate, yet God gave us the victory and made our enemies fly before us, that we kept the field all night. The Lord General deserves perpetual honour by his wise, worthy and valuable managing of this day's battle; as also no less praise and commendation to the rest of the Council of War. Many more particular passages might here be inserted, but I proceed.

"*Thursday, September 21st.*—After we had buried our dead, we marched from this field with our whole Army to a town called the Veal, eleven miles, and four miles from Reading, where, in our march this day, our enemy pursuing us fell upon our rear in a narrow lane, about a mile and a half from a village called Aldermason; they came upon us with a great body of Foot and Horse. Our London Brigade marched in the rear, and a forlorn hope of 600 Musketeers in the rear of them, besides a great number of our Horse; but our Horse which brought up the rear durst not stand to charge the enemy, but fled, running into the narrow lane, routed our own Foot, trampling many of them under their horses' feet, crying out to them, 'Away, away; every man shift for his life; you are all dead men;' which caused a most strange confusion amongst us. We fired ten or twelve drakes at the enemy, but they came upon us very fiercely, having their Foot on the other side of the hedges; many of our waggons were overthrown and broken, others cut their traces and horse-harness, and ran away with their horses, leaving their waggons and carriages behind them; our Foot fired upon the enemy's Horse very bravely, and slew many of them; some report above 100, and not ten of ours: some that we took prisoners our men were so enraged at them

that they knocked out their brains with the butt end of their muskets. In this great distraction and rout a waggon of powder lying in the way overthrown, some sparks of fire or match fell among it which did much hurt; seven men burnt, and two killed; the enemy had got two of our drakes in the rear had not our Foot played the men and recovered them again; this was about four or five o'clock at night; many of our men lost their horses, and other things which they threw away in haste; we marched on and came to the Veal about ten o'clock at night.

"Friday, September 22nd.—We advanced from the Veal and came to Reading, four miles, when we refreshed our soldiers after our hard service and wearisome marchings. We stayed here Friday, Saturday, and Sabbath-day; Saturday night about twenty of the enemy's Horse came and gave us an alarm. Sabbath-day was celebrated a day of thanksgiving; we marched away hence on Monday morning.

"Monday, Sept, 25th.—We advanced from Reading to Maidenhead; our brigade was quartered here, but the Lord General with his army and all his train marched to Windsor.

"Tuesday, Sept. 26th.—We advanced from Maidenhead about 4 o'clock in the morning, having some intention of marching to London that night, but came no farther than Brainford, where we stayed the next day also, being Fast-day.

"Thursday, Sept. 28th.—We marched from Brainford to London, where we were joyfully received home of all our friends, and all that wish well to the Parliament, and to the vexation of heart of all wicked malignants who had raised reports that we were all routed and slain. The Lord Mayor, together with the Aldermen of the City, met us at Temple Bar and entertained us joyfully: many thousands bidding us welcome home, and blessing God for our safe return. Thus God, that called us forth to do His work, brought us through many straits, delivered us from the rage and insolency of our adversaries, made them turn their backs with shame, giving us victory, and causing us to return home joyfully."*

* See also British Museum $\frac{\text{E. 69}}{12}$. "The Parliament Scout communicating His Intelligence to the Kingdome," &c. London: 1643. 4to.

The following extracts from an account of the battle of Newbury, given by one of the men serving in the Trained Bands, is not without interest :—*

“LOVING MASTER,

“My service being presented to yourself and my mistress, with my love to my brother, sister, and all the rest of my friends, these are to inform you that I am in good health at present, I praise God, and so is all our Company. At our first entrance into Gloucester I sent a letter to my brother, if it miscarried not, wherein was a relation of that skirmish at Stow, in which, as we heard it was reported in London that we were all miserably killed, when, indeed, Prince Rupert, this now terrified Cavalier, ran away before 20 muskets was shot on our side; for their parts I think they had none there to shoot, the noise of My Lord General's ordnance and the sight of the citizen is now an ordinary forerunner of their running constitutions. From thence we chased them before us till we came to Gloucester, and then roused them from their nests, made them burn their cabins, wheel about to the left, and leave some of the cabbages without, and all their glorious pillage within the City.

“On Friday, Sept. 8th, we entered the City and remained there till Sunday following, and from thence we marched to Tewkesbury, where we lay till last Friday, on which morning some of the Cavaliers set upon a party of our horse, quartered at Oxenton, four miles off, who, not being so vigilant as they ought to have been in their watches, were routed. . . . The day before we caused a bridge to be made over the Severn, and sent some forces to Upton Bridge, as if we intended to march

* “A True Relation of the Late Battell neere Newbery, shewing the happy successe of his Excellencies Forces against the Caviliers, upon Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday, with the manner of their Fight, and how many slaine, and taken Prisoners on both sides; also how His Majesty and the Prince, standing on a hill neere, and viewing the said fight, concluded that it was a worse bout than Edgehill; . . . from a letter sent from one in the Army to his friend in London, dated from their quarters in Reading, 23rd Sept., 1643.” British Museum, $\frac{E. 69}{2}$. London: 1643. 4to.

for Worcester, which caused the enemy to draw all his forces together for the defence of that place, planted their ordnance, and thought to tickle us by the way; but the fools were cozened, for on Friday morning we went clean another way, marched all day and the greatest part of the night from Tewkesbury to Cirencester, eighteen miles, where we took 200 odd of them napping in their beds, though we thank God their horses were feeding in the stables. . . .

“On Friday night we thought to have quartered in the fields, 8 miles from Cirencester, but having intelligence that such a party was there, we plucked up our spirits, drew up a forlorn hope of about six hundred musketeers, and so we marched lustily for Cirencester. We drew near it about one of the clock in the morning, and because we expected some knocking work, for we heard that Prince Maurice, with two thousand horse, was there; we had all white handkerchiefs in our hats, and the word ‘God’ in our mouths for distinction. Our forlorn hope bravely entered the town, while the rest of our forces surrounded it, and as soon as we were in, commanded all the inhabitants, upon pain of death, to keep their doors and windows shut, and if any man presumed to look out, or stir, we were commanded to shoot them, or knock them down. They had set out a guard of four men, but the sentry was asleep, whom we straight knocked down for quietness’ sake; the rest took house and we marched up to the market-place, according to order, without any opposition, the Cavaliers supposing we had been Prince Maurice and his forces, who, it seems, were that night expected, till we entered the houses, dragged them out prisoners, and put them into the church together until the next morning. Among the prisoners was one Captain Hacker, a late City Captain, and some other captains, officers, and citizens of worth and quality, and one Mason, an upholsterer in Newgate Market. The prisoners we bring along with us, but what service we are next designed for, as yet we know not. . . .

“At Cirencester we took between thirty and forty cartloads of bread and cheese, the Cavaliers had got and ready provided for their own eating; all their horses, some pistols, swords, and carbines, with some money and good clothes. . . .”

In a subsequent letter, dated from Reading, he says :—

“We have had three bouts with the Cavaliers, who have been so enraged ever since we disappointed their purpose at Gloucester; and got away their bread and cheese at Cirencester, that they have often sworn we should never see London again. And our prisoners have bragged of the same as a thing impossible. Yet, the Lord be praised, we are now pretty well on our way. On Monday last we quartered at Chilleton, and that afternoon the Cavaliers faced us on Malvern Hills, two miles on this side. We made as if we had retreated, and sent out a party of horse to meet them: they joined, fired bravely upon each other; and our horse wheeled off. Then my Lord General fell on with his foot, and gave them a gallant charge which, accompanied with a volley of our Dragoons, rattled for the space of an hour without any cessation.

“Then the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries were drawn on, but the darkness of the night prevented our further sport for that time. We took about sixty prisoners, and marched away that night to Chelton, and from thence the next night to Newbury, where the Cavaliers pitched a field against our coming, planted their ordnance, and having joined the King and Queen’s Army, together with Prince Maurice’s foot, and all the forces they could possibly make, thought themselves sure of our destruction; but God had otherwise determined it, for on Wednesday morning my Lord General, by sunrise, espying their body, set in a battalia upon a place called Newbury Common, drew up towards them, set to it pell mell, and the fight continued without any intermission all that day, and the next night, till one or two of the clock the next morning. Many men were killed on both sides, but God be praised we won the field of them, and beat them into the town. The most we lost were out of the Blue and Red Trained Bands, who, nevertheless, have gained themselves eternal honour. Lieut.-Colonel Tucker, and Capt. Hunt, of the Red Trained Bands, are slain. The fight was long and terrible, some talk of thousands slain on the King’s side. I viewed the field, and cannot guess above 500; but this the townsmen informed us, that they carried sixty cart-loads of dead and wounded men into the town before I came to view the place; and such crying

there was for surgeons as never was the like heard. The King, Queen, and Prince stood all the day upon a hill hard by, in sight of us, and beheld all; and the King himself hath said *that this was a worse bout than Edgehill*. The next day we faced them upon the Common till eleven or twelve of the clock, but they drew not out to meet us, which caused us to march away, our business being only to break through their army home. But Colonel Hurry, as soon as we were gone, with a strong party of horse, made after us; but such was the base cowardice of our horse, which that day brought up the rear, that upon a weak assault of the enemy they ran away, rode quite through our foot in a narrow lane, prest many of them down under their horses' feet, and for the present utterly routed us; which caused the enemy to fall on with great eagerness and resolution; but God be praised, our foot got over into the fields out of the lane, lined the hedges with musketeers, and killed them like dogs; making them quickly retreat, and take time to repent their hasty bargain. I know but of three slain outright in our Company, of which Thomas, Master Glover's Journeyman, is one.

"P.S. In our first fight we killed the son of the great Marquis of France, whose body we brought with us to Hungerford, and thither the King sent a trumpeter to my Lord General about it, but I know not what answer was returned. And on Wednesday my Lord Falkland, the Earl of Carnarvon, and my Lord Spencer, as I certainly hear are slain, also a Bishop, about whose body the King also sent a trumpeter to my Lord General the next day. His Majesty sent from Oxford on Friday for the burying of sixty lords, knights, and gentlemen of great quality, at several places in and about Oxford, and there were many of their chief commanders slain (and, as a great commander of theirs said) that there was not one commander that charged upon us but were either slain, wounded, or had his horse shot under him."*

* See also "A True and impartial relation of the Battaille Betwixt His Majesties Army and that of the Rebells neare Newbury, &c." British Museum, $\frac{E. 69}{10}$; Oxford, 1643, 4to, and $\frac{E. 69}{8}$; "Mercurius Civicus," London's Intelligencer.



RUPERTVS
Palatinus Rheni. Duc
Anolia Vice Admirallus
Constabularius et

Dei gratia Comes.
Bavaria et Cumbria Totius
et Castris Regalis Windsor
Gubernator &c.

Prince Rupert.
Admitted a Member. 10th Aug 1664.

Clarendon, in his account of this battle, says—"The London Trained Bands and Auxiliary regiments (of whose inexperience of danger, or any kind of service beyond the easy practice of their postures in the Artillery Garden, men had till then too cheap an estimation) behaved themselves to wonder; and were, in truth, the preservation of that army that day. For they stood as a bulwark and rampire to defend the rest; and when their wings of horse were scattered and dispersed, kept their ground so steadily, that, though Prince Rupert himself led up the choice horse to charge them, and endured their storm of small shot, he could make no impression upon their stand of pikes, but was forced to wheel about: of so sovereign benefit and use is that readiness, order, and dexterity in the use of their arms, which hath been so much neglected."*

An account of the return of the Trained Bands and their entry into London is given in a weekly publication, which contains the following account of the proceedings:—†

"The first thing necessary to be imparted in this week's information is concerning the safe coming to town of most of the forces lately sent from the City to the army under the Earl of Essex, who had behaved with much courage at the battle between the King's Forces and the Parliamentary on Wenesday week, when it was reported that most of the City Trained Bands were cut off.

"On Thursday, the 28th September, 1643, the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and Common Council, with divers other able and worthy citizens, rode on horseback out of the City to meet them on their return, thereby testifying their great affection unto them, for their great courage and valour in the cause of God and his people. These forces consisted of The Regiment of Horse under the command of Colonel Mainwaring; the Blue and Red Regiments of the Trained Bands; the Red, Blue, and Orange Regiments of the Auxiliaries, out of which they lost the

* Clarendon's History of the Rebellion, Book VII., No. 211.

† The True Informer, No. 2, p. 10. British Museum, $\frac{E. 69}{14}$. London: 1643. 4to.

following men of note—Col. Tucker, of the Red Regiment; Capt. Hunt and two other Captains of Foot; and Capt. Ware, who commanded a troop of Horse. Most of them went through the City with green boughs in their hats in signal of victory, and also with all their colours and ensigns, which, to their perpetual honour they brought away triumphantly, notwithstanding the great danger they were in the said fight, for the great design of the Cavaliers was to have routed or surprised the City Forces, and charged more against them than any other of his Excellency's Army."

During the absence from London of the two regiments of Trained Bands, and the Auxiliaries, a Muster was held of the remaining regiments, on Tuesday, the 26th of September, in the New Artillery Garden and fields adjacent.

The several regiments were ordered to be at their several places of rendezvous at seven o'clock, and to march into the fields in the following order:—

The White Regiment to assemble in St. Paul's Churchyard where the Cross stood.

The Yellow Regiment in St. Paul's Churchyard among the Drapers.

The Green Regiment in the Old Bailey, Pye Corner, and part of Smithfield.

The Orange Regiment in Fleet Street, and to march after the Green Regiment.

The Hamlets in Smithfield and Aldersgate Street, and to march after the Orange Regiment.

The Westminster Regiment in Holborn, and down towards Newgate.

The Southwark Regiment in Gracious [Gracechurch] Street, Cannon Street, and Watling Street, and so to St. Austin's Gate, and to march after the Westminster Regiment.

The distance between companies was to be 12 feet, and between regiments 30 feet.

The Auxiliaries of the Hamlets in Fenchurch Street, and Gracious [Gracechurch] Street, were to march in the rear of the Southwark men.

The Southwark Auxiliaries were to be on the Bridge, and

Gracious [Gracechurch] Street, and to march in rear of the Hamlets.

The Companies of each regiment were to march successively according to seniority, viz., first, the Colonel's Company; second, Lieut.-Colonel's Company; third, Sergeant-Major's Company; fourth, eldest Captain's Company, &c.

The place of rendezvous to be drawn up "in a regimental way."

The four regiments of the City in the New Artillery Garden, the Hamlets and Westminster Regiments in the Upper Fields next the Windmill, on the right of the New Artillery Garden.

The Southwark regiments in the field next above the four quarters.

Both regiments of Auxiliaries to be drawn up in one body "in a regimental way," in the place where Moorditch was.

Then follows a description of the position to be taken up by the different regiments, and the exercises to be performed.*

A writer at this period observes, that at the Muster on Tuesday, the 8th of August, 1615, and also on the occasion above described, the arms and furniture, both for service and show, were well and rightly appointed, imitating the old Romans in their garnish of feathers, which was a sight brave and terrible to the enemy, but good and delightful to friends. But in their demeanour he noticed two defects, ignorance of order, and neglect of their Captains' commands.†

The following Return shows the approximate strength of the different regiments on the day of the Muster, the number of

* "The Manner of the March and Embattelling of the Trayned Bands and Auxiliaries of the City of London, Hamlets, Westminster Men, and the Burrow of Southwarke, as it was appointed by the Honourable Committee of the Militia, and performed on Tuesday, the 26th of Sept., 1643."

British Museum, $\frac{E. 69}{3}$. London: 1643, 4to.; and King's Library, B.M. 102, A. 14.

† "London's Artillery: briefly containing the Noble Practice of that Worthie Society." By Richard Niccolls. London [1643 ?]

men armed with muskets and pikes, and the names and description of most of the officers :—

TRAINED BANDS.

| Regiment. | Ensigns or Colours. | Muskets. | Pikes. | Officers. | Total. | Remarks. |
|-------------------|---------------------|----------|--------|-----------|--------|-------------|
| Red | 7 | — | — | — | 1000 | At Newbury. |
| White | 7 | 600 | 520 | 70 | 1190 | |
| Yellow | 7 | 506 | 448 | 70 | 1024 | At Newbury. |
| Blue | 7 | — | — | — | 1000 | |
| Green | 6 | 503 | 297 | 63 | 863 | |
| Orange | 6 | 630 | 408 | 63 | 1101 | |
| Tower Hamlets ... | 7 | 819 | 385 | 70 | 1274 | |
| Westminster ... | 7 | 1084 | 854 | 80 | 2018 | |
| Southwark | 9 | 868 | 456 | 70 | 1394 | |
| | 63 | 5010* | 3368* | 486* | 10,864 | |

* NOTE.—These three totals do not include the Red and Blue Regiments.

THE AUXILIARIES.

| Regiment. | Ensigns or Colours. | Estimated Strength. |
|-------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|
| Green | 7 | 1200 |
| White | 7 | 1000 |
| — ? | 7 | 1000 |
| Yellow | 8 | 1000 |
| Red | 7 | 1000 |
| Blue | 7 | 1000 |
| Orange | 7 | 1000 |
| | 50 | 7,200 |
| Total Trained Bands ... | 63 | 10,864 |
| Grand Total ... | 113 | 18,064 |

THE RED REGIMENT.

Colonel, Thomas Atkins, Alderman.

Colonel's Captain, George Mosse.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Randall Mainwaring,—“who grants their passes.”

Sergeant-Major Tucker,—“carried the prisoners out of Ely House to the Ship, afterwards was slain at Newbury.”

1st Captain, William Tomson.

2nd „ Edward Hooker.

3rd „ Laurence Bromfeild.

4th „ Richard Hunt,—“a Confectioner in Bearebinder Lane, slain at Newbury.”

WHITE REGIMENT.

Colonel, Isaac Pennington.

Colonel's Captain, Richard Verner.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Robert Davies (Davies?)

Sergeant-Major, Thomas Chamberlaine.

1st Captain, Thomas Player.

2nd „ Christopher Whichcot,—“a Merchant.”

3rd „ William Manby,—“Clerk of Leathersellers' Hall.”

4th „ Joseph Vaughan (displaced).

YELLOW REGIMENT.

Colonel, Sir John Wollaston, Kt., Alderman.

Colonel's Captain, John Brett.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Ralph Harrison,—“a Woollen Draper in Watling Street.”

Sergeant-Major, Richard Cuthbert,—“a Woollen Draper in Fleet Street, near White Friars Gate.”

1st Captain, Robert Tichburne,—“a Linen Draper by the Little Conduit in Cheapside.”

2nd Captain, Walter Lee,—“a Haberdasher in Ludgate; did break the windows of Westminster Abbey.”

3rd Captain, William Hichcock,—“a Woollen Draper, dwelling in Watling Street.”

4th Captain, —

BLUE REGIMENT.

Colonel, Thomas Adams, Alderman.

Colonel's Captain, Edward Clegatt, Thames Street.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Francis West.

Sergeant-Major, William Underwood, Garlick Hill and Queen's Hythe Company.

1st Captain, Edward Bellamy.

2nd Captain, John Booker,—“Registrar to the Commissioners of the Statute of Bankrupt dwellings in Wallbrook.”

3rd Captain, George Dipford,—“a Linen Draper or Merchant, against Bow Church, Cheapside, Company against the Standard.”

4th Captain, William Coleson,—“of the Custom House, dwells in Allhallows Barking.”

GREEN REGIMENT.

Colonel, John Warner, Alderman.

Colonel's Captain, Thomas Juxon. “Slain at Newbury on this manner.

His horse was shot in the forehead by a cannon bullet, and ran with him violently into his Majesty's army, where the horse fell down dead, and himself, mortally wounded, within few days died.”

Lieutenant-Colonel, Matthew Foster, Vintner. Put out.

Sergeant-Major, Owen Roe,—“a Mercer in Cheapside.”

1st Captain, Matthew Sheppard,—“Merchant.”

2nd Captain, Francis Roe,—“brother to Sergeant-Major Owen Roe, aforesaid.”

3rd Captain, Robert Mainwaring,—“of the Custom House, living in Aldermanbury.”

ORANGE REGIMENT.

Colonel John Towse, Alderman.

Colonel's Captain, — Boswell,—“a Tailor in the old Baylwick. The limits of this Regiment are from Ludgate to Temple Bar, Black Friars, and Bridewell, &c., part of Holborn, and all St. Sepulchre's parish.”

Lieutenant-Colonel, Rowland Wilson,—“son-in-law to Alderman Wright.”

Sergeant-Major, Nathaniel Camfield,—“a Salesman against St. Sepulchre Church.”

1st Captain, Thomas Bower,—“Holborn Company from the Bars downwards, &c.”

2nd Captain, Richard Wollaston,—“a Woollen Draper, dwelling near the Exchange, Fleet Street Company.”

3rd Captain, Myles Pettye,—“a Woollen Draper, dwelling against Holborn, Snow Hill and St. Sepulchre's Conduit Company.”

This Regiment marched the fourth into the field.

TOWER HAMLETS REGIMENT.

(HAMLETS BELONGING TO THE TOWER.)

Colonel, Lieutenant-Colonel, Sergeant-Major, and four Captains, no names or details given. Each Colour had a wreath in silver in the centre, with “*Jehova Provide Bit.*”

WESTMINSTER REGIMENT.

Without Temple Bar and the parts adjacent. Westminster Liberty.

Colonel, Sir James Harrington,—“son and heir to Sir Edward Harrington, of Ridlington, Rutland.”

Lieutenant-Colonel, —

Sergeant-Major, —

1st Captain, —

2nd Captain, George Warren,—“a Tailor in Sheere Lane, came into his office 26th of September, 1643. This Company consisted of Sheere Lane, Bell Yard (from Holborn Bar to the King's Gate), and all Purpool Lane.”

3rd Captain, —

4th Captain, —

SOUTHWARK REGIMENT.

Colonel Hudson, a Skinner in Southwark.

Lieutenant-Colonel, ——

Sergeant-Major, ——

And Six Captains.

THE AUXILIARIES.

These regiments did not march into the field with the Trained Bands, but mustered by themselves, some in the New Artillery Yard, the others in Moorfields.

GREEN REGIMENT.

Colonel Whichcott, Cripplegate Auxiliaries.

Lieutenant-Colonel, ——

Sergeant-Major, ——

And Four Captains.

Mustered in the Artillery Yard by Moorfields.

WHITE REGIMENT.

Colonel Maurice, (?)

Lieutenant-Colonel, ——

Sergeant-Major, ——

And Four Captains.

——— REGIMENT.

This Regiment mustered in Moorfields, but it being night before the Trained Bands all marched into the fields, could not be distinguished.

Same number of all ranks as above.

YELLOW REGIMENT.

Colonel, Charles Tichborne.

Lieutenant-Colonel, ——

Sergeant-Major, ——

And Five Captains.

The Sergeant-Majors and No. 5 Company mustered by themselves in a pasture by the Windmills; they each consisted of 112 Muskets and 30 Pikes.

THE REGIMENT OF DRAGOONS.

This Regiment mustered in the Artillery Yard: they belonged to Captain Waller, and numbered about 500 men. They carried five Standards, with blue balls on a yellow ground, according to the number of the troop—one to five.

Until the reign of Queen Anne every Company carried a "Colour"; those used by the Trained Bands, at this time, were of the same colour as the name of the regiment denotes; thus, the

Red Regiment bore a red flag, the devices on each being different in the several regiments. The Colonel's colour was perfectly plain, the Lieut.-Colonel's had the red cross of St. George on a white ground in the first quarter; the remainder were similar, with the addition of a number of devices, such as a diamond, trefoil, ball, or other such device, corresponding to the number of the Company; the Sergeant-Major [Major] having one such mark, the senior Captain two, and so on.*

On the 16th of October, the Red Regiment of the Westminster Trained Bands, the Green Regiment of the Auxiliaries of the City, and the Yellow Regiment of Auxiliaries of the Tower Hamlets, were called out, and served under Sir William Waller, taking part in the skirmish at Alton, Farnham, and Basing-house, returning to London on Wednesday, the 20th of December.†

The City was again called upon to furnish troops in 1644, when, on the 12th of April, the Court of Common Council were informed that Parliament intended to bring to a speedy issue the unhappy and lingering distractions which the kingdom had had for so many years; and that, in consequence of the enemy's overthrow by Sir William Waller's forces, the enemy were compelled to draw all their garrisons together, so that all the Parliamentary Forces on the south side of the Trent, and

* The above returns are taken from a valuable MS. in the Royal United Service Institution, which also contains sketches of all the company "Colours" of the Trained Bands, in their proper colours. "The Ensignes of the Regiments in the Rebellious City of London, both of Trayned Bands and Auxiliaries; together with the nearest number of their Trayned Soldiers, taken as they marched into Finsbury Feilds, being their last General Muster, Tuesday, Sept. 26th, 1643."

† An interesting diary of these proceedings is given in "A True Relation of the Marchings of the Red Trained Bands of Westminster, the Green Auxiliaries of London, and the Yellow Auxiliaries of the Tower Hamlets, under the command of Sir William Waller, from Monday, the 16th of October, to Wednesday, the 20th of December, 1643; briefly delineating most of the chiefest Passages in the Service, performed by Sir William Waller, at Basing, Farnham, and Alton, &c. By Elias Archer, Lieutenant to Capt. William Archer. London: 1643. 4to." British Museum (King's Pamphlets), 101. b. 64. See Clarendon's History of the Rebellion, Book VIII., Nos. 9-15.

those expected to be furnished by the City, were required to be drawn together near Aylesbury by the 19th inst.

The Court, to demonstrate their hearty zeal and affection for the defence of the City and Kingdom, thought it very fit and needful that the Commanders of the Militia should draw forth the six Regiments of the Auxiliaries, and that three of them should be forthwith sent upon the expedition to join the Parliamentary Forces near Aylesbury, "to put an end, by God's blessing, to the sad and lamentable distractions"; and the other three regiments to be drawn forth when occasion should require.

On the 19th of April, the three Regiments of Auxiliaries being ready were ordered to march towards Uxbridge, according to directions received from Essex, and Parliament was requested not to sanction their being kept longer away, or sent further from London, than the Committee of Militia should from time to time think fit, and also that they might be commanded by such Major-General and officers as the Committee should appoint.*

Parliament again made a request, on the 9th of September, for more troops to send to the West, and on the 30th of that month the Court of Common Council resolved to call out the Trained Bands of Westminster, one regiment from Southwark, the Auxiliaries of the Tower Hamlets, and the Red and Blue Regiments of the Trained Bands, provided the Militia Committee could raise the necessary means for the same.†

The Committee appointed by the Court on the 30th of March, and 8th of April, "Concerning a contribution of the value of one meal in the week," towards the charge of arming, and forming the Auxiliaries into six regiments, presented the following account, which was ordered to be paid.‡

| | | s. | d. | £ | s. | d. |
|-------------------------|-----|----|------|--------|------|----|
| 3,000 Muskets and Rests | ... | at | 15 0 | 2,250 | 0 0 | |
| 3,000 Bandoliers | ... | " | 1 6 | 206 | 5 4 | |
| 1,000 English Pikes | ... | " | 5 4 | 266 | 13 4 | |
| 4,500 Belts | ... | " | 0 10 | 187 | 10 0 | |
| 1,500 Swords | ... | " | 5 6 | 412 | 10 0 | |
| Carried forward | ... | | | £3,322 | 18 8 | |

* Letter Book QQ, ff. 108, 112.

† Idem, ff. 128, 129.

‡ Idem, f. 108.

| | s. | d. | £ | s. | d. |
|---|----|-----|---------------|----------|----------|
| Brought forward | | | 3,322 | 18 | 8 |
| 5,000 Swords, at Cutlers' Hall | | | | | |
| 300 Long-bows | at | 4 8 | 70 | 0 | 0 |
| 300 Sheafs of Arrows | „ | 0 5 | 75 | 0 | 0 |
| 300 Pathradoes and Engins | „ | 2 2 | 32 | 10 | 0 |
| 3,000 Leather cases for the Arrows | „ | 1 0 | 15 | 0 | 0 |
| Trophies for the Six Regiments | | | 840 | 0 | 0 |
| | | | <u>£4,355</u> | <u>8</u> | <u>8</u> |

In April, 1646, the annual muster of the Trained Bands took place: 100 barrels of powder were ordered to be ready for their use, and £218 was voted by the Court of Common Council for the entertainment of the Lords and Commons, who came to see them train in Hyde Park.

On the 5th of June, 1647, Colonel William Webb was appointed "Agitant," with an allowance of £120 per annum, to carry out the directions of the Militia Committee for ordering the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries.*

On the 22nd of May, 1648, the Auxiliaries were ordered to be completed with apprentices and other persons not already in the Trained Bands.

On the 5th of August, the Commissioners, in order to strengthen the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries, appointed a Colonel, Major, and five Captains of Horse, for the defence of the King, Parliament and the City; and it was notified that if anyone was willing to provide horses, arms, or money for the same, it would be accounted very acceptable service.†

In 1650, an Order was issued, dated 28th of August, for 1,000 matchlock muskets, 500 snaphaunce muskets, 500 pikes, 1,500 collars of bandoliers, and 2,000 swords, to be delivered to Major-General Harrison, for the arming of such of the London *Volunteer Regiments* as wanted arms, and were ready for service, security being given for their restoration, unless lost in actual service.‡

* Letter Book QQ, ff. 217, 274.

† Fol. Sheet $\frac{669, f. 12}{30}$ and $\frac{669, f. 12}{101}$ in British Museum.

‡ Domestic, Charles I., Vol. 9, No. 151 [I. 9, p. 48].

On the 4th of June, an Act, for one year, was passed, to enable the City Militia to raise a body of Horse for the defence of the Parliament and City. No person was to be liable to provide more than two horses and riders ; but if the number required were not found within eight days a fine of £20 was imposed ; and men who did not appear when called out were liable to a fine of £2, or four days' imprisonment.

An Act was also, passed on the 25th of June, constituting Major-General Philip Skippon Major-General and Commander-in-Chief of all the forces in the City.*

1651.—On the 9th of September, Colonel Berkstead was ordered to inspect the Artillery Ground in Tothill Fields, to see how many prisoners from Worcester could be kept there, and what expense would be necessary for fitting it up. A number of prisoners were afterwards sent there.†

On the 17th of September, the Council of State ordered the Militia Committee of London to disband the Militia, the full victory against the enemy that invaded the country leaving no further cause for keeping up that force ; and desired them to thank the officers and soldiers for their great cheerfulness and diligence, and alacrity to appear and act in this exigency.‡

The Trained Bands throughout the country were ordered to be disbanded before the 25th of March, 1663, but those of London were excepted, and they continued as "Trained Bands" until the year 1794, when, on the 7th of July, an Act§ received the Royal assent for their re-organisation, from which time they have been known as the London "Militia."

* Fol. Sheet 669, f. 15
36 & 37 in British Museum.

† Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. XVI., No. 2.

‡ Idem, No. 39 [I. 96, p. 539].

§ 34 Geo. III., cap. 81.

CHAPTER VI.

FROM THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE CIVIL WAR TO THE
DEATH OF CHARLES I.

FROM 1642 TO 1649.

CONTENTS.—Improvements in Moorfields, 1606 to 1631.—Master Nicholas Leate.—Petitions of the Company for a New Ground, 1614-1640.—The Old, or King's, Artillery Garden.—Inhabitants of Bunhill petition House of Lords.—The Lords direct building to be suspended.—Petition of the Company against this Order.—Referred to Committee for Petitions.—Howe's Description of the Ground.—Days of Exercise.—Strength of the Company.—Ancient Origin of the Windmills.—License to Thomas Wells, of Calais, to erect one in 1558.—Survey of Manor of Finsbury.—Alderman Bunce elected President.—Major-General Skippon rejected as Leader.

THE condition of the country about Finsbury and Moorfields in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, and how, from being a tract of waste and swampy ground, it was gradually reclaimed, and formed at one time into gardens, and afterwards into fields for the Archers to shoot in, has been already fully described.*

Further improvements appear to have been commenced about the year 1606, as at a Court of Common Council, held on the 14th of October, it was ordered that as many of the rails belonging to the several Companies as were necessary should be employed for railing the new work in Moorfields, and the remainder were to be kept for the use of the Companies.†

The work of enclosing seems to have been continued, and,

* See pp. 22-24, and Howel's *Londinopolis*, p. 67.

† Letter Book, Vol. CC, f. 175, and Journal, Vol. XXVII., f. 89.



BUNHILL, MOORFIELDS, AND THE OLD ARTILLERY YARD, OR GARDEN, IN 1638.

(Heliotype Facsimile, reduced, from Richard Newcourt's Plan of London.)

on the 7th of July, 1609, the Court of Common Council gave orders that the brick wall on the south part of the Moorfields, by the side of the Moorditch, should be forthwith completed in a similar manner to that already begun there, the cost being defrayed by the Chamber and the Bridge-house.*

On the 23rd of May, 1622, a brick wall was ordered to be at once made on the west side of Little Moorfields, without Moor-gate, like the one built on the east side of the way, a sufficient passage being left for a cart.†

These alterations were carried on for many years. In 1631, a number of trees were planted, and upwards of a thousand loads of gravel, from the Thames, were spread on the walks and roads about there.‡

In these improvements "several citizens lent a hand, among which there was none like Master Nicholas Leate, a very grave, wise, and well-affected citizen, and one of the twenty Captains of the City Trained Bands (he was also a member of the Company), "who took great pains from the commencement of this work, and finished the first field, called Moorfield, and expended considerable sums of money both for repairing the highway and for reducing the two other fields into that comely shape and pleasant manner that they now are, by making walls and planting trees, which was done at the expense of the City."§ The New Artillery Garden was the third great field next the six Windmills.

In February, 1614, the Artillery Company petitioned the Corporation for some convenient place for exercise, and the Uppermost Field, near Finsbury, was granted to them in the month of May for that purpose.||

Partly on account of the increase of their numbers, as some

* Letter Book, Vol. DD, f. 57, and Journal, Vol. XXVII., f. 389.

† Idem, Vol. HH, f. 180.

‡ The receipted bills, giving the various details and the cost and number of the trees and loads of gravel, &c., will be found in the Rawlinson MSS., B, 385, pp. 131-5.—Bodleian Library.

§ Strype's Stow, Book III., p. 70; Howe's Stow, p. 945; and Howel's Londinopolis, p. 301.

|| See pp. 42, 43.

authorities state, but probably from being tired of the long and constant disputes as to their right to the Old (or, as it was then sometimes called, the King's) Artillery Garden, the Company were desirous to obtain a piece of ground for their own exclusive use, whereon they could erect an Armoury, and carry on their exercises without trouble or molestation.

They had applied, as early as October, 1635, to the Court of Aldermen for this purpose, who appointed a committee to consider their request; but, as already shown, no report was made on the subject until 1641, in which year a formal grant of the Ground to them was completed.

They continued to assemble at the New Ground in Bunhill Fields, as well as at the Old Artillery Ground, until about the year 1658, when they permanently transferred their Armoury to the present ground, then known as the New Artillery Garden.

Some opposition was at first offered by the inhabitants to the ground being enclosed, and they presented the following Petition, dated the 19th of May, to the House of Lords, against the Company being permitted to build a wall round it, but they do not appear to have been successful in their endeavours.*

"To the right honorable the Lords Spirituall and temporall of the high Court of Parliament.

*"The humble peticon of the Inhabitant of Bunhill feilds
& the pts nere adioyninge,*

"Most humbly shewinge that:

"Whereas the Military Gentlemen of London doe make suite to have theis feilds for their military garden, as thinking them most convenient for their vse, This their only conveniency wilbe necessarily attended with many evils and mischeifes to a great multitude, especially to all the adiacent ptes of the Cittie, and above all to vs the Inhabitants of this place.

* Petitions, House of Lords, 1641; and Fourth Report of the Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts, p. 64.

"For, first, vpon the buildinge of an high brick wall about this feild, all that passe by shall loose the beautie of a delightfull prospect into the feilds, and have their sight bounded with a deade wall of fifteene foote high.

"2^y, All this pte of the Cittie, and especially the Archers who goe out this way to walke and recreate themselves, shall by the same high wall be hindred and discouraged, seeinge their now pleasant passage will become a noysome lane and no better than a laystall, & by meanes & thereof y^e Inhabitants wilbe forced to aneu charge to hire a Scavenger to carry away their soyle.

"3^y, It will expose many to much danger, as those that ride in the adioyninge roade by frightinge their horses & causing them to cast their Riders, those also that passe by in the night to the pill of Robbers whome they cannot shun by reason of the narrow passage betweene two walls, and all others who goe this way in the eveninge by beinge frighted when they in their narrow straits unavoydably meete with sidans carrying psons. infected with the plague, this beinge the most usuall way that leadeth from the Cittie to the Pesthowse.

"4^y, This feild borderinge so neere vpon many howses it must neede be very p*ri*udiciall to all that are sick & in Childbedd, when as they are disquieted with the shott, and to all that have layed out the greatest pte of their estates vpon howses and gardens which are likely to prove of little worth by reason of theis annoyances.

"5^y, They intend by enclosinge this feild to take in and stopp vp a comon passage that leadeth from the street to y^e wind mill and Hogsden, to take downe one of the wind mills and 3 or 4 dwelling howses, & by their high brick wall to take away both the benefitt of the Sunne and ayre from the passage and all the howses adioyninge vnto it, to the great annoyance of the neighbouringe Inhabitants & all passingers that have occasion to goe that way. All theis and many other mischeives & inconveniences which tyme and experience will too lately discover may beinge duly considered much overpoyse a bare conveniency of the military gentlemen, who might be otherwise fitted with a place for their garden, which may as

well accommodate them, and not produce so much hurt vnto such a numerous multitude.

"May it therefore please this most noble and honorable howse to p'serue & confirme the lawes & comissions yet in force, whereby the liberties and livelyhood of the Bowyers and Fletchers, and likewise of all vs the Inhabitants about theis feilds, are vpheld & mainteyned: And to appointe some comissioners to search and finde out some other place for the Artillary garden; or at least that some order be taken to stopp their proceedings in buildinge the wall about the feilde vntill theis inconveniences & greevances be further examined, seeinge they have begun allreadye to send in materialls for the settinge vp of the said wall, before o^r cause be heard or their suite granted by this honourabl^e howse, although the matter be dependinge in this honorable Court by peticon formerly exhibited by the Bowyers for o^r releife, as yet not answered.

"Soe shall yo^r peticoners, as we are ever most bounden, pray for yo^r healthes & prosperities in this life, and your eternall happiness in the world to come."

Then follow the signatures of fifty-two of the Petitioners, and "a nvmb^r mor then can be contayned in this papar."

On the 27th of May, the Lords ordered that the Cause of the inhabitants of Bunhill Fields should be heard before the Lords' Committee for Petitions on the following Tuesday afternoon; and in the meantime the building of the wall in the said field, which was then in course of erection by the Artillery Men, was to be stayed until the Cause was heard before their Lordships.*

On the 4th of June the Company petitioned the Lords to be allowed to proceed with their work, so as to be able to complete it that year: this they were probably permitted to do, as there is no further reference to the case after this date. The Petition, which is endorsed "Captaines of London," was as follows:—†

* Lords' Journals, Vol. IV., p. 258.

† House of Lords, Petitions, 1641.

*"To the right ho^{ble} the Lords Spirituall and Temporall Assembled
in the highe Court of Parliamt^t*

"The humble Peticon of the Captaines, Lieftennants, Ensignes, and all other the Artillery men exercising Armes wth in the Citty of London.

"They humbly shew that whereas the Lord Maior of the Citty of London the Aldermen and Comon Councill men of the same Citty have graunted vnto the Society exercising Armes in the Artillery Garden a Plott of ground, about 11 acres, being p^t of Bunhill Feilds, to make them a convenient ground to exercise Armes in.

"That the Inhabitants nere the same ground have petitioned this ho^{ble} assembly to make stopp of our worke already begun to our great cost and chardges vntill yo^r Lo^{pp}s shall heer the cause.

"Yo^r Lo^{pp}s thereupon appointed two severall daies of hearing w^{ch} by reason of yo^r Lo^{pp}s other greate occasions could not be heard.

"May it therefore please this ho^{ble} house to sett downe a p^{re}emptory day for hearing, and in the meane tyme that our workmen may goe forward wth the worke now begun, for that the comon people make vse of our materialls wth out consent.

"And the bussiness is of such greate consequence, that if the season be left wee shall not be able to p^{re}fect our Wall this Summer.

"And we shall ever pray, &c.

| | |
|--------------------|-------------------|
| "MARMADUKE RAWDON, | RAND. MAINWARING, |
| JO. SMART, | JOHN BRADLEY, |
| PETER MILL, | WILL. MANBYE." |

The Lords ordered that the Cause concerning the inhabitants of Bunhill and the Artillery should be heard on the following Wednesday, before the Committee for Petitions,* but there is no record of any further proceedings in this matter.

Another reason given for their removing was because their

* Lords Journals, Vol. IV., p. 264; and Fourth Report of the Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts, p. 71.

musters were larger than the Old Ground could contain, being sometimes 6,000 men.

The New Ground is said to have consisted of about ten acres, enclosed with a high brick wall. The Leaders exercised the Company every Tuesday fortnight; on the intermediate Tuesdays the Members took the command.*

The windmills here mentioned were of very ancient date, and long continued to be one of the principal landmarks in Finsbury, of which mention is often made, and the site is now marked by Windmill Street, in the City Road.

The earliest mention of a windmill being erected here occurs in the reign of Philip and Mary, on the 10th of March, 1558, when, at a Court of Common Council, "Thomas Wells, late of Calleys, for dyvrse good and reasonable consideracons, movynge the same Courte, was lycensyd forasmooch as they mighte at this p'sent lawfully graunte, newly to erecte and set up a wyndemyll for his owne comodyty and use upon the Cytyes fferme grounde at the leystowe in ffynnesburey ffelde, on the Easte syde of the Myll there lately set up by Sr George Barne, Knighte and Alderman of this Cyty, while he levyd."†

A Commission was issued by Parliament to ascertain the value, by a general survey, of all the estates of the Church. The Manor of Finsbury was found to be appropriated to one of the Prebends of St. Paul's Cathedral, and it therefore received a close inspection. The survey is dated August, 1649, and is deposited among the archives of the Corporation of the City of London. It states that twelve acres, or thereabouts, of the field called Bunhill Field, were then enclosed with a brick wall and a pale, commonly called or known by the name of the New Artillery Ground, four acres and a half of which was freehold land belonging to the said manor.‡

* Strype's Stow, Book III., p. 70, and Book V., pp. 456, 457. The Company certainly never mustered 6,000 strong, as the Register of Members in the Great Vellum Book will show, if proof were necessary. The number here given is probably an error for 600, unless all the Trained Bands were also included in this total.

† Letter Book, Vol. S, f. 159.

‡ Highmore, pp. 75, 76; and Ellis's Shoreditch, p. 242.

1645.—At a Court of Aldermen, on the 15th of April, Colonel West, and divers others of the Society Practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, declared their choice of Mr. Alderman Bunce to be their President, and Major-General Skippon to be their Leader, and desired the Court's approbation. Alderman Bunce and Mr. Sheriff Chambers being put in nomination for the place of President, the Court "did freely and lovingly elect" the former; but disproved of Major-General Skippon being Captain or Leader.*

* Repertory, Vol. LVII., Part II., f. 94.

CHAPTER VII.

STATE OF THE COMPANY DURING THE COMMONWEALTH.

FROM 1649 TO 1660.

CONTENTS.—Decline of the Company.—The Cavaliers.—Search for concealed Money in Finsbury.—Trained Bands and the Artillery Ground.—The Company of Archers.—Society of Finsbury Archers.—Duties of their Stewards.—Prize Meetings in Artillery Garden.—Number of Competitors.—Their Rules and Orders.—Captains and Lieutenants.—The Easter Target, 1658-1757.—The Whitsuntide Target, 1692-1754.—Finsbury Archers incorporated with Artillery Company.—First Court Book of the Company, 1657.—Election of Officers.—Old Artillery Garden still used.—Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Leaders on General and Private Days.—Old Armoury sold for £300.—Major-General Skippon Captain of the Company.—Election at the General Court, 1658.—The Annual Dinner.—Procession to St. Paul's.—Bill in Chancery against Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Sale of Armoury to the Master-Gunner completed.—The Company escort Lord Mayor.—The Lord Mayor's Show and Pageants.—Custom of Company to take part in it.—Summons to attend Lord Protector's Funeral.—Wall of Ground to be completed.—Petition to Parliament against Manby.—Three General Days fixed.—Court of Assistants to lead in turn.—Compensation for breaking a Man's Head.—Members in Arrears of Quarterage not to remove their Arms.

THERE is but little to show the condition of the Company during the earlier years of the Commonwealth; but they had undoubtedly declined in numbers, no members having been admitted since April, 1644. This, according to Highmore, is accounted for by the Company, before the close of the Civil War, having fallen into the hands of the Cavaliers, who, "among other acts of defiance to the public claims, seized upon the records of

this Company, and deprived posterity of the satisfaction of those internal sources of information which are now sought for in vain." *

On the 31st of October, 1650, a Warrant for £100 was signed to make a place in the [Old] Artillery Ground for proving small guns with safety, and repairing the house where the muskets were kept.†

A Warrant was issued by Cromwell, dated the 21st of March, 1654, to search for concealed money in Usurer's Walk, in Finsbury Fields, going towards the New Artillery Ground.‡

At a meeting of the Commissioners of Militia, on the 29th of March, 1655, to consider a proposal of the Commanders of the three regiments to allow them to exercise in the Artillery Garden, it was resolved that such citizen as desired, and were approved of by the Commanders, should be admitted into the Artillery Garden "as an Artillery Company," to exercise, observing such rules and directions as they should receive from the Lord Protector, or Commissioners of Militia, and Major-General Skippon was recommended to His Highness to be Commander of the said Company.§

There appears to have been a Society of Archers in existence previous to 1636, but at what place there is no record to show. The account of Kielway Guidott, "Steward of the Company of Archers," dated the 25th of February, 1636, was submitted to the Company "by reason of the death of his partner, Thomas Naylor. He had received from the last Stewards 7s. 8d., and by contributions, from the gentlemen of the Company, 38s. 6d., and had expended 12s., of which he gives a more particular account."||

* Highmore, p. 73. This fact is doubtful, and is not mentioned by Blackwell. The Records were probably removed by Lieutenant-Colonel William Manby, the Treasurer, as will be seen hereafter. See pp. 156, 158, 163, 167.

† Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. XIV., I. 28, I. 100.

‡ Rawlinson MSS., Copy of Warrants and Passports from Crown, Vol. A 328, p. 13.

§ Idem, Vol. A 24, p. 499.

|| Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCCXIV., No. 81; and Calendar of State Papers, p. 254.

The Society of Finsbury Archers was established about this period, to which many members of the Company also belonged. They assembled annually to shoot for prizes, generally in the Artillery Garden, and were afterwards incorporated with the Company.

The earliest mention of them occurs in 1652, when two Stewards for the year were elected to make the necessary arrangements for the shooting and the feast. The Great Fire in 1666 put an end for a time to their meetings, which were also suspended during the two following years, from which time they were continued without intermission until 1757.

In 1670, Sir Reginald Foster, Bart., and Warwick Ledgingham, Esq., the stewards, gave two silver arrows of 11 oz. 5 dwt.; and one having been lost, Mr. Ellis, one of the stewards in 1672, gave another one to replace it, weighing 12 oz. 5 dwts.

On Monday, the 14th of August, 1671, the meeting was held in the Artillery Garden, every person paying an entrance fee of £1 towards the prizes. As a rule not more than about a dozen assembled; in the above-named year there were thirty; in 1702 the meeting was attended by seventy-two members: these numbers, however, do not appear to represent their strength, as, on St. Simon and St. Jude's day, in 1676, some 350 archers, under the command of Sir R. Peyton, Kt., assembled in Moorfields, and marched to the Guildhall, where the King and Queen were going to dine with the Lord Mayor.*

In the British Museum there is a large parchment sheet containing the "Articles agreed upon by the Society of Archers for the well-ordering and regulating of their game, yearly to be shot at in Finsbury Fields, or other place near adjoining, more especially for the present year 1687." This document also contains the names of the Captain and Lieutenant, and the number of competitors in each year from 1658 to 1757.† These rules are referred to in the revised copy which was

* Collection of Notes on Finsbury Archers, by W. Latham, F.S.A. Additional MSS., British Museum, No. 29,792.

† Sir S. Meyrick's Loyal Archers of Great Britain; Additional MSS., No. 28,801, British Museum.

drawn up in 1754, by Mr. John Robinson, when the former ones are spoken of as being "Comonly called the Easter Orders, given to the Company in 1687, by William Wood, their Marshal," and as they were capable of amendment they were then revised, and a new list made of the names of all the "Captains, Lieutenants, and number of Archers who shot at the Easter Target," from 1658, which list is continued to the 13th of April, 1757. Another register gives similar details relating to "the Whitsuntide Target," from the year 1692 (when it was probably first instituted), to 1754; the last entry being dated the 14th of May, 1761; and also the Regulations, dated the 14th of August, 1671, relating to the shooting in the Artillery Ground, the names of subscribers, and a list of Stewards from 1652 to 1756.* These so called "Easter" and "Witsun Targets" probably denote the time of year at which the two competitions were held, and they were discontinued when they amalgamated with the Company.

1657.—With this year the earliest Minute Books of the Company now in existence commence, from which time they are complete down to the present day. The first entry is dated the 21st of January, from the Irish Chamber in the Guildhall, recording a meeting of the Court of Assistants, when "several petitions" were presented for the "places of Clerk and Gunsmith;" James Ragge was elected to the former, and William Thompson (on the recommendation of Sir John Barkstead) was chosen Gunsmith. At the next Court, held on the 28th of January, Thomas Moulson was elected Beadle (giving security for £5), "whose office is to summons the whole Company, and to collect the moneys for the Treasurer." On the 4th of February several applications were received for the place of Sergeant, to which Captain William Walden and Captain David Tooley

* The Society of Finsbury Archers' MSS., Guildhall Library, 3 vols. There is a very complete account of Archers and Archery given in a "Collection for a History of Archery," by William Latham. F.S.A., 1787; Additional MSS., Nos. 29,788, 29,789, British Museum. See also "The Book of Archery," by G. A. Hansard, Gwent Bowman.

were chosen, and Walter Thompson was appointed Cloak Keeper. Two drummers were elected on the 11th of February, viz., John Byley and Henry Russell, and John Rogers was appointed Gatekeeper of the new ground.

The Company still retained the use of the Old Artillery Garden; and on the 11th of September a parade was ordered there for the 22nd, to march through the City to the New Artillery Garden.

On the 21st of October the Court of Assistants ordered a petition to be drawn up and presented to His Highness on behalf of the Artillery Company, against Lieutenant-Colonel Manby, the late Treasurer; and that an order should be drawn up for His Highness the Lord Protector to sign; and on the 9th of November a deputation was appointed to request Major-General Skippon to present it.

At a meeting of the Court, on the 30th of November, Colonel Sheppard was desired to lead in the Artillery Ground upon the Tuesday following, and to continue his leadings upon General days until the day of election, or to appoint some one else in his place; and on Private days members were to lead in the ground according to seniority. Colonel Sheppard was also desired "to speake to ye Company, and to pasifie theyre Distempers, that noe mutiny may arise amongst them."

On the 29th of December, it was agreed between the Court of Assistants and Mr. Wollaston, Master-Gunner, that he should purchase the Armoury House in the Old Artillery Ground for £300—half to be paid down, and the remainder on the 25th of March following.

1658.—At a meeting of the Court, in the Gallery at the Guildhall, on the 13th of January, it was resolved that the Company should attend the funeral of Alderman Underwood, he having given the Company £40; and Major-General Skippon was requested to lead the Company.

The first General Court in the New Artillery Ground was held in the Armoury, on Tuesday, the 26th of January, when the President caused to be read the [Petition of the] Commissioners for the Militia of London, dated 1655, expressing their

desire "for settling an Artillery Company, and also His Highness's approbation thereupon."*

Major-General Skippon, being present, was pleased to acknowledge himself Captain of the Company, but said that they must not expect so much from him as formerly, by reason of the multiplicity of business that lay upon him, but that his earnest desire was for the prosperity of the Company.

The number elected to serve for the year was as follows:—President, Deputy-President, Treasurer, 24 Assistants, 8 Stewards, 2 Leaders (in place of Skippon), 2 Lieutenants, 2 Ensigns, 4 Surveyors of Arms, 1 Clerk, 1 Beadle, 2 Sergeants, 1 Marshal, 2 Drummers, 1 Fifer, 1 Armourer, 1 Gunsmith, and 1 Cloak-keeper.

On the 6th of April, at a Court held in the New Artillery Ground, two officers were appointed to remove the Arms and other belongings from the Old Artillery Ground.

On the 16th of April the Clerk was ordered to read over the names of members who had joined "since the reviving of the Company by his Highness the Lord Protector."

A large book was ordered to be provided, on the 29th of June, in which to enter the names of members in alphabetical order.

The annual dinner or feast of the Company was fixed for the 18th of August, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, for which the following regulations were made:—

The Aldermen, being members of the Company, Field Officers, and Captains, to pay five shillings each. For Aldermen not members, the Stewards were to receive 6s. 8d. Those belonging to the Militia who were not members were to be invited, and the Treasurer to allow 6s. 8d each for them. For the Lord Mayor and twelve officers half-a-crown each was allowed.

* The Lord Mayor and Commanders of the Militia applied to Cromwell, in March, 1655, for leave to revive the power of the Artillery Company, for the better disciplining the citizens, whereby they might upon any emergency be enabled to act together for his defence, and promised that none should be admitted into the Company but such as were well affected to His Highness. The Protector readily assented to this request, and, taking the patronage of the Company, he appointed Skippon their Captain-General. Maitland, Vol. I., p. 422; Highmore, p. 79; and Whitelock's Memorials, Vol. IV., p. 189.

The Company assembled in the Artillery Garden on the 18th of August, and from thence marched to St Paul's Church, where the Rev. Mr. Griffith preached a sermon, and then marched to Merchant Taylors' Hall, to dinner, in the following order :—

The MARSHALL of the COMPANY, in his bufcoat, scarfe, sword, feather, gauntlet, and truncheon.

Four Marshalls, in buff coats, scarfes, feathers, swords, and truncheons.

Eight Stewards, with gilt staves, swords, and scarfes, two in rank.

Next place for y^e Lord Mayore, Alderman, Ministers, and other Guests, two in rank, who meet y^e Company at church, and after the sermon marched in their places to Merchant Taylors' Hall according to their degree:

The Right Hon^{ble} ALDERMAN CHINERTON,

Being Lord Mayor, went afoot, in his scarlet gown, with the mace and sword both borne before him.

The SHERIFFS and ALDERMEN, in their scarlet gowns likewise.

Four Marshalls, in like habit as before.

The Right Hon. the LORD TICHBORNE, being President.

Four Marshalls, as before.

The Worshipful Sir JOHN IRETON, Deputy-President.

Four Marshalls, as before.

Colonel MATHEW SHEPPEARD, Treasurer, who likewise supplied the place of the Captain of the Company, having ye Leadinge Staffe born by him by another that marched without a cloak.

The ASSISTANTS, in their cloaks, with swords, feathers, and white staves.

The CAPTAINS of the Trayned Bands and Field Officers, two in ranks.

The COMPANY, in their cloaks, swords, and feathers,
two in rank likewise.

The LIEUTENANT in the reare, in his cloak, sword, and feather, having his partisan born by another that marched by him without a cloak.

The ELDEST SERGEANT attended the President, the other the Captain.

Dinner being ended, they proceeded to the election of new Stewards, every Steward having two Marshalls and a Drummer to attend him, and every Steward wearing a laurel upon his head, which he put upon the new elected Steward's head.

The Motto—"Love hates Division."

At a Court held on the 24th of August, the Rev. Mr. Griffith was desired to print the sermon he preached before the Company at St. Paul's. The arms and lumber were at the same time ordered to be removed from the old Armoury, and as there was no place in the New Ground to put them, they applied for permission to store them in Grocers' Hall.

The President was directed to prefer a Bill in Chancery against Lieut.-Colonel Manby, for the recovery of the plate and money in his possession belonging to the Company.

The first instalment of the purchase-money for the Old Armoury was paid on the 25th of August, and the remaining £150 on the 29th of September, by which the transaction, after much negotiation, was thus completed; the sale extended only to the building, but from this date the Company appear to have severed their connection with the Old Artillery Ground, and to have left it entirely to the Master-Gunner and Gunners of the Tower.

Copy of the Receipt for £300, the Purchase by Mr. Wollaston, of the Old Artillery Ground.

"Received the 29th day of September, in the yeare of our Lord 1658, by mee, James Ragge, Clerk of the Artillery Company of London, by the appointment and to the use of the said Company, of Richard Wollaston, of London, Esq., the sume of Three hundred pounds of lawful money of England, in full payment and satisfaction, of and for the Armoury with the Courthouse, and all other the structures and buildings belonginge to the said Company, scituate and beinge in the Old Artillery Garden, neere the Spittle, in the parish of Stepney Heath, *alias* Stepney, Bottolph Without Bishopsgate, and Leonard, Shore-ditch, or some or any of them in the County of Middlesex, which the said Company did heretofore erect and build att their own proper Costs and charges, by virtue of an Order graunted to the said Company by the late Kinge James and his Counsell, in the yeare of our Lord, 1622. Whereby the said Company were authorised thereunto, and to exercise armes in the said Artillery Garden: and in full payment and satisfaccon of and for all the State, right, title, interest, terme of yeares, possession,

reversion, property, claym, and demand whatsoever, of the said Company, of, into, and out of the said Armoury and building, and every part and parcel thereof, and of, in, and to all other the priveleges and advantages belonginge to the said Armoury and buildings, granted to the said Company by the same Order, or otherwise howsoever. To hold the said premises unto the said Richard Wollaston, his heires, Executors, Admynistrators, and Assignes, as amply to all intents and purposes whatsoever, as the said Company may, might, should, or ought to have held and enjoyed the same by any ways and means whatsoever or howsoever; so that the said Company and their successors, members of the said Company, and every of them, of and from all challenges, claims, and demands of, into or out of the said premises, and every or any part or parcel thereof, are and shall bee, by theis presents, for ever barred and excluded; and it is promised by the said Company to the said Richard Wollaston. his heires, executors, administrators, and assigns, that within one month next after the said Company, or any by their appointment, or to their use, shall receive or recover the said Order (which is now wanteing), and other writeings which concern the premisses; the same shall be delivered to the said Richard Wollaston, his heires, Executors, Administrators, and Assigns. In witness whereof, I, the said James Ragge, have hereunto sett my hand and seale, the day and yeare first above written by the appointment and direcon of ye now President, Deputy-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of the said Company, who have ordered the Registringe hereof in the booke belonginge to the said Company, as an evidence of the sale of the premises to the said Richard Wollaston, his heires, Executors, Administrators, or Assignees, accordinge to the true purporte and true meaninge hereof.

“JAMES RAGGE.”

It having been the custom to wait on every member who became Lord Mayor, a deputation was appointed by the Court, on the 6th of October, to inform the Lord Mayor elect that the Company intended to wait on him on the day he went to Westminster to take the oath. Accordingly, on the 29th of October,

when the Lord Mayor, on his return from Westminster, landed at Baynard's Castle, the gentlemen of the Artillery Ground met him, with the Marshal, drums, fifes, trumpets, colours, Silkworks, Pensioners, Gentlemen Ushers, "Budge Batchellors, and Foynes Batchellors," ready to march, and they led the way through Thames Street, Dowgate, and Walbrook, to the Stocks. As a rule, the Lord Mayor landed at Blackfriars, and was received by the Artillery Company, or, as they were often styled, "the Military Glory of the Nation," who fired three volleys, and then led the way to the Guildhall.*

The Lord Mayor's Shows, or Pageants, are of ancient origin. Under the Charter granted to the City by King John, in May, 1214, every new Mayor was to be presented to the King for his approbation. The earliest show of which there is any mention is that recorded by Matthew Paris as taking place in 1236, and the various trades appear first to have taken part in it in 1298. The procession by water dates as far back as 1436, and was continued until the year 1816, when the Lord Mayor, for the first time, drove back from Westminster, which was nearly the cause of a disturbance, as this innovation was not by any means popular. Scenic spectacles were afterwards introduced, under the title of "pageants," the earliest of which appears to have been in 1510; they were discontinued in 1702, but revived once in the year 1761.†

Oliver Cromwell died on the 3rd of September, and at a Court held on the 6th of October "It is thought good to move the Militia [Committee] that if the Trayned Bands do not attend the Lord Protector his funeral, then the Artillery Company is ready to present their services."

On the 23rd of October two orders were received from the Clerk of the Militia Committee; viz., one that the Artillery Company should attend upon the Right Hon. Sir John Ireton,

* London's Triumph, by J. Tatham, 1658, p. 5. See Pageants in Guildhall Library.

† Lord Mayors' Pageants, by F. W. Fairholt: Printed for the Percy Society, 1843-5, 3 vols., Vol. I., p. 144; and "Suggestions for the Improvement of the Lord Mayor's Show," by G. Godwin, F.R.S., 1850 (only ten copies printed).

Deputy-President of the Company, on the 29th of October, the day appointed for him to attend at Westminster to take the Oath; and the other order to entreat Colonel Shepperd, or any two or more of a deputation appointed, "to make an humble tender of the services of the Artillery Company to attend the funeral of His late Highness Oliver Lord Protector, deceased, the said Company representing the Militia forces of the City of London, the Militia [Committee] considering the Trained Bands to be too numerous; also that a convenient place to the said Company be assigned."

The following summons was ordered to be sent to members to attend:—

"Sir,—You are desired to appear on Tuesday morning, the 9th of this instant [November] at eight of the clock, in the Artillery Garden, completely armed and habited, with a black feather, to march from thence to attend the funeral of His late Highness Oliver Lord Protector, and not to fail in any of the premises as you tender the honour of the City and Company."

The heads of the leading staff and partisan were ordered to be covered with cypress, and ribbons were to be provided for the colours. Ten drums and fifes were ordered for the occasion, and the treasurer was directed to provide black baize for covering them.

It was ordered on the 3rd of November that members who entered as musketeers into the Company, and used pikes, should only pay "the quartridge of a pike," or five shillings a quarter; a Committee was at the same time appointed to ascertain the names of members "not fitting, or able to bear the charge of the Company."

The Court being informed that Mr. John Eager, of Farnham, had in his custody the pictures of 88 [1588?], steps were ordered to be taken to obtain them. There is nothing to show what these pictures consisted of, and it is doubtful whether they were ever obtained, as no further mention beyond a second application is made of them.

1659.—It is evident that the Company used their discretion in electing members, and would not admit anyone of doubtful

character; as on the 11th of May the Court ordered that Robert Angell should "have his money returned backe wh hee gave for his entrance into ye Company, beinge a man thought fitt not to beare arms wth the rest of the Society."

The gatekeeper was ordered to allow the soldiers on guard over the arms half-a-bushel of coals and half-a-pound of candles every night, whilst employed on behalf of the Company.

It was also agreed, on the 11th of May, to build a brick wall on the south side of the Ground, to be completed by the 11th of June, instead of the paling then there.

At a Court held in the Irish Chamber at the Guildhall, on the 23rd of June, a Committee was appointed to treat with Mr. Tindall for a piece of land without the rails at the north-east corner of the ground in order to finish the wall, and for Mr. Dobson to remove his mill and house, so as to enable them to build. On the 19th of July the west wall was ordered to be built at the same rate, and terms were attempted to be arranged with Mr. Dobson for the removal of his house and mill, so that it could be completed.

It was arranged that for the Feast-day the Stewards should be allowed 6s. 8d. each for the Lord Mayor and fifteen Aldermen, and 5s. each for six Ministers and all other guests. The Lieutenant of the Tower and such gentlemen as were on the Committee of City Lands, and not members of the Company, were to be invited; also the Town Clerk, Common Serjeant, Controller, and Chamberlain. The Feast was held on the 16th of August, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, and the sermon was preached at St. Paul's Church.

The Court resolved to draw up a petition to the Committee of Parliament against Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.

On the 14th of September, Captain Perrier was directed to draw up a letter, in the name of the Court, to Mr. Ayres [Eager?], of Farnham, who was said to have the pictures of 88 belonging to the Company.

On the 9th of October, the Court attended the Masters and Wardens of Leathersellers' Hall respecting Lieutenant-Colonel Manby's account, he being the Clerk of that Company.

In a military work published about this time the Company

is described thus:—"The Artillery Garden is a nursery out of which many able soldiers have been turned, and the Military Garden is another place; Major-General Skippon is General of one, Major Henry Tyllier of the latter. The latter officer was the first that ever showed in the Military Garden the marching of the soldiers in a regimental way." *

1660.—The three General Days for the year were fixed as follows: the first upon May-day; the second towards the end of June; and the last in August, before the Feast-day.

On the 10th of April, the Court ordered 40s. to be given to a man named Collins, who petitioned them for something towards paying the surgeon attending his man, who had his head broken by the Marshal on a General Day.

The Ground-keeper was directed to attend on General Days at the great gate, and the Marshal at the little door, in order to prevent those members who were in arrears of quarterage from taking away their arms.

It was ordered, on the 2nd of May, that the Court of Assistants should lead in turn, "according to their antiquity." General Monk was invited to an exercise of the Company, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen were asked to meet him; they also applied for the loan of the "City scaffolding, with appurtenances," for the use of the guests.

Colonel Crusoe was desired to demand of Lieutenant-Colonel Manby the lease of the Artillery Garden, and to obtain it by the next Court.

* The Complete Body of the Art Military, by Lieut.-Colonel Richard Elton. Second edition, 1659, London, folio, Book II., pp. 67, 68.



THE OLD ARTILLERY GARDEN, THE NEW ARTILLERY GARDEN, AND MOORFIELDS IN 1677.

(Heliotype Facsimile, reduced, from the Plan by John Ogilby, scale 100-ft. to 1-in.)

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM THE RESTORATION TO THE DEATH OF CHARLES II.

FROM 1660 TO 1685.

CONTENTS.—Monk elected Sergeant-Major-General of City *vice* Skippon.—Charles II.'s Visit to City.—His Royal Highness the Duke of York elected "Commander-in-Chief" of Company, 1660.—Lieutenant-Colonel Manby.—Rent of the Herbage.—The Annual Feasts.—Election of Members.—The Exercise on General Days.—Condition of the Highway near Artillery Garden.—Sergeants and Officers of Trained Bands to become Members.—Fines for being late in Court.—Election of the first Surgeon.—Stewards' Names to be entered in Great Book.—An Exercise at Arms in 1665.—The Great Plague.—Attempt to form Burial-place in Artillery Garden.—Tindall's Burying-ground established 1665.—The Fire of London.—Narrow Escape of Artillery Garden.—Official Account of the Fire.—Tents and Sheds erected in Artillery Garden and Moorfields.—The Leader and Bringer-up on General Days.—Marshal to instruct Members.—Duties of Leaders.—Annual Grant of Court of Aldermen for Feast discontinued, 1669.—Box Money.—Currey expelled for biting his Wife's nose.—Company attend Prince of Orange.—Field-Officers of Trained Bands admitted to Court of Assistants, 1671.—Train of Artillery.—Tindall summoned for Building.—An Armoury to be built, 1674.—Dress of the Musketeers.—Sir Thomas Player.—The Feast at Merchant Taylors' Hall, 1679.—Plan for a new Armoury, 1680.—Influence of the Company at Civic Elections.—Proceedings at the General Court, 1681.—King's Warrant to suspend Elections.—Address to the King.—Dispute with Corporation regarding Repair of Highway.—Addresses presented to the King, and Captain-General, 1683.—First Appointment of "Generals."—First Mention of the Title "Honourable," 1685.

1660.—The Court of Common Council, on the 3rd of March, revoked their orders of the 3rd and 23rd of August, 1654, for the payment of £400 per annum to Major-General Skippon, as

Sergeant-Major-General of the forces of the City, and elected His Excellency the Lord General George Monk, who accepted the post.

On the 22nd of March the Court approved of the Commissioners of the Militia raising six regiments of Auxiliaries and some troops of Horse.*

It is well known that the City acted as great a part in the restoration of Charles II. as they had done in the expulsion of his father, having presented him with £10,000; and sent twelve deputies to greet His Majesty at the Hague, all of whom were knighted. On the 29th of May, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen met the King at St. George's Fields, in Southwark, and after a sumptuous collation in a magnificent tent erected there for the occasion, he proceeded towards London, where the streets were lined with the City Companies and Trained Bands, and the conduits flowed with a variety of delicious wines. The procession was chiefly composed of Military. First marched a gallant troop of gentlemen in cloth of silver, brandishing their swords, and led by Major-General Brown; then another troop of two hundred in velvet coats, with footmen attending them in purple liveries; a third led by Alderman Robinson, in buff coats, with cloth of silver sleeves, and very rich green scarves; a troop of about two hundred, with blue liveries laid with silver, with six trumpeters and several footmen in sea-green and silver; and several hundred others; and last of all five regiments of Horse belonging to the Army, with back, breast, and head-pieces, which "diversified the show with delight and terror."†

It is probable that the Artillery Company, which, according to Blackwell, stood in high repute at that period, took part in this cavalcade, as the most eminent of the nobility and citizens supported the Company, in which they seemed to have taken great interest.‡

At a General Court, held on the 26th of June, His Royal Highness the Duke of York was elected "Commander-in-Chief." He was the first on whom this title was conferred; and a deputa-

* Journal, Vol. XLI., ff. 222-4.

† London Pageants, by J. G. Nichols, pp. 71, 72.

‡ Highmore, p. 92.



His Royall Highness
JAMES Duke of YORK
& ALBANY etc.

Only Brother to his Sacred Ma^{ty} King Charles 2^d

*James, Duke of York.
(Afterwards James II.)
Joined the Company 1st June. 1641.
Captain General. 1660-1689.*

tion of twelve members was appointed to wait on him to inform him of his election, and beg his acceptance of the command.

On the 12th of July the King went to dine at the Guildhall with the Lord Mayor, on which occasion Cheapside was lined by the Company, under the command of Lord Lucas.*

A Committee was appointed on the 3rd of August, to confer with Lieut.-Colonel Manby, and to demand the plate, books, and papers in his possession belonging to the Company, and if he refused they were directed to draw up a petition to His Majesty. Nothing appears to have been gained by this, as on the 19th of November a Committee was again appointed for the same purpose.

It having been resolved to invite His Royal Highness the Duke of York, the Duke of Gloucester, Duke of Albermarle, and Duke of Buckingham to the annual Feast about to be held, the Court voted £70 to the Stewards towards the expenses, provided they each gave £10, and the balance, if any, was to be returned.

At a Court held on the 17th of October, at the President's (Sir J. Robinson) lodgings in the Tower, the Company was ordered to attend Sir R. Brown, Kt. and Bart., the Lord Mayor-elect, on the 29th of October, when he went to Westminster to be sworn; Sir J. Robinson was desired to lead, and Sir William Vincent to bring up.

1661.—On the 17th of January the Court ordered that the members should take the Oath of Allegiance on the General Election day. The President was instructed to see the executors of Lieut.-Colonel Manby about returning their property. No members were to be allowed to vote until all arrears of quarterage were paid.

On the 10th of April the Court let the herbage to Mr. Elkin, the ground-keeper, at a rent of £30 (?) a year, on the understanding that all commanders, with their horse and foot under the command of His Majesty's Lieutenancy, were to have free ingress at any time.

* London Pageants, by J. G. Nichols, p. 73.

On the 24th of May the Court ordered steps to be taken to obtain a new Charter.

The Court of Assistant usually met every General Day, at three o'clock in summer, and two in winter.

Active measures were taken to recruit the Company, and on the 4th of June members were appointed in every ward to call upon the inhabitants of "ancient standing" in their wards, and invite them to join the Company.

The annual Feast, was held on Tuesday, the 13th of August, at Merchant Taylors' Hall. Amongst the guests present on the occasion were, H.R.H. the Duke of York, the Duke of Gloucester, Duke of Buckingham, Duke of Ormond, the Lord Chamberlain, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, the Recorder, Bishops of London, and Worcester, and many others. The sermon was preached by Dr. Shute, who was voted £3, as was usual on such occasions.

At these annual feasts, and the exercises which were also held, H.R.H. the Duke of York was almost invariably present, attended by many of the principal and most popular of the nobility. It is curious to remark how the Company took the tone of the times in their field exercises, for the division of the battalion was not into the English and the enemy, but into the Army and the revolting party; and some delicacy seems to have been observed for several years after in the choice of a general to lead the latter.*

The first occasion of the names of candidates to be admitted being recorded appears in the proceedings of the Court of Assistants for the 30th of July, each candidate being "recommended" by a member.

The Stewards having applied for the allowance for the guests on the Feast day, the Court asked for a copy of the accounts, on seeing which they promised "that they should be dealt as nobly with as they did with the former Stewards." The Court of Aldermen voted the Stewards £10, on the 15th of October, towards the cost of the feast.†

The 8th of October was fixed for a general Quarter day for

* Highmore, p. 93.

† Repertory, Vol. LXVII., ff. 317, 318.



R. White, Sc.

George, Duke of Buckingham.
Admitted a Member 17th Aug. 1669

the exercise of Arms, and the Court appointed a Committee to wait upon the Lord Elector to ask if he would "please to own himself a member of this Company," and, in the event of his accepting, the Company was ordered to attend him on the day of his being sworn.

1662.—On the 18th of February, the Court decided to wait on His Highness the Duke of York at Whitehall, the following Friday, to acquaint him with the result of the election. The receipts for the quarterage were ordered to be printed so that those gentlemen who wished for them might have them. An hour-glass was ordered to be purchased for the use of the Company, on the 22nd of May.

At a Court of Aldermen, held on the 5th of June, it was stated that great complaints were made by the inhabitants of Finsbury of the decay of the highway leading by the wall of the Artillery Ground towards Chiswell Street. The Court recommended the Artillery Company to pave and make good the road, which was only reasonable, as they held the ground free of rent from the City.*

Tuesday, the 16th of June, was appointed a General day for the Company to march forth: Sir John Robinson to lead, Sir Andrew King to bring up, and Sir Thomas Bloodworth to carry the colours, and every Tuesday was ordered to be a General day until the General Quarter day.

The annual Feast was held on Tuesday, the 12th of August, and on the 2nd of September the Court of Aldermen voted £10 to the Stewards, as usual.†

For the further promotion of the Company, "which had begun to feel some discouragement by several slender musters," the Lieutenancy recommended that the Sergeants of the twelve regiments of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries of the City, and Tower Hamlets, not already members of the Company, should, with the consent of the Court of Assistants, be admitted without paying any fine, but to pay quarterage like the rest of the members. This was agreed to at a Court on the 8th July, upon condition that the respectable commissioned officers, to

* Repertory, Vol. LXVIII., f. 128.

† Idem, f. 181.

whom the sergeants belonged, who were not already members, should also join according to the recommendation of the Lieutenantancy, and pay their fine. This produced a considerable acquisition of members.

1663.—At a general Court, held on the 10th of February, it was ordered that no member should be admitted without paying a fine for such Arms as he should use, and no apprentice or covenant servant was to be admitted. On the 24th of February the Court of Assistants decided to fine every member sixpence for being half-an-hour late, and a shilling if later. Three or four members were appointed to each Ward to assist the Beadle in collecting overdue quarterage. The Court was appointed to meet at the house of the Lord Mayor, in Mincing Lane, on Tuesday, the 3rd of March, at seven o'clock in the morning, to accompany His Lordship to Whitehall to acquaint His Highness the Duke of York with the result of the new election.

The Feast was held on Thursday, the 17th of September, at Merchant Taylors' Hall. On this occasion the Court did not issue the invitations, but left everything entirely to the Stewards. Amongst those present were the Duke of Albermarle, Lord Craven, the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, and "several other persons of honour." The Stewards defrayed the charges for the Feast, for which they received a vote of thanks. The Court of Aldermen, on the 20th of September, voted them £10, as usual.* The sermon was preached at St. Paul's Church.

1664.—At a Court, held at the Tower of London, on the 18th of July, Mr. William Layfield was elected Surgeon of the Company, and the Treasurer was ordered to buy him a scarf; but, as he declined to accept the office, Mr. Sanderson was chosen in his place, on the 30th of July. This is the first mention of a Surgeon being appointed. It was at the same time ordered that any person who was chosen to be a Steward, and refused to hold office, should pay a fine of £6 13s. 4d.

On the 16th of August, it being a General day, they marched to Balmes.

The annual Feast-day was fixed for the 23rd of August,

* Repertory, Vol. LXIX., f. 195.

when the Rev. Mr. Mills preached the sermon at St. Paul's Church, for which the Court voted him "three pounds in silver" for his pains. The dinner was held at Merchant Taylors' Hall, at which were present: the Duke of Monmouth, Duke of Albermarle, Duke of Ormond, the Lord Chamberlain, Earl of Anglesea, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, who voted the Stewards their usual gift on the 6th of September.*

On the 1st of October, a Committee of the Court was appointed to meet at the Exchange, on Wednesday, at 8 a.m., to tender the respects of the Company to the Lord Mayor-elect, and express their willingness to attend him in arms, according to custom, when he went to Westminster to be sworn.

1665.—The General Court, held on the 21st of February, ordered "that the names of those worthy persons that were the Stewards of the Artillery Company in the year 1663 and 1664, that were nobly pleased to bear all the charges of those several feasts, be written in the Company's Great Book in letters of gold, for a Memorial of the love they bore, and the honour they did the Company." On the 6th of March, the Court attended H.R.H. the Duke of York, to acquaint him with the elections.

On the 6th of March, the Court directed that for the future the Clerk should collect the quarterage instead of the Beadle.

All members were ordered to bring their arms to the Surveyor to be viewed, and he was directed to report thereon quarterly.

Tuesday, the 2nd of May, was appointed to be a General Day, to march through the City. The following curious description of the manœuvres to be performed gives a good idea of their exercise on these occasions:—

"AN EXERCISE AT ARMES TO BE PERFORMED BY THE ARTILLERY COMPANY IN THE ARTILLERY GARDEN, AND THE PASSES THAT LEAD TO IT, FROM MOOREGATE, ON TUESDAY, THE SEACOND OF MAY, 1665.†

"THE DESIGNE.

"The Romans, having subjugated all the petty kingdoms, and Provinces in Italy (though strongly assisted by their Potent

* Repertory, Vol. LXIX., f. 369. † Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. CXX., No. 20.

Neighbours, the Græcian), resolve to carry the Warre into Græce it selfe, and having contracted greate forces, they put them under the conduct of one of their Consulls, Albus Regalius Turre, with orders to reduce Greece to the obedience of Rome. The Græcians, sensible they had injured the Romans, and knowing they should be attaquit, they forme an Army, and give the command of it to their Generall Philopantas, who, studious of the præservation of his Countrey, besetts all the streights and passes where of necessity the Romans must passe to Greece with strong parties.

“The Romans advance to the passes, and are beaten of from some of them, but by their courage and good conduct at last they gaine a convenient passage, and with their whole Army descend into the plains of Thessaly, where they drawe up their Army and present the Græcian battle; the Græcians wave the fight, and retire into Dyrrachium.

“The Romans encampe themselves, and use all manner of provocations to drawe the Græcian out of the Citty, who, irritated with such affronts, and the flower of the youth of the Citty being joyned to the Army, they take the feild, and, in good order of battaile march towards the Roman Campe, who issue forth, and having put themselves in Battalia, they fight the Græcian Army. After a long and furious encounter, the Roman hath the good fortune to be victorious; the Græcian Generall with the Remaines of his Army flies into the Citty; and knowing the Roman would beseidge the Citty, hee putts all things in order for resistance, and leaves part of his forces for the defence of it under the Government of Philographus.

“Philopantas, with the rest of his Army, marcheth out of the Citty into the Græcian Provinces, to raise new forces.

“The Romans approach, and intrench themselves, and beleaguere the Citty.

“The Græcian General, made strong by addition of new forces, marcheth to relieve the Citty, but not able to force the Roman trenches, having receaved greate losse in the Attempt, retires. The Roman, with his whole strength, falls on the Citty, takes it by storme, and putts all to the sword.

"THE ACTION.

"The Company being embodied, and the officers placed at the head of the divisions they are to lead, S^r John Robinson (who comandes in cheife) marcheth the Company forth of the Garden, through Cripplegate into Cheapeside, up Cornehill to the Lord Mayor's, where, after the volleys given, Hee marcheth through St. Hellen's into Bishopsgate Streete, and soe along by the Wall, through Mooregate, to the ditch, where hee draws up the body. When the seacond division of Pikes is marcht through the gate, they refuse to followe the body that past before them to the ditch, or to obey the Officer that did lead them, but passe on to the high way a round pace; (here Captain Perrier heads the Revolters, untill S^r George Smith, who is in the reare, can come up), untill they come to the stile that leads into the seacond feild, where they make a stand in the high way. By this time S^r George, being come to the head of the party, hee leads them into the seacond feild, and there formes his body, reducing it to three deepe. S^r John Robinson, having in the meane tyme formed his body in the ditch, reducing it to three deepe. For the better distinction of Partyes, that comanded by S^r John Robinson are Romans, himselfe and his comanders under him assume Roman names, viz :—

S^r John Robinson—Albus Regalius Turre,
Mews, his Leiftenant—Altus Longinus Naso,
Shelden, his Ensigne—Charus Flaminij Sacro,
Shaxton, a Comander—Flavius Venerius Saxo.
Winckle, a Comander—Biblius Bombardus Vassa,
Burdon—Fortius Aquarius Bocca,
Coxeter, a Comander—Punctus Vigilius Rota.

"S^r George Smith and his party are Græcians. Hee and his Comanders under him are to be called by Græcian names.

S^r George Smith—Philopantas.
Perrier, his Lieftenant—Philographus,
Capt. Colchester—Thrusymachus,
Capt. Stead—Hyppolitus,
Ixem, a Comander—Misoplanus,
L^r Roybould—Bibliopolus.

"Philopantas, assured of the Romans' march towards him,

commands Hyppolitus, with eight files of musquetts, to guard the passe at the steps, by the stile, and Misoplanus, with eight files of musquetts, to guard the passe at the Pope's head, and Bibliopolus, with foure files of musquetts, to goe into the high way, and fire on the left flank of the Romans, that shall attempt the passe by the stile. Himselfe, with his whole body of Pikes and foure files of musquetts at the head of them, stand in the middle betweene the two passes. Albus Regalius Turre, having by his scouters understood in what posture the enemy was in, commands Flavius Venerius Saxo, with eight files of musquetts, to passe into little Moorefeilds, and at the upper end, under the Wall, to lye close, untill hee heares the enemy to be engaged sometime, and then to fire on the Græcian party in the high way. And after some dispute with them, to passe into the high way, and putt them to the runne; they being beaten of, hee is to fire on the right flanke of the Græcian, that fight at the stile steps. And Biblius Bombardus Vassa, with foure files of musquetts, to passe through the rayles of the Seacond Quarter (where a gapp shall be made), and sleeve along the inside of the railes to the right, untill hee comes to the square seates, and then to fire on the enemy at the Pope's head passe, keeping himself within the rayles.

"Hee commands Punctus Vigilius Rota, with eight files of musquetts, to pass through the rayles, into the Seacond Quarter, and to sleeve along the inside of the rayles to the left, untill hee come to the angle of the rayles that point to the stile passe, and there to fire as hotly as may be on the enemy at that passe. Himselfe with his stand of Pikes and foure files of musquetts in the front of them, march to the furthest rayle of the Seacond Quarter; and to amuse the enemy that hee might not relieve any party of his that is distressed, hee makes an offer (by causing his musquetts to fire on the enemy in the Seacond feild) as if hee would passe over the wall, which oblidgeth the enemy to put himself on his defence.

And now all the Musquetts are engaged. Flavius Venerius Saxo having routed the Græcian party in the high way falls on the flanke of the Græcian at the stile passe, who, not able to endure the charge in Front and Flanke, quitt the passe and retire to their body of Pikes.



*James, Duke of Ormond.
Admitted a Member 23rd Aug. 1664.*

"Punctus Vigilius Rota presently mounts the passe; the Generall, having called of Biblius Bombardus Vassa, marcheth through the rayles, and passeth into the Seacond feild, where hee joyues all his parties to his body (except the party under Saxo).

"The Græcian having drawne his Army together placeth himselfe in the most convenient post, to defend the passes that lead to the third feild.

"The Roman Generall drawes up his Army as if hee meaned to force the passes, but tis but to delude the enemy, for having drawne all his musquetts before his Pikes, hee causeth his Pikes to march over the stile into the high way, and comandts Altus Longinus Naso to fight, retiring (if prest by the enemy), causing his musquetts as they fire to passe the stile into the high way.

"The Græcian perceaving the intent of the Roman causeth his musquetts to advance, and fire on the Roman, and draws all his pikes up the steps into the third field, and passes over that stile into the high way, having before comanded Philographus that his musquetts having fired once over, and the enemy retired hee should with all speed followe him at the same passage.

"The Græcian party of musquetts that were beaten in the high way, not being followed, possesse themselves of a square piece of ground rayled about, by the corner ale house, in the high way over against the furthest stile, which, if not gained, would totally hinder the Romans' passage.

"This taske is given to Flavius Venerius Saxo with his party of musquetts, who falls on them, but the Græcian being well intrencht holds him in play till the whole body of the Græcian are past the stile, and then they quitt the passe, and runne. Flavius Venerius Saxo follows and mingles with their reare, and by this time all the Roman musquetts are come up, who fire on them running, being mixt with them enter the Gate of the Garden pell mell with the enemy. In this Action the officers on each party are to have a greate care that noe mischeife be done.

"Both parties being entred the feild they are drawne in Battalia as is exprest in the figure, but the Græcian decline the fight, and retire into the Citty. The Roman encampe themselves upon the place; and now is the refreshing tyme where

the Comanders are to have a greate care that noe excesse be suffered.

"The Romans having well refresht themselves, their Generall comands them to Armes, raiseth his campe, and marcheth towards Dyrrachium. The Græcian, being well recruited, takes the feild, confronts the Roman Army, and presents them battaile.

"The Armies are drawne as in the figure No. 1 is exprest.

"Noate in drawing up, let both parties be at as greate distance one from the other as the feild will suffer, and in firing the Officers are by noe meanes to hurry the souldiers, but give them tyme sufficient.

"After a fight of about an houre and halfe, the Græcian fly towards the Citty, but not soe confusedly but that they face about now & then, and fire to make good their retreat.

"The Roman Army advanceth on them, but presse not their reare too hard.

"The Græcian having entred Dyrrachium, and perceaving by the countenance of the Romans that they intend to beleaguere it, Philopantas puts all things in order for resisting the enemy. Hee gives the Comand of the Citty and Garrison to Philographus, with halfe of his army for the defence of it. Himselfe marcheth with the remainder of his troopes into the Græcian Provinces (viz., to the hill before the Armory) to raise new forces:

"The Roman Generall Albus Regalius Turre assignes halfe of his Army to his Leiftenant Altus Longinus Naso, with comands to beseidge the Citty; Himselfe with the other halfe marcheth to the West part of the Citty, being the most advantageous place to hinder the releife of the Citty.

"Altus Longinus Naso having caused his pioneers to runn a trench on the South to a convenient distance from the Citty (viz. forty foote) hee causeth them to cast up a blinde, behind which hee rayseth a square fort, And from this fort, being on the South part of the Citty, hee runnes his Lines of Circumvalation to the East; the care of seeing that performed hee comitts to Biblius Bombardus Vassa with his party, who, on the East part rayse the like square fort. And from the left of

the Fort on the South part hee runs his Lynes to the West part of the Citty—the conduct of that hee gives to Flavius Venerius Saxo, with his party, who rayseth the like square fort on the West. And from the Forts on the West and East hee runs his Lynes to the North where the like square Fort is raised, And this is to be manadged by Fortius Aquarius Bocca and his party.

“Noate that these square forts, having each fower Angles, two of them point towards the Citty; the other two without the lyne being to cleare the lyne from such as shall attempt to releive the Citty.

“During the running of these lynes and making the approaches the musquetteers must be ever ready to resist the enemy, who will sally out of the towne to disturbe the Pioneers in their worke.

“Noate, that in running the lynes from South to East, and to all other parts upon the very corner where the lyne is to be turned, a halfe moone is to be raised aspecting the Citty and the Outside of the Lyne, as in the figure of the Leaguer is exprest.

“The Citty being beleaguered round, the Musquetts from the Forts and halfe Moone fire on the enemy in the Outworke, not by volleys, but single, but let them fire as fast as may be.

“Noate that the Musquetteers now must load with a very full charge.

“The Græcian Generall, being reinforcet by the addition of new Levies, marcheth to releive the Citty.

“The Roman Generall, by his scouters, hearing of his approach, and that hee advanceth to the North part of the Citty hee interposeth betweene the Græcian Army & Citty. A battle is fought; during the fight, the Græcian sends a party comanded by ——— to fall on the East part, a party sally out of the Citty at the same tyme to the same purpose.

“Biblius Bombardus Vassa, who commands that Quarter, having received some helpe from the South Quarter beates of both parties.

“The Græcian Generall not able to relieve the Citty, and his Army being much shattered, hee retreats confusedly :

"The Roman Generall calls a Councell of Warre, where tis resolved to Storme the Citty, before the Enemy should be able to recruit, and presse for a second reliefe.

"The Storme is to be put in execution after this manner. From each quarter of the Leaguer the parties to fall on shall be thus ordered. The officer that comands the Quarter is to lead them on. First sixe musquetts in two files, who, in falling on, are to fire point blank: then sixe pikemen in two files, their Pikes comported, carrying on their Pikes each three bavins; then two pioneers with pickaxes; then two pioneers each a ladder; then sixe musquetts in two files, who in falling on are to fire obliquely. The first musquetts, when they come neere the Moate, are to open outwards, and the Pikemen having taken their bavins from their Pikes are to throwe them into the Moate, over which the Pioneers passe; and having dig'd downe some of the enemy's lyne they place the ladders at the breach, the pikes and musquetts are to presse on and to enter mixt. The parties being all thus disposed the signall for falling on shall be a wispe of strawe flaming on the head of a Pike advanced in the South Quarter.

"The Græcians, after a stout resistance, are beaten from their Out-workes; they retire into the Citty, and place themselves on the Walls, resolving to defend it to the utmost.

"The Romans having thus gained the Out-workes, they make their approaches neere the Walls, whereby most of the enemy's shott are rendered uselesse. Here both parties doe liberally tosse their hand granadoes at each other for neare a quarter of an houre, during which tyme the Romans sinke a mine under the South part of the Wall; and having put all things in a readinesse for a Second storme, the mine is sprung. Altus Longinus Naso, with his party presently falls on at the breach.

"The other Parties of the Romans are to bring on their Ladders; the Pikemen are to mount first, armed with swords and Pistolls, or halfe Pikes.

"The Græcians make a desperate opposition; but, overpowered, they are beaten, from their Walls.

"The Romans enter on all Quarters, and put all to the sword but such as begg for quarter."

1665.—On the 29th of June the exercise of Arms in the Artillery Garden was suspended until further orders. Various bills were ordered to be paid, and £3 was given to the Clerk for his extraordinary pains in writing out copies of the exercise performed on the General Day. No other Court was held until the 16th of January the following year.

This sudden suspension of musters and exercise was caused by the Great Plague, which broke out in London during the winter, but did not excite public alarm until April.

The inhabitants of every house in which they had this terrible scourge were ordered to paint on the door a red cross, one foot in length, and the words, "Lord have mercy upon us." No person could leave a house so marked till the expiration of a month. In July the deaths were at the rate of 1,100, but in September they had increased to 10,000 a-week, and not less than 100,000 persons were computed to have perished in the course of the year. The dead were gathered in carts during the night, and shot into plague pits. All the churchyards and burying-places being filled to overflowing, the churchwardens and inhabitants of sundry parishes of the City complained to the Court of Aldermen, on the 5th of September, that their churchyards, and also the new churchyard in Bethlehem were, in consequence of the great mortality, surcharged with dead, and prayed that some new place might speedily be assigned for that purpose. Sir John Robinson, Kt. and Bart., Alderman, and Lieutenant of the Tower, was accordingly desired by the Court of Aldermen to treat with Mr. Tindall, the City's tenant of Finsbury, for a convenient piece of ground to be laid out as a burying-place "during this present visitation." The Court being also informed of the noisome stench arising from the great number of dead bodies buried in Bethlehem, ordered the keeper not to make any more pits there, but only single graves of sufficient depth, and in convenient places, whence no annoyance could arise; and to cause a quantity of fresh mould to be forthwith laid on the places complained of, and that all the bones lying above ground

should be buried, and the pieces of coffin boards were ordered to be burnt that evening in the middle of the churchyards.*

An attempt was at first made to convert the new Artillery Garden into a burying-ground, or at least to make some plague-pits there; but this was defeated, owing to the great opposition of Sir John Robinson, the President of the Company, and a piece of ground was enclosed to the north of it. No time appears to have been lost in preparing this ground, as on the 19th of October the overseer of the Chamberlain was ordered to measure the brick wall enclosing the new burying-ground in Bunhill Fields.† It was not, however, then made use of for this purpose, and a lease of it was taken by Tindall, who made it a burying-ground for Dissenters, and it was known by the name of Tindall's burying-ground, and now as Bunhill Fields.‡

1666.—The ranks of the Company must have become considerably thinned by the plague, as at the General Court held on the 6th of February, out of the list of officers elected the previous year, ten have the word "dead" recorded opposite their names; viz., three members of the Court of Assistants, one of the two Ensigns, one of the four Surveyors of Arms, one of the two Sergeants, the Marshal, Drummer, Fifer, and Armourer.

A vote of thanks was given to Sir J. Robinson, the President, for his great services in preventing the Garden from being made a burial-place, and his name was ordered to be entered in letters of gold in the Great Book of the Company for this service.

On the 1st of March, the gunsmith was ordered to return the arms into the Artillery Garden on the following Tuesday, which was the first ordinary General day for exercise they had held since the plague.

On the 13th of March, the Court let the herbage of the Artillery Garden to Nicholas Coxeter, for two years, at £16 per annum, to be paid quarterly, he paying the taxes both to the King and the parish; the lease was renewed on the 11th of February, 1667.

* Repertory, Vol. LXX., f. 153.

† Idem, f. 155.

‡ Maitland, p. 775.

A General day for a march to Balmes was fixed to take place in August.

Another interruption to the assembling and exercise of the Company was now caused by the Great Fire, which broke out on the 2nd of September, in Pudding Lane, where the Monument now stands; and as the houses were mostly built of wood, and the thoroughfares were very narrow, the fire, assisted by a strong east wind, raged for three days and nights, and was only at last checked by blowing up numbers of houses with gunpowder. Two-thirds of London were left in ruins, covering a surface of about 436 acres, and destroying 400 streets and 13,200 dwelling-houses, besides St. Paul's Cathedral and 88 churches, and it was calculated that 200,000 persons were rendered homeless. The fire was by many ascribed to the Roman Catholics, and when the Monument was erected it bore the following inscription, which was removed by order of the Corporation in 1830:—"The burning of this Protestant City was begun and carried on by the treachery and malice of the Popish faction, in order to the effecting their horrid plot for the extirpating the Protestant Religion and English liberties, and to introduce Popery and heresy."

The Fire only reached the walls of the Artillery Ground, and the only mention of it in the Court Books of the Company is an Order, dated from the President's house at the Tower, on the 22nd of October, directing that the breach made in the wall, "in the time of the late dreadful fire, be forthwith made up."

The ravages of the fire probably left them no time for military exercises, and no further meetings appear to have been held until the 19th of February of the following year.

The following is the official account given of the Great Fire, as it appeared in the *London Gazette* for September:—*

"On the second instant, at one of the clock in the morning, there happened to break out a sad and lamentable fire, in

* "A True Relation of that sad and deplorable Fire, that happened and brake out in London, the second of September, 1666, as it came from Whitehall, the 8th of the same month, and there published by authority." Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. CLXX., No. 150 (a sheet printed at York); also the *London Gazette*, No. 85, 3rd to 10th September, 1666.

Pudding Lane, near New Fish Street, which falling out at that hour of the night, and in a quarter of the town so close built with wooden pitched houses, spread itself so far before day, and with such distraction to the inhabitants and neighbours, that care was not taken for the timely preventing the further diffusion of it by pulling down houses, as ought to have been; so that this lamentable fire in a short time became too big to be mastered by any engine or working near it. It fell out most unhappily too, that a violent easterly wind fomented it, and kept it burning all that day, and the night following, spreading itself up to Gracechurch Street, and downwards from Cannon Street to the waterside as far as the Three Cranes in the Vintry.

“The people in all parts about it distracted with the vastness of it, and their particular care to carry away their goods, many attempts were made to prevent the spreading of it, by pulling down houses and making great intervals; but all in vain; the fire seizing upon the timber and rubbish, and so continuing itself, even through those spaces, and raging in a bright flame all Monday and Tuesday, notwithstanding His Majesty’s own, and His Royal Highness’s indefatigable and personal pains to apply all possible remedies to prevent it, calling upon, and helping the people, with their guards; and a great number of nobility and gentry unweariedly assisting therein, for which they were requited with a thousand blessings from the poor distressed people. By the favour of God the wind slackened a little on Tuesday night, and the flames meeting with brick buildings at the Temple, by little and little it was observed to lose its force on that side, so that on Wednesday morning we began to hope well; and His Royal Highness, never despairing or slackening his personal care, wrought so well that day, assisted in some part by the Lords of the Council before and behind it, that a stop was put to it at the Temple Church, near Holborn Bridge, Pie Corner, Aldersgate, Cripplegate, near the lower end of Coleman Street, at the end of Basinghall Street by the Postern, at the upper end of Bishopsgate Street, and Leadenhall Street, at the Standard in Cornhill, at the Church in Fenchurch Street, near Clothworkers’ Hall in Mincing Lane, at the Middle of Mark Lane, and at the Tower Dock.

"On Thursday, by the blessing of God, it was wholly beat down and extinguished; but so as that evening it unhappily burst out again afresh at the Temple, by the falling of some sparks (as is supposed) upon a pile of wooden buildings. But His Royal Highness, who watched there that whole night in person, by the great labours and diligence used, and especially by applying powder to blow up the houses about it, before day most happily mastered it.

"Divers strangers, Dutch and French, were during the fire apprehended upon suspicion that they contributed mischievously to it, who are all imprisoned, and informations prepared to make a severe inquisition thereupon by my Lord Chief Justice Keeling, assisted by some of the Lords of the Privy Council, and some principal members of the City. Notwithstanding which suspicion the manner of the burning all along in a train, and so blown forward in all its way by strong winds, makes us conclude the whole was the effect of an unhappy chance, or, to speak better, the heavy hand of God upon us for our sins, showing us the terror of His judgment in thus raising the fire; and immediately after His miraculous, and never enough to be acknowledged mercy in putting a stop to it when we were in the last despair, and that all attempts for the quenching it, however industriously pursued, seemed insufficient. His Majesty then sat hourly in Council, and ever since hath continued making rounds about the City in all parts of it where the danger and mischief was greatest, till this morning that he hath sent His Grace the Duke of Albermarle, whom he hath called for to assist him on this great occasion, to put his happy and successful hand to the finishing this memorable deliverance.

"About the Tower the seasonable orders given for plucking down houses to secure the magazines of powder, was more especially successful, that part being up the wind, notwithstanding which it came almost to the very gates of it, so as, by this early provision, the several stores of war lodged in the Tower were entirely saved.

"And we have further this infinite cause particularly to give God thanks that the fire did not happen in any of those places where His Majesty's naval stores are kept, so as, though it hath pleased God to visit us with His own hand, He hath not, by

disfurnishing us with the means of carrying on the war, subjected us to our enemies.

“It must be observed that this fire happened in a part of the town where, though the commodities were not very rich, yet they were so bulky that they could not well be removed, so that the inhabitants of that part where it first began have sustained very great loss; but, by the best inquiry we can make, the other parts of the town, where the commodities were of greater value, took the alarm so early, that they saved most of their goods of value, which possibly may have diminished the loss; though some think that if the whole industry of the inhabitants had been applied to the stopping of the fire, and not to the saving of their particular goods, the success might have been much better, not only to the public, but to many of them in their own particulars.

“Through this sad accident it is easy to be imagined how many persons were necessitated to remove themselves and goods into the open fields, where they were forced to continue some time, which could not but work compassion in the beholders. But His Majesty’s care was most signal in this occasion, who, besides his personal pains, was frequent in consulting all way for relieving those distressed persons; which produced so good effect, as well by His Majesty’s proclamations, and the orders issued to the neighbour Justices of the Peace, to encourage the sending in provisions to the markets, which are publicly known, as by other directions, that, when His Majesty, fearing less other orders might not have been sufficient, had commanded the victualler of his Navy to send bread into Moorfields, for the relief of the poor, which, for more speedy supply, he sent in biscuits out of the sea-stores, it was found that the markets had been already so well supplied that the people, being unaccustomed to that kind of bread, declined it, and so it was returned in great part to His Majesty’s stores again, without use made of it.

“And we cannot but observe, to the confutation of all His Majesty’s enemies, who endeavoured to persuade the world abroad of great parties and disaffection at home against His Majesty’s Government, that a greater instance of the affections of this City could never be given than hath been now given in

this sad and deplorable accident, when if at any time, disorder might have been expected from the losses, distractions, and almost desperation of some persons in their private fortunes, thousands of people not having had habitations to cover them. And yet, in all this time, it hath been so far from any appearance of designs, or attempts against His Majesty's Government, that His Majesty and his royal brother, out of their care to stop and prevent the fire, frequently exposing their persons with very small attendants in all parts of the town, sometimes even to be intermixed with those who laboured in the business, yet nevertheless, there hath not been observed so much as a murmuring word to fall from any; but, on the contrary, even those persons whose losses rendered their conditions most desperate, and to be fit objects of others' prayers, beholding those frequent instances of His Majesty's care of his people, forgot their own misery, and filled the streets with their prayers for His Majesty, whose trouble they seemed to compassionate before their own."

On the 8th of September the Court of Aldermen ordered that such freemen of the City as desired to erect tents or sheds for their trades or employments, might have permission to do so in all parts of the Artillery Ground, and on the outside of London Wall, from the postern, near the end of Broad Street, to Moorgate, and from the said postern within the Wall to Coleman Street end; and also in the Round in Smithfield within the rails, in such manner as the Lord Mayor and Sheriff should order and appoint, who would cause the ground to be set out and apportioned.*

A proclamation was issued from Whitehall, dated the 19th of September, stating, that "as the general amazement and distraction occasioned by the late dreadful fire" was so great that many were surprised and overtaken by the flames before they could remove their goods; and that persons daily presumed to seize and carry away anything they could find of value; all persons who had taken plate, goods, building materials, &c., from the ruins either wilfully or ignorantly, or with a view to return the same to the owners, were required to bring them

* Repertory, Vol. LXXI., f. 170.

to the Armoury, in Finsbury Fields, within eight days, there to be kept and inventoried for restoration to the rightful owners.*

On the 20th of September, "in consequence of the dismal effects and consequences of the late dreadful fire," a committee was appointed to consider "the means for the City's present subsistence," and to meet the next morning at Gresham House at nine o'clock, to apportion amongst the freemen of the City whose dwellings were destroyed, such quantities of Moorfields, the Artillery Ground, and other void places as they should think fit, for the exercise of their trade and calling.†

On the following day the Court of Common Council ordered that none of the goods which, in accordance with the above proclamation had been taken to the Armoury, were to be given out again unless by order of the Court of Aldermen, and the Bailiffs of Southwark were ordered to bring all the goods in their custody to the Armoury.

1667.—About 290 of these sheds appear to have been erected, for which the Corporation received rents, which varied from about £3 to £40 each per annum. They were mostly held on lease for seven years, and were built on Moorditch, Moorfields, and Smithfield, the average price ranged from £20 to £30, those in Moorfields being the highest.‡

Some of the citizens who had built sheds in Moorfields and Moorditch petitioned the Court of Common Council, on the 25th of February, that they might enjoy them without paying any rent or fines.§

The Court of Aldermen appointed a committee on the 30th of July, 1672, to examine and inquire what grants had been made of buildings or sheds in Moorfields, or other places about

* Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. CLXXII., No. 44.

† Journal, Vol. XLVI., ff. 120, 121.

‡ An Account Book of Money Received and Paid for Sheds erected in Moorfields, Smithfield, and other places. Chamberlain's Office, Guildhall. The entries date from 23rd February, 1667, to 7th May, 1669; the total amount received being £4,193 19s. 6d.

§ Journal, Vol. XLVI., f. 146.



Vandyck. Pinx^t

T. A. Dean. Sc.

*Edward Montagu, Earl of Manchester,
Admitted a Member 23rd Aug 1664.*

the City, and what had been erected without leave, or encroachments made beyond any grant; and speedy and effectual means were ordered to be taken to demolish as many of the sheds as possible, they being prejudicial to the welfare of the City—so many houses still remaining uninhabited.*

At a General Court, on the 19th of February, it was resolved that members in arrears of quarterage should, for the future, be suspended, and prohibited from exercising arms, and should have no more tickets, or notices of muster, sent to them.

The Duke of York was made acquainted with the result of the elections as usual.

A General day was fixed in May, and the bringer-up was ordered to lead "the revolting party" after the body was divided: the force was always thus divided into two separate parties, and the exercise or drill consisted in a sham fight between them. The management of the exercise or manœuvres, and of the half-pikemen, was referred to the Lieutenants of the Garden.

On the 1st of July £7 was ordered to be paid to Mr. Hodder for entering 560 names in the Company's "Great Book."

The Company was ordered to attend the funeral of Sir R. Peaks, Kt., late Vice-President and Leader, and "give there five volleys."

1668.—On the 11th of April the Marshal was ordered to attend at the Artillery Garden every Tuesday, not later than two o'clock, "then and there to show to such gentlemen that shall appear the postures of the musket and half-pike, and musket and rest," and he was to receive £2 for his trouble, in quarterly payments.

The 18th of August was fixed to be a General day to march to Balmes.

The Court decided on the 8th of October, that no person appointed to lead should be obliged to lead if there were not a sufficient number of members present at least an hour before sunset; but might dismiss those who had come ready armed. At the same time it was ordered that for the future no

* Repertory, Vol. LXXVII., f. 219.

member should be admitted without the approbation of two members of the Court.

1669.—At the General Court held on the 9th of February, several members complained that some of the members had refused to lead when it came to their turn, in consequence of the great expense they were put to as Leaders. The Court therefore ordered that no person should be obliged to spend more than five shillings on such occasions, any custom or usage to the contrary notwithstanding.

On the 18th of February, a Lodge was ordered to be built for the Porter, and the Sutling-room to be made up and fitted for the gentlemen of the Company to put their boxes in.

Tuesday, the 11th of May, was fixed to be a General day, to march through the City, and afterwards to have an exercise in the Artillery Garden.

On the 10th of June, the Marshal was appointed to sell powder and match, in place of the cloak-keeper, deceased.

Tuesday, the 3rd of August, they had a General day, and marched to Balmes.

On the 6th of July, the Captain and a member, "on behalf of the Company exercising Arms in Cripplegate Churchyard," appeared before the Court and desired that they might march forth that year, to which the Court consented to their marching with their own listed members and one colour.

The Feast-day was celebrated on the 17th of August. Dr. Waterhouse preached the sermon, at Broad Street Church, for which "three pieces of gold, commonly called guinea pieces," were presented to him for his pains. The Company afterwards dined at Clothworkers' Hall, when amongst those present were the Duke of York, Prince Rupert, Duke of Buckingham, Archbishop of Canterbury, Earl of Manchester, the Earl of Sandwich, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.

On the 31st of August, the Court voted £5 to the Surgeon "for his pains in curing of the man that was hurt in the Artillery Garden."

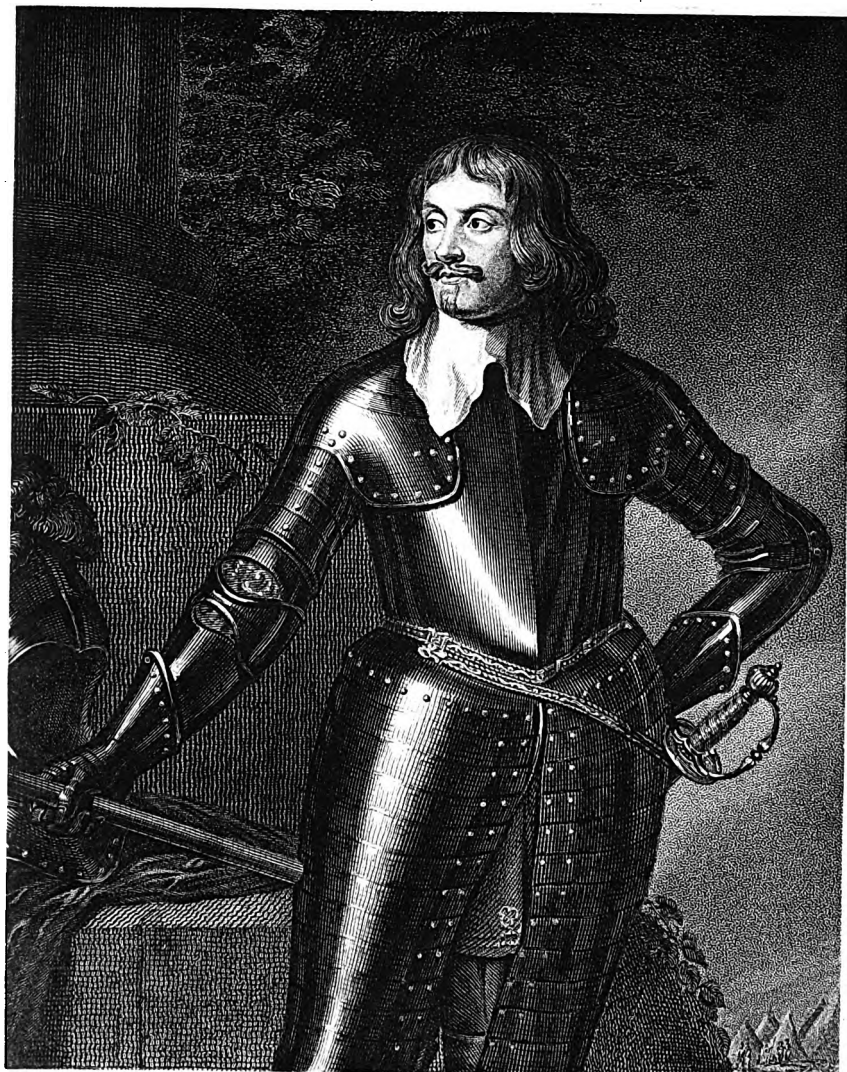
On the 12th of October, permission to erect an effigy of Colonel Sheppard in the wall of the Artillery Garden, or in the



P. Lely, Pinxt.

S. Thompson, Sc.

*Edward Montagu, First Earl of Sandwich.
Admitted a Member 10th Aug. 1664.*



Honthorst, Pinx.

*William, First Earl of Craven.
Admitted a Member 10th Aug 1664.*

Armoury, when built, was granted to his son, provided it was done at his own expense.

On the 7th of December, Mr. Tindall was summoned before the Court for building upon the Company's wall, and ordered forthwith to demolish it, which he promised to do.

On the 28th of October, the Court of Aldermen, on a motion to give their usual gratuity of £10 to the Stewards of the Artillery Company towards the charge of their last feast, thought fit, in consequence of the condition of the chamber, to decline to vote the gratuity, and ordered that it should be discontinued, and not be made again at any future time.*

1670.—A letter was read at the Court of Aldermen, on the 22nd of January, from the Lords and other Commissioners for the Streets and Highways, sitting in Scotland Yard, directing that the highway by the Artillery Ground should be speedily paved and repaired. It was then ordered that the President of the Company, with all convenient speed, should repair the same, as promised.†

The 31st of May was fixed to be a General day, to march through the City, and it was ordered that the Company should, on that day "march regimentally, and have a train of Artillery."

The name of Lieutenant Francis Colman was ordered to be rased from the Great Book for his "unmanly carriage" towards Captain Randall.

The Guns belonging to the Company, in the Tower, were ordered to be put in some convenient place for the service of the Company.

On the 24th of May, it was ordered that five partisans, six colours, and six half-pikes should be used on the next Extraordinary day, when the Company marched out regimentally; £20 being voted for the extraordinary charges of the train of Artillery, gunners, matrosses, and firelocks for the General day; all other charges to be defrayed by the field officers and captain in command that day.

* Repertory, Vol. LXXIV., f. 324.

† Idem, Vol. LXXV., f. 85.

The 16th of August was fixed for a General day, to march to Balmes.

The annual Feast was held on the 30th of August: the Rev. Mr. Durham preached the sermon, at St. Andrew's Undershaft (for which he had "three broad pieces of gold" presented to him), and the Company afterwards dined at Grocers' Hall; the guests present included the Duke of Monmouth, Earl of Craven, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.

A Committee was appointed on the 6th of September, to report what damage had been done in the Garden on the last General day from throwing grenades.

At a Court, held on the 26th of December, "the Artillery drumbeater and fifers" petitioned to be permitted to attend the several members of the Company for box-money as formerly, which was granted. At the same Court it was ordered "that the name of John Currey be rased out of the Great Book, for his unmanly action in biting of [off?] his wife's nose."

1671.—On the 19th of January, the Treasurer was ordered to be paid £12 18s., being the amount of the expenses incurred on the occasion when the Company marched to attend the Prince of Orange.

At the General Court held on Tuesday, the 14th of February, it was ordered that all Field Officers of the Trained Bands of the City of London and Tower Hamlets who were members of the Company, and paid quarterage, should be permitted to sit in the Court of Assistants for the year ensuing, and that they should be summoned by ticket like the rest of the Company.

The 23rd of May was fixed to be a General day to march through the City, on which day they were to have a train of Artillery; and the Treasurer was directed to pay Sir Thomas Player, the Leader, £40 for defraying the cost of it. Another General day was held on the 22nd of August, when they marched to Balmes.

The Feast-day was fixed for the 12th of September, on which day the Rev. Mr. Bagshaw preached the sermon, at St. Andrew's Undershaft, for which he received the thanks of the Court, and "three broad pieces of gold." The Company dined at Grocers'

Hall, and amongst the guests were the Duke of York, Duke of Monmouth, Earl of Craven, and many others.

1672.—On the 22nd of February it was ordered that all members who by reason of the late great sickness, and dreadful fire, had discontinued their appearance, should be allowed all former privileges on paying not less than one year's quarterage.

A Committee was appointed, on the 26th of September, to attend the Duke of York the next morning to ask his pleasure as to when the Feast should be held. His Royal Highness said that he would appoint the day on his return from Newmarket.

Mr. Tindall was summoned by the Court of Assistants on the 10th of October, and asked why, contrary to his promise, he had built on the Company's wall; he endeavoured to excuse himself, and submitted to the Court, who fined him £12 per annum as an acknowledgment to them; and he further undertook to put a coping on the whole of the east side of the wall within fourteen days, and to put up blinds before those lights which looked into the ground when required to do so.

The Feast-day was held on Thursday, the 24th of October, when Dr. Morriton preached the sermon at St. Michael's, Cornhill, and was voted "three twenty shilling pieces of broad gold"; the Company assembled at the Guildhall, and marched to Drapers' Hall to dine; the guests included His Royal Highness the Duke of York, Prince Rupert, Duke of Monmouth, Don Carlos, Lord Bellasis, Sir E. Sprague, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.* The Company received the Lord Mayor at St. Paul's Wharf on his return from Westminster on the 29th of October.

1673.—At the General Court, held on Tuesday, the 18th of February, it was decided that the officers of the Trained Bands should continue members of the Court for another year, and that for the future the Stewards should also be summoned as long as they continued to pay quarterage.

On the 8th of April the Court directed that the porter's staff, given by Captain Desmaret, should be returned to his wife; and the trophy, given by Captain F. Ixem, should be returned

* Repertory, Vol. LXXVII., f. 271.

to his widow. A partisan with a silver head was ordered to be provided for the Company. A new Beadle was elected *vice* Moulson, deceased, and a porter was chosen for the duties formerly performed by the Beadle.

Wednesday, the 25th of June, was fixed to be a General day, to march through the City; and a ticket carrier was chosen to assist the Beadle.

On the 9th of October, the Clerk was ordered to attend the Aldermen who were Stewards, and acquaint them that, if they were not willing to hold the office of Steward, the Court would proceed to elect others, "by reason they cannot waive their ancient customs and privileges." The following day the Clerk reported that most of the Aldermen objected to the notice being so short; and one of them said that he would send in £100 to the Court, if they wished it, to bind him to the performance of his promise, but, withal, desired longer time. Upon this the Court elected other in their place.

The Feast was held on the 14th of October, and, after a sermon from the Rev. Mr. White, the Company dined at the Drapers' Hall; the guests consisting of H.R.H. the Duke of York, the Duke of Monmouth, the Lord Privy Seal, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.

At a Court, on the 21st of October, a Committee was appointed to wait on the Lord Mayor-elect, to know if he desired the Artillery Company to march with him on the day he was to be sworn at Westminster; to which he replied in the affirmative, and said, that as some reports had been spread abroad of his disaffection to the Company, he assured them that none had more honour for them than himself. The Treasurer was therefore ordered to defray the charges on the "Lord Mayor's Day." The Lord Mayor landed at St. Paul's Wharf, on his return from Westminster, and was saluted with three volleys by ("the Military Glory of this Nation") the Company of Artillerymen, under the command of Sir Thomas Player.*

1674.—The usual Committee was appointed to wait on H.R.H. the Duke of York, to acquaint him with the result of the

* London Pageants, 1673, in Guildhall Library.



Sir Peter Lely Pinxt

A. Blooteling, Sc.

James, Duke of Monmouth.
Admitted a Member 23rd Aug 1664.

election which took place at the General Court, held on the 17th of February; and a Court was ordered to be called to consider the building of an Armoury; the business to be stated on the tickets, so that there might be a full Court.

At a Court held in the Irish Chamber at the Guildhall, on the 30th of April, to take into consideration the want of a more convenient place in which to lodge their arms, it was unanimously resolved to build a new one, and an address was ordered to be presented to H.R.H. the Duke of York praying him to acquaint His Majesty with the intention of the Court, and craving their assistance.

A Committee was appointed to draw up the Address, and also to acquaint Sir Thomas Bide: and the Clerk was ordered to desire Mr. Cartwright to bring a draft or model of the proposed Armoury to the next Court—the cost of the building to be about £2,500.

It was also ordered that all gentlemen handling muskets on extraordinary days should be desired to provide themselves with bright head-pieces and plumes of red feathers; it having been the ancient and constant custom for the Musketeers to march so accoutred before the late fire.

The 26th of May was ordered to be a General day to march through the City; the usual charges for drums, fifes, and pioneers being defrayed by the Company. A train of Artillery, consisting of six field-pieces and two waggons, with twenty-four or more Marshals, with blunderbusses, and dressed in buff coats, were also ordered to attend.

A general exercise was ordered to be performed at Balmes and the fields leading to it, on Tuesday the 25th of August.

On Tuesday the 1st of September the Company held their annual Feast; the sermon was preached by Dr. Bell, and they afterwards dined at Merchant Taylors' Hall, a number of distinguished guests being present, as usual—amongst whom were H.R.H. the Duke of York, Duke of Monmouth, Earl of Plymouth, Lord Keeper, Lord Windsor, Lord Peterborough, Lord Roscommon, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.*

* Repertory, Vol. LXXIX., ff. 334, 335.

The Company attended the Lord Mayor-elect, on the 29th of October, at St. Paul's Wharf, on his return from Westminster.

At a Court held on the 27th of October, the question of the Archers being drawn up in the Artillery Ground on the Lord Mayor's Day being debated, Sir R. Peyton, their Leader, promised to draw up elsewhere; and on the day appointed they mustered in Moorfields, to the number of 350, all most richly habited. These were the Finsbury Archers, who were afterwards incorporated with the Artillery Company.*

The Clerk and Beadle were ordered to be provided with scarves, not having had them formerly.

1675.—The Court of Assistants having accepted an invitation to dine, on Monday, the 22nd of February, with Sir N. Hieron, one of the Sheriffs of London, orders were given for them to meet at Old Jewry Church at twelve o'clock, with their swords on, and to go from thence to the Sheriffs.

On the 16th of September, Dr. Atfield preached the annual sermon, at St. Mary-le-Bow, Cheapside, for which he received "three broad pieces of gold." And the Company afterwards dined at Merchant Taylor's Hall; the guests included H.R.H. the Duke of York, Duke of Monmouth, Duke of Ormond, Lord Privy Seal, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen.

At a Court, on the 19th of October, the Company was ordered to attend the Lord Mayor-elect on the day of his being sworn; and he was to be asked if some course could not be taken to hinder the Archers from marching, but few of them being citizens. Directions were given that no drumbeaters were to be "permitted to beat to the Company, except those belonging to the Trained Bands of the City or Tower Hamlets."

1676.—On Tuesday, the 15th of February, the President was desired to request the Lieutenancy that every commissioned officer of the City Trained Bands should be ordered by them to enter themselves members of the Company.

* Highmore, p. 97.

Instructions were given to the Beadle, on the 22nd of March, that in case of any tumult arising during the holidays, the arms were to be removed to the Guildhall.

Dr. Meggott preached the sermon on the Feast-day, which was held on Wednesday, the 13th of September, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, when were present H.R.H. the Duke of York, the Lord Bishop of London, Lord Mayor and Aldermen. The Surgeon afterwards received 50s. "for the curing of the hurt" the pioneer received on the Feast-day.

On Monday, the 30th of October, being Lord Mayor's Day, the Artillery Company—"the warlike honour of this nation bravely reviewed"—received the Lord Mayor on his return from Westminster at Blackfriars Stairs. At the same place a regiment of Archers was drawn up, under the command of Sir R. Peyton, their Colonel. They are described as "a most heroic rarity; viz., gentlemen Archers completely armed with long-bows and swords, arrows and pallasades, with hats turned up at the outside, and tied with large knots of green ribbon." *

In this year another famous Company was instituted, viz., the Royal Company of Archers, the Queen's Body Guard for Scotland, who still retain their ancient weapons of the bow and arrow.†

1677.—The General Court was held on Tuesday, the 13th of February, and a Committee waited upon H.R.H. the Duke of York, as usual, to acquaint him with the result of the elections. He approved of them all, except Sir Thomas Player, the Leader (who had been re-elected Leader annually since 1669), "and declared his displeasure to them, that he had behaved himself so that no honest man ought to countenance him." A Committee was accordingly appointed to acquaint Sir Thomas Player with this disapproval, and to desire him to attend the next Court. There is no further mention of the subject in the Court Book, to show what took place; but he does not appear to have led again, and no "Leader" was ever after elected.

* See London Pageants, 1676, in Guildhall Library.

† See the History of the Royal Company of Archers, the Queen's Body Guard for Scotland. By James Balfour Paul. Royal 8vo. London, 1875.

The 24th of April was fixed to be a General day. The Clerk sent to Mr. Tindall on the same day, stating that he must fulfil his promise to cope the east wall, and to pay his arrears of rent, and if he refused "the Court would take a speedy course with him." This threat appears to have had no effect, as on the 3rd of March, 1680, they sent to him again, to know why he had not complied with their orders.

Wednesday, the 20th of June, was ordered to be a General day, to march through the City, and perform an exercise at arms in the Artillery Garden, and Sir Thomas Player was requested to supply loppings off some of the trees in Moorfields, to make huts with on the General day. The President, Sir J. Robinson, was appointed to lead, and the Treasurer to command the revolting party.

The Feast was held on Tuesday, the 10th of September, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, H.R.H. the Duke of York, Duke of Somerset, Lord Chancellor, and others, being present. The sermon was preached by Dr. Pettis. At this feast Lord Viscount Newport, Sir Joseph Williamson, Secretary of State, and Samuel Pepys, officiated as Stewards. From the diary of the latter we learn that the Old Artillery Garden was flourishing only a few years before, as, on the 20th of April, 1669, he says:—

"In the afternoon we walked to the Old Artillery Ground, near the Spitalfields, where I never was before; but now, by Captain Dean's invitation, did go to see his new gun tried, this being the place where the officers of the Ordnance do try all their great guns; and when we came, did find that the trial had been made; and they going away with extraordinary report of the proof of his gun, which, from the shortness and bigness, they do call 'Punchinello.'" *

1678.—Tuesday, the 4th of June, was appointed to be an extraordinary day for the Company to march through the City, and afterwards to perform an exercise, provided the City Trained Bands did not march the same week, so as not to interfere with

* The Diary and Correspondence of Samuel Pepys, p. 659. 8vo. London, 1870.



Godfrey Kneller. Pinxt

T. Bragg. Sc.

*Samuel Pepys.
One of the Stewards. 1677.*

their muster, as so many of their officers and sergeants belonged to the Company.

In May it was ordered that Colonel Mews, and Captain Perry, who generally drew up the programme of the exercise, should lead once a month on the private General days, and members of the Court of Assistants were also to lead once a month, according to seniority.

The names of the officers on the General day, on the 4th of June, were as follows :—

| Commanders. | Lieutenants. | Ensigns. | Half-Pikemen. |
|--|-------------------|---------------------|---------------|
| Sir Thos. Bludworth, } Kt. and Alderman, } Leader-in-Chief } | Lt. M. Strutton | Capt. Harvey | Lt. Tallis. |
| Col. Mews | Capt. Halford... | Capt. Broomer ... | Lt. Browne. |
| Capt. J. Frind | Lt. Hillman ... | Capt. Baker | Lt. Helke. |
| Lt.-Col. Beaker | Lt. Cooper | Capt. Berisford ... | Lt. Soultter. |
| Capt. Perry | Capt. Horne ... | Capt. Dodson | Ens. Hankey. |
| Capt. Coston | Lt. Baldrie | Capt. Pergehouse . | Lt. Godard. |

On the 13th of August the Court ordered that A. Nowth was to have £8 per annum as leading drumbeater.

The Feast-day was celebrated on the 24th of October; Dr. Dove preached the sermon, at St. Mary-le-Bow, and the Company dined at Merchant Taylors' Hall, H.R.H. the Duke of York, the Duke of Monmouth, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen being present.

On the 28th of October the Clerk was ordered to provide nine men to keep watch in the Artillery Ground for the security of the arms, and to pay them each half-a-crown; and also to provide powder, match, and bullets for them.

The Court resolved, on the 28th of November, that—Colonel Mews, the Treasurer, having been summoned before the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen to show them their lease and the patent of the Company, in order to make them pave the South side of the ground—they desired the Treasurer to inform the Lord Mayor and Aldermen that they did not consider themselves under any obligation to pave it, never having done so, but that the City always had. The question was again disputed on the 27th of September, 1681.

1679.—Tuesday, the 2nd of June, was fixed to be a General day in the Artillery Garden, and the 17th to be a General day to march through the City and pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and it was ordered that the commanders on that day should choose their own officers.

Another General day was held in the Artillery Ground on Wednesday, the 24th of September, the Company being divided into two parts, one being "the revolting party." Each side had a Leader, one Lieutenant, one Ensign, and three Lieutenants as "flankers."

The Feast took place on Tuesday, the 21st of October, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, His Royal Highness the Duke of York being present as usual. The sermon was preached at St. Mary-le-Bow, by the Rev. Mr. Pollin; the Earl of Ossory and the Earl of Feversham were two of the Stewards.

The following is a summary of an account of the feast given in a letter published at the time:—*

"You may wonder, after the citizens' address to the Lord Mayor for increasing the City Guards on account of the Duke's presence at Court, that the Artillery Company, which contains about 700 citizens, should invite the Duke to a public entertainment. The Stewards chosen, both for last year and the year ensuing, consist of as many great courtiers as citizens, and, as they bear all extraordinary charges, they are at liberty to invite whom they please. How then could it be imagined that, when one-half are courtiers and the other half courtly citizens, they would omit anything which might tend to the Duke's interest, as they hoped this would prove, and it is commonly said he gave £200 towards the feast! It was stated that only 128 members were present, but some hundreds of other citizens who had paid the usual ticket money of 2s. 6d., when they heard the Duke was going, tore up their tickets; others gave them to

* A Letter giving An Account of the Entertainment of the Duke of York, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, by the Artillery Company, on Tuesday, October 21st, 1679.—Tracts A., 9: 5. O. Cromwell. London: 1652-1752, No. 3, Guildhall Library. See also *London Gazette*.

their porters, or other mean men, and some sold them for a shilling or sixpence apiece.

"Amongst the healths they drank one to the happy Succession in the Right Line, and it is reported that they drank so many that one of the grave City Sirs lost his beaver hat and gold hatband, and left the greater company to sport with the foot-boys; and that the Duke promised to defend the Religion established by law, of the Church of England.

"On the Duke's return through the Poultry, a cry arose from many hundreds of spectators, of 'No Pope, No Papist,' as in the morning; when coming through Temple Bar, the people began to hiss.

"This shows how little was gained by this entertainment, which was no more an act of the City than if one of forty-eight Companies had invited him, and demonstrates the affection of the citizens to their Religion and Government."

The Company was ordered to march regimentally on the Lord Mayor's day if there were a sufficient number; the men were to receive two shillings each, and the officers had a collation provided for them; sixteen extra drummers and one fifer were to be provided, H.R.H. the Duke of York having subscribed ten guineas towards the expenses.

1680.—On the 3rd of March the Court ordered that, for the better method in the practice of Arms, the Lieutenants of the Ground should take it in turns to lead on General days, two members of the Court, told off monthly, to take their place if they were unable to appear; and it was recommended that, both on public and private days, the leaders should not spend more than five shillings on the members present, so "that the reputation of the Ground" might be preserved.

Tuesday, the 9th of March, was appointed to be a General day, and every Tuesday fortnight during the year. On the 30th of April a plan of the new Armoury was ordered to be prepared by the 11th of May, and also an estimate for coping the wall; and ten thousand bricks were ordered to be accepted from Mr. Tindall in place of his coping the east wall, which he had not then done.

The Feast was again held this year at Merchant Taylors' Hall, on Wednesday, the 15th of September, H.R.H. the Duke of York being present; and amongst the Stewards were the Marquis of Worcester, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl of Mulgrave, Lord Berkeley, and others. The sermon was preached, at St. Mary-le-Bow, by the Rev. Mr. Scott.

The 29th of October, being Lord Mayor's day, the Company escorted the Lord Mayor as usual to Westminster, under Sir W. Pritchard as Commander-in-Chief, sixteen drummers, one fifer, and eight pioneers being provided for the occasion.

1681.—At this period it was thought necessary by the Court party that the City should be governed by men who were likely to favour them and their interests, and they therefore turned their attention to the election of the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs for London and Middlesex. In this scheme the Artillery Company could not fail to attract their notice, as their rank and power in the City, and their influence at all important elections, had become proverbial, and the question was always asked, "Who is the Artillery Company for?" And previous to the time when the Court of Aldermen agreed that the members of their Court should succeed to the chair by seniority, it was usual for the Artillery Company to confer the command on one of the General days for exercise, on such of the Aldermen as they intended should be elected Lord Mayor at the next election.

It may perhaps have been by their influence that Sir John Moor, a great friend of the Court party, was elected to the chair. "The election of Sheriffs was carried on amidst confusion, hurry, and intrigue; and as it appeared to both parties as essentially necessary to be sure of favourable juries, each of them exerted every nerve to obtain Sheriffs of their own persuasion. But the Court having secured the interest of Sir John Moor, the Lord Mayor, and a considerable part of the Aldermen, they succeeded in the election of two persons agreeably to their wish. This election of sheriffs afforded another cause for general dissatisfaction and complaint. From the unjust interference of the Court, through the activity of the Lord Mayor, the citizens protested against the measures adopted, and the picture of the Duke of



J. Smith, Sc.

*John, Earl of Mulgrave.
Admitted a Member 21st Oct. 1679.*

York in the Guildhall was defaced. The King expressed his disgust at this conduct, and the Court of Aldermen, by a solemn resolution, on the 27th of January, 1682, expressed their abhorrence of the indignity, and offered a reward of £500 for the discovery of the offender." *

From the year 1678 the Artillery Company had, by degrees, become unpopular at the Court, and, their increasing power being regarded with some jealousy, the King resolved to suspend their ancient rights, and annual elections by a free choice of the whole body; and being tolerably satisfied with the men who at that time presided over its affairs, was determined to secure himself against the probability of any change, and therefore sent a Royal Warrant, dated the 9th of February, to the Court of Assistants, directing them to continue to hold office, and empowering them to reject or throw out whom they pleased and to elect others in their room.†

Similar Warrants were sent annually from this period until the year 1685, when the last was issued by James II.

"However plausible these expressions of regard might appear, they were nevertheless accompanied with a direction that 'no alteration should be made' in the officers of the Company, which tended to abrogate the right, of which the Company had never before been deprived, of electing their own officers, at their own time; and though there were, and are at this day, many instances on the records of their re-electing the same President, Colonel, and Treasurer, yet they had the satisfaction of freely using their elective franchise, and of offering by that free choice the highest testimony of their most cordial approbation; and any infringement of this right was, at that moment, of peculiar importance in their eyes, as the King had very lately dissolved the Parliament, and summoned another to meet at Oxford on the 21st of the following March, and the election for the City of London was fixed for the 14th of February."‡

The following account of the proceedings at the General

* Maitland, Vol. I., p. 473; Highmore, pp. 101, 102; Blackwell, pp. 4, 5.

† Highmore, p. 102; Blackwell, p. 5. See Appendix A, No. 3.

‡ Highmore, p. 103.

Court this year, held on Wednesday, the 9th of February, is not without interest:—*

“The Artillery Company being assembled, according to summonses and yearly custom, at the Armoury in the Artillery Ground, to choose new officers, they proceeded to election without interruption, and chose Sir Joseph Sheldon, President; Sir William Pritchard, Vice-President; and Sir Matthew Andrews, Treasurer. Then proceeding to choose their Court of Assistants, which consists of twenty-four members, there was read the list of the old Assistants. Sir Joseph Sheldon stood up, and told them that, according to ancient custom, they must choose eight of the twenty-four to serve again, and the other sixteen, whom they pleased out of the Company, which they did, leaving out four of the old sixteen, viz., one Captain of the Yellow and three of the Blue.

“Being then to proceed to choose the other officers, Sir Joseph proposed to choose their Lieutenant and Ensign, at which the Company were much disturbed, and cried out, ‘First let us choose our Leader! Sir Joseph, standing up again, endeavoured to persuade them from it; telling them he should think himself much obliged to them if, after the honour they had done him in choosing him their President, they would so far condescend as to think him worthy to give them his advice, and to entreat them that no heat might arise amongst them in that affair; and, forasmuch as they had been well governed for these three years last past without a Leader, they would try it one year more; and also told them that whatever they might think of him, he did propose it as his best advice; and withal assured them that so long as he had had the honour to be of that Society, he had, to the utmost of his power, endeavoured to serve them with his best services, and still would continue so to do; and that at any, and at all times, when occasion required it, he should heartily venture his person and purse, as far as any man alive, in the

* “His Majesty’s Letter to the Artillery Company; with an Account of their Proceedings at the Choice of several Officers for the ensuing year, on Wednesday, the 9th of this instant February, 1680-1.” London: Printed for V. T., 1681. British Museum, folio sheet $\frac{1850. c. 6}{15}$

defence of the King, the Laws as now established, and the Protestant religion; upon which the Company returned thanks. Then Sir Matthew Andrews made a speech to the same effect, endeavouring, likewise, to persuade them to defer the choice of a Leader, and proceed to the choice of a Lieutenant and Ensign, at which the Company, with a great cry, said 'No, no, no; a Leader first!' and would by no means be pacified without a Leader; which, Sir Joseph perceiving, stood up, and, in a short speech, told them:—'Gentlemen, You now compel me to that which I was in hopes I need not to have done, and do protest am yet unwilling to do, before I again endeavour to prevail with you to proceed to the choice of a Lieutenant, and leaving the choice of a Leader alone;' but still with more violence they cried, 'No, no, no—a Leader—a Leader—nothing before a Leader!' Then Sir Joseph Sheldon said: 'Gentlemen, you force me, and I cannot avoid it, to tell you, that I have received a letter from His Majesty, in order to this day's business, which I desire may be read, the purport of which is as follows:—*9th February.*—That His Majesty being well satisfied with the loyalty and ability of the officers then serving, was willing, out of his concern and care for the good government of the Company, that no alteration or change should be made by removing any, or electing others. His Majesty thought fit to signify the same to them as a matter conducing to his service, and therefore did not doubt their ready compliance therewith.*

"After which divers members stood up, one after another, saying they humbly conceived that there was not anything in His Majesty's Letter which did forbid their choosing a Leader, but that their proceedings seemed rather to comply with it, for that they intended not to change their Leader, but, according to custom, to choose their old Leader again, &c. Upon which the letter was read again, and a third time, but the reading thereof did the more confirm them in their opinion that His Majesty's Letter did in no way prohibit their choosing a Leader. A worthy member that was newly chosen into the Assistants, stood up and said, 'Mr. President, with your Worship's favour,

* See Appendix A, No. 3.

I humbly conceive His Majesty's gracious Letter to us may have relation to a particular circumstance in our affair of this day, it having been noised about the town, in coffee-houses, &c., that the Artillery Company at their next choice would leave out the Duke of York as their Captain-General, and choose some other person of honour in His Highness' stead, some fancying one person and some another; but I hope no member of this Honourable Society came hither with any such design, for indeed it doth not lie before us, nor is it the business of this Company. Now perhaps the noise of this change might come to His Majesty's knowledge, and probably occasion the sending this letter, and no other reason. The assembly seemed well pleased with this motion, by their applauding it with a general hum. Another standing up, said he humbly conceived that their past proceedings were more contradictory to His Majesty's Letter than their desiring to proceed to the election of a Leader could be; and, it being fit that His Majesty's Letter should be obeyed, asked why the same was not produced sooner, that it might have prevented the past proceedings, as well as the rest of the business of the day.

"Upon which Sir Joseph stood up and said: 'Gentlemen, I do not know what you dare do, but I assure you I dare not do anything which may seem to oppose this His Majesty's Letter. Pray consider what you are doing, and be prevailed with.' But they cried out 'No, no, no; nothing before a Leader be chosen. A Leader, a Leader, a Leader! Then Sir James Edwards stood up and made a speech to the same purpose as Sir Joseph Sheldon and Sir Matthew Andrews had done before, but nothing could prevail, they being so violently set upon their old custom; nothing but 'A Leader, a Leader,' &c. At which Sir Joseph, seeing nothing would prevail, said: 'Gentlemen, I must adjourn the Court till some day next week, against which time you shall have fair summons, and in the meantime I will wait on the King, and know His Majesty's royal pleasure and meaning in the Letter, in which, as in all other affairs that may concern the honour and welfare of this Society, I do promise you to use my utmost endeavours'; at which the major part of the Company seemed well pleased, upon condition that all the

choices they had made should be void, and to choose all anew when they met again; and so the Court was adjourned.

“ However the King did not think proper wholly to lay the Company aside as—having gained a sufficient number of the Assistants for his purpose, and the Duke of York, their Captain-General always giving directions how they should manage the affairs of the Company—it was practically entirely under his control. But notwithstanding this the Company continued for many years in a declining condition, having but few members but such as fell in with the Court party, and were inclined to favour Popery.*

The King, in consequence of this misunderstanding, sent a second Warrant, dated the 16th of February, to the following effect:—

That as he was given to understand that the same doubts had arisen concerning the meaning of the previous Warrant, explain that it is His Majesty's pleasure that all those who held any office or employment during the previous year should continue in the same for the year ensuing, and that in case of death or other incapacity of any of them, that then the Court of Assistants might fill the vacancy; and the Leadings in the Artillery Ground were to be performed in the same manner as during the past two or three years.†

On the 10th of March the Court ordered that the officers of the ground, viz., the Lieutenants and Ensigns, should be desired to lead in turn, and also that members of the Court should lead once a year at least, and if unable to do so, the next in succession to take his place, he defraying the cost, which amounted to about £1.

Tuesday, the 22nd of March, and every Tuesday fortnight, was appointed to be a General day until further orders.

The herbage of the ground was let for two years at £20 per annum to the two Sergeants, on the condition of their not allowing any stakes, rubbish, haystacks, &c., to be erected thereon, or any horses exercised or ridden there.

The 14th of June was a General day, to march through the

* Blackwell, p. 5.

† See Appendix A, No. 4.

City, Sir James Edwards, Kt. and Alderman, being Commander-in-chief; Lieut.-Colonel Frind, Lieutenant-Colonel; Captain Perry, Major; Major Kensea, eldest Captain; Captain Hudson, second Captain; and Major Harvey, third Captain, and three others. Each of the above commanders were to choose their own officers, but none under the degree of Captain was to carry the colours. The two Lieutenants of the Artillery Ground were to draw up the exercise, and there were to be fourteen drummers, two fifers, eight pioneers; each of the six commanders had one Lieutenant, one Ensign, and one Half-Pikeman as usual.

Four coaches were ordered to be provided on the 16th of June for the Court to wait on His Majesty with an address from the Company.

The Company attended the funeral of the President, Sir J. Sheldon (who left them £100 towards building an Armoury), on Thursday, the 25th of August. On the 4th of October, Vice-President Sir William Pritchard was elected President, vice Sheldon, deceased, and Sir J. Smith, Vice-President.

On the 20th of October the Company was ordered to attend the Lord Mayor on the day of his being sworn at Westminster; every four men were to have a bottle of sack and a bottle of claret, a large fowl, "and the bottle for bread;" the commanders and officers were to have a supper.*

The date on which the Feast was held this year is not mentioned, but there is a list of Stewards, which contains the names of the Earl of Thanet, Lord Lumley, Lord Allington, and Lord Paston.

At a Court of Assistants, on the 18th of November, Sir William Pritchard and Sir J. Smith were requested to move in the Court of Aldermen that the sum of £20, which was always allowed by the City to the Company when His Majesty dined at the Guildhall on the Lord Mayor's day, should be paid to them.

1682.—At the General Court held on Tuesday, the 21st of

* They were probably allowed to keep the bottles to sell, and provide themselves with bread from the money they realised.

February, His Majesty's Letter, dated the 11th of February, was presented and read, which stated that, having received good testimony of their conduct and leadings during the past two or three years, he was willing to show "not only our Royal favour, but our special concern for the welfare of our said Company; and for the better preservation of it in its ancient good order and discipline," he ordered that no change should be made in the officers and others who held office, "unless the Court of Assistants do see cause to remove or change any of them." *

After reading His Majesty's Letter the Company unanimously and cheerfully acquiesced (no man opposing it) with His Majesty's Royal commands in every particular of his said letter. Whereupon an eminent member of the Company moved that the Company would now consider whether it were not their duty humbly to satisfy His Majesty, and certify the world, of their abhorrence of the paper produced at the proceedings against the Earl of Shaftesbury, called an Association, and all such sorts of leagues, associations, and conspiracies, and the contrivers thereof, to which the whole Court, as readily as they assented to the letter, concurred with the motion, and agreed as one man that the Court of Assistants should forthwith draw up such an Address in the name of the Company, declaring their abhorrence and detestation of the said Association, or anything of that kind, and present it to His Majesty by such persons as the Court of Assistants should think fit.†

At a Court held at the Guildhall on the 23rd of February, the following Address was agreed to :—

"To the King's Most Excellent Majestie.

"May it Please yo^r Majestie,—

"Wee yo^r Majesties most Loyall, Dutyfull, and Obedient Subjects, The President, Vice-President, Trear, Court of Assistants, and body of the Artillery Company of yo^r City of London, being truly sensible of the great Happynes which Wee and All other yo^r Majesties Subjects enjoy under yo^r Majesties

* See Appendix A, No. 5.

† The conspiracy here referred to was the Rye House Plot.

most wise, legall, just, Mercifull, & Prosperous Gouvernement, cannot but with horror and Amazement look back upon the Ruine and Destruction in which yo^r Most Sacred person, yo^r excellent Gouvernement, and these Kingdoms were lately in danger of being swallowed up; by meanes of an horrid and Traiterous Conspiracy and Association, the forme and Modell whereof, was seized in the Clossett of the Earle of Shaftsbury by one of the Clerks of yo^r Most Honbl^e Privy Councill.

“Such an open and barefaced project and Bond of Rebellion, as certainly the World never before saw, in which the Accursed Conspirators have much outdone the Originall after which they copyed, The Solemn League & Covenant, and The holy League of France, by which (notwithstanding the Duty and Allegiance which they owe yo^r Majestie yo^r Lawfull Heyres and Successors) They sweare Obedience to some of their fellow Subjects, and upon condition that they enter into, subscribe, and sweare, the said Traiterous Association, by which they covenant and combine together by force to disband yo^r Majesties standing forces. A Guard which All yo^r truly Loyall Subjects think soe necessary to the safety of yo^r Royall Person and Crowne that none can dislike them or be terrified by them but those who are studying and attempting the Destruction of both by which they Sweare, With their joynt and particular forces to pursue unto Destruction, All such as upon any Title whatsoever (not yo^r Mat^{ies} Most Sacred Person excepted) shall oppose the Ends of this Association.

“Now, although no Words can sufficiently expresse the Wickednesse and Villany of this Conspiracy, which would (had it not by Gods Gracious providence & yo^r Majesties wisdom been prevented) have deprived yo^r Majest^{ie} of y^t power with w^{ch} God hath intrusted you, and subjected yo^r good subjects to ye lawlesse, Arbitrary, and Tyrannicall power of a handfull of their fellow Subjects, who by force of Armes, and the sperious pretences of securing Religion and property would have enslaved them, though neither the Wickednesse of their Designe nor our just detestation & abhorrence of it can bee sufficiently expressed.

“Yet Wee humbly beg leave to assure yo^r Ma^{tie}, that Wee

doe from our Souls detest & abhor this & all other Traterous Associations upon what pretence soever, and shall always (as in Duty bound) be ready and chearfully willing to spend the last drop of our Blood in the Defence of yo^r most sacred person, Crowne, Dignity, & Prerogative, yo^r Heyres & Lawfull Successors and yo^r Government in Church & State as by Law Established."

In this year a considerable acquisition to the ranks of the Company was made, as the following signatures in the ancient Vellum Book show : amongst others there being the names of Grafton, Lichfield, Sussex, Dorset, Clarendon, Queensbury, Oxford, Lansdowne, Denbigh, Hyde, Cholmondeley, Halifax, Somerset, Hamilton, Arran, Huntingdon, Sutherland, Kildare, Gerard, Effingham, Kinsale, and many others. The history of these times will sufficiently explain on what side the influence of the Company was likely to prevail, by this addition to its roll.*

At a Court on the 14th of March, that day fortnight, and every alternate week, was ordered to be a General day, as formerly had been the custom.

The Feast was fixed to take place at Merchant Taylors' Hall, on Thursday, the 20th of April ; the Company assembled at the Guildhall, and the sermon was preached, at St. Mary-le-Bow, by Dr Spratt, who received "three Jacobus Peeces" for his trouble, and was desired to print it. The Court ordered that only members should have tickets for the Feast, and that their names should be written down.

On the 8th of April, a deputation was appointed to wait on H.R.H. the Duke of York, to know when it would be convenient for the Company to congratulate him on his happy return to Whitehall.

In the afternoon of the 11th of April, the Court went to St. James's to congratulate him on his happy return from Scotland. At a Court held the same day three members were voted out of the Court, and three others elected, under the authority of the King's Warrant ; no reason is assigned for thus removing them, but it was probably on account of political considerations.

* Highmore, p. 107.

The thanks of the Court were voted, on the 27th of April, to Colonel Legg, the Master of the Ordnance, for his kind offer to lend six small field-pieces at any time appointed for a General day to exercise arms.

Tuesday, the 23rd of May, was ordered to be a General day, to march through the City, and pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and afterwards to perform an exercise in the Garden. No Officer was to carry a Partisan or Colour under the degree of Captain-Lieutenant; and eighteen drummers, three fifers, and eight pioneers were ordered to be provided for the occasion by the Treasurer.

On the 9th of May, there was "a very great Court of Assistants, being 37."

The Company attended the funeral of Sir T. Bludworth, on Wednesday, the 24th of May.

On the 5th of September, the Company marched to Balmes for an exercise, and the Treasurer was ordered to provide three pieces of canvas for tents, and boards for bridges.

The Company attended on Lord Mayor's Day, according to custom; every file of four deep was ordered to have a bottle of sack, bottle of claret, and a large fowl, and if the provisions did not hold out, the rest of the files were to have six shillings in money; and the supper at night for the Officers was to be paid for by the Treasurer.

The Feast was not held until Tuesday, the 28th of November, when the Company dined at Merchant Taylors' Hall, the Duke of Albemarle, Earl of Orford, Earl of Arundel, and Lord Falkland being Stewards; Dr. Hicks preached the sermon, at St. Mary-le-Bow, for which he received "three Jacobies," and was requested to print it. On these occasions it was probably thought a good opportunity to obtain members, as the Clerk was instructed to pay to the Treasurer all the money he received for entrances on that day.

It may here be remarked that this was the first Society or body which was interrupted before the Charters of Corporation were taken away by the King. In this year Sir Robert Sawyer then executed the office of Attorney-General, whom Burnet calls a dull, hot man, and forward to serve all the designs of the



Michael Wright. Pinx.

C. Bestland. Sc.

*George Monk, Duke of Albemarle?
Admitted a Member, 10th Aug. 1664.*

Court. He acted under the direction of Lord Chief Justice Saunders, a learned but very immoral man, to overthrow the Charters of the City and its Companies; and the Artillery Company was, as has been stated, the first on which he tried the fatal experiment.

The King, notwithstanding his having appointed the Duke of York as the Captain-General of the Company, caused the first weight of his authority to fall upon it, as a prelude to that which he soon afterwards issued against the City.

The pretences for the writ of *quo warranto* against the City were, that in the year 1679 they had addressed the King against the prorogation of Parliament in terms which were pretended to contain scandalous reflections on the King and his measures; and their having imposed taxes on goods brought to market to defray the expenses of rebuilding after the Great Fire; and for this it was said the City had forfeited all its privileges.

The day previous to the judgment, the Lord Chief Justice Saunders died of apoplexy; and Jones, one of the judges, pronounced the judgment upon the above principles, that the City had forfeited its charter; but the consequences of this step were so much apprehended that they did not then venture to enforce it, but adjudged that the King might seize on the liberties of the City. The Attorney-General moved that the judgment might not be recorded.*

1683.—The Company went to dine with the Lord Mayor on the 31st of January, and were ordered to meet at the Guildhall with their swords and red feathers.

The usual Warrant for continuing all officers in their places was issued, dated the last day of February, similar to the one for the previous year, except that any changes might be made by the Court of Assistants, "which we leave wholly to their discretion."†

The 8th of May had been fixed for the Company to march through the City and pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, but it was postponed to the 15th in consequence of the following letter, dated the 17th of April:—

* Highmore, pp. 110, 111.

† See Appendix A, No. 6.

“PRITCHARD, Mayor.

“Whereas this City hath been at great expences in defence of Severall prosecutions, for not repairing the High wayes neer the Artillery ground, & the charges of the said repaires will amount also to a considerable sum of money, now it being propounded to this Court on behalfe of the Artillery Comp^y that they will undertake the charge of that worke for the future if they might have leave to build on the front of the saide ground, which they hold by a Lease, from this City for a great number of yeares to come, it is agreed by this Court, That the saide propositions bee recomended to the Next Comon Councell for their approbation.

“WAGSTAFFE.”

The whole Court was ordered to be summoned for the 15th of May, to consider the question of letting part of the ground fronting the South.

The City presented, on the 18th of June, 1683, a submissive address to the King, at Windsor, offering to comply with the regulations he would be pleased to prescribe for them; the principal of which were, that if he did not approve of the Lord Mayor, Sheriffs, or other officers of the City, he might nominate others. The King ordered his pardon to be signed by the Lord Keeper, and commanded them to return and adopt certain regulations which he then dictated, reserving his approbation of their elected officers on Midsummer Day, otherwise that judgment should be entered up. He afterwards repented of these terms as too favourable, although he had availed himself of them all. The citizens expected that it would soon be necessary to put themselves upon the defensive; and the Court of Lieutenancy requested that the arms of the Artillery Company might be removed to the Guildhall, which the Court of Assistants agreed to on the 28th of June; and ordered that no tickets for a General day should be sent out until further orders. These harsh measures produced alarm in every corporate town in the kingdom, and the City of London awaited the issue with stifled discontent. Judgment was entered on the 14th of the following October, and then the King sent new Commissions to the Aldermen, whom he instituted during pleasure only.*

* Highmore, pp. 111-13; and Maitland.

At a Court, on the 25th of July, the six Colonels (of the six Regiments of Trained Bands, who were members of the Company and Court of Assistants), or any three of them, were ordered to "prepare an address to His Majesty and H.R.H. the Duke of York to congratulate their happy deliverance from the bloody conspiracy."

The following day the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, accompanied by the Court of Assistants, presented two addresses, the one to His Majesty, and the other to H.R.H. the Duke of York, "to congratulate their safe deliverance from that bloody conspiracy lately intended against them." The address to His Majesty was delivered by the Captain-General, H.R.H. the Duke of York, and that to the Duke of York by the Lord Mayor, who was then President of the Company.

At the march to Balmes, on Tuesday, the 21st of August, the tents were ordered to be pitched in the great field leading to Kingsland.

At a Court on the 24th of October, some of the members belonging to each of the six regiments of Trained Bands were requested to ask their Colonels to present a Colour to the Company. The Colours were to be the same as the last, with a *port-cullis* for the first, second and third Captains, as a distinction. The six Colonels complied with the request, and presented the Colours, on being excused quarterage from Christmas; in return the Court ordered that the tents belonging to the Company should be sent to the Colonels for their accommodation on their next muster in the Artillery Ground.

On Lord Mayor's day, the 29th of October, the Lord Mayor was received on his return from Westminster at Blackfriars, where he was saluted by ("The Military Glory of the Nation") the Artillery Company with three volleys, who, on this occasion, were very gallantly and richly habited; many of the musketeers in buff, with head-pieces of massive silver, all with red feathers, and most of the pikemen, as well as the officers, wore very rich embroidered belts; they also had the six new colours lately presented by the Colonels of the six regiments of the Trained Bands.*

* London Pageants, 1683, in Guildhall Library.

The annual Feast was held on the 8th of November ; Dr. Hescott preached the sermon, at St. Mary-le-Bow, for which he received three guineas ; the two Sergeants of the Ground were ordered to attend at the Hall to keep the table for the Court of Assistants.

1684.—A similar Warrant to last year, dated 27th of February, was issued, confirming all officers and others in their places for the ensuing year.*

Tuesday, the 3rd of June, was fixed for a march through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and afterwards to perform an exercise, but on hearing that H.R.H. the Duke of York would lead them it was postponed for him to fix a day. The President, Sir William Pritchard, and Colonel Friend, the senior Lieutenant of the Garden, having waited on H.R.H. the Duke of York to know his pleasure, he inquired whether the train of Artillery was in the Ground when he first led them, which neither of them could inform him ; and so Colonel Friend applied to the Court for information on the subject, but, no one being positive about it, they were unable to give an answer. It was therefore ordered that Colonel Friend should make inquiries as to whether the train of Artillery was made use of by the Company when His Royal Highness first led them, and to inform His Royal Highness before the march out.

Thursday, the 26th of June, having been fixed for the march out, the members were summoned to appear in the Artillery Garden by nine o'clock in the morning, "in their compleatest arms and habit," with red feathers.

Highmore states that, in order to flatter their expectations of a return of his favour, the King in person headed their march, on the 26th of June, to Sir Henry Tulse, Kt., the Lord Mayor, "but it could not be expected that the effect of one entertainment could restore that confidence which the strong hand of power had forfeited."

On the 17th of June, there was a long debate by a very full Court, as to whether they should go to the Lord Mayor on the

* See Appendix A, No. 7.



G. Kneller. Pinx.

T. Holloway. Sc.

*Sir Christopher Wren.
Admitted a Member 17th Aug. 1669.*

HELIOTYPE.

General day with H.R.H. the Duke of York, which was decided in the affirmative. It was arranged that His Royal Highness should be first entertained in the principal tents in the ground, and that the President, Vice-President, and Treasurer, should each present the Duke with a White Staff, as usually had been done. Colonel Friend was to present the Leading Staff; Captain Perry, the Partisan, and Captain Blagrove, the Colours, to His Royal Highness. Forty pioneers, twenty-four drummers, and six fifers, were ordered to be in attendance.

On the 12th of August, Mr. Sheppard was requested forthwith to take down the effigy of his late father from the wall on the north side of the Ground. This was probably done on political grounds, as it was afterwards restored in the year 1690. The Beadle's salary was on the same day reduced from twenty to sixteen pounds per annum.

On Thursday, the 26th of August, a General day was fixed, to march to Balnes and the fields adjacent. Sir William Pritchard, General; Lieutenant-Colonel Friend, Lieutenant-General; Captain Perry, Major; and three other Captains as eldest, second, and youngest Captains respectively. This is the first occasion of the three senior commanders being styled "Generals" and "Majors," and was retained afterwards on all subsequent marches.

The Feast-day was held very late this year, viz., on the 2nd of December, when Dr. Caluammy preached the sermon, at St. Mary-le-Bow. Eight Stewards were nominated, but, with the exception of the three last, others were chosen by direction of H.R.H. the Duke of York, viz., Lords Manchester, Searsdale, Ferrers, and Bruce; Captain A. Harbutt, Sir B. Bathurst, Sir W. Gosling, and Sir Peter Vanderport. It was ordered that the Clerk was to have ten guineas, as usual, from the entrances on the Feast-day.

1685.—The words, this "Honourable" Company, and "Honourable" Court, were first made use of at a Court held on the 4th of February in this year.

CHAPTER IX.

CONDITION OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF
JAMES II.

FROM 1685 TO 1688.

CONTENTS.—Accession of the Captain-General.—The Company present an Address to the King.—Lord Mayor entertains the Company.—Application of Lord Dartmouth for Use of the Ground.—The General Days.—Lord Mayor's Day.—King postpones the Feast, 1685.—His Majesty's Warrant to suspend Elections.—Officers of the Trained Bands.—A Company of Grenadiers raised, 1686.—No Courts held from October, 1687, to October, 1688.—His Majesty's Opinion of the Company.

1685.—The accession of the Captain-General to the Crown, on the demise of his brother Charles, was an event which could not be regarded with indifference, or with very sanguine assurances of satisfaction, either by the Company or the nation; nevertheless the recollection of his personal attention to the Company, and the train of nobility which his royal presence had generally introduced, stimulated their acknowledgment, and burst into overcharged congratulation. They reflected that if they once owed their implicit obedience to their Captain, it was now converted into allegiance for their Sovereign; if they had willingly followed him in their march, he had now the power to command their services in the maintenance of his crown; and therefore, considering the elevated notions which he had always evinced of the regal prerogative, with all the unlimited extensions of its power, they conceived, no doubt, that they might as well

have the credit of offering what, they did not hesitate to doubt, he would very soon demand as his right. Under these impressions alone, it is possible to read the following address upon his accession * :—

“TO THE KING’S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

“The humble Addresse of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company, in the City of London :

“That yo^r Ma^{ties} said ever loyall and most obedient Subjects and Souldiers doe, with all their Souls, Blesse Almighty God for the deliverance of yo^r Sacred Majesty out of the hands of yo^r Bloudthirsty and malicious Enemies, and for repairing the heaviest Calamities imaginable in the loss of our late dread Sovereign by so illustrious a Succession both to his Imperiall Crowne, and to his Royall vertue, all Plotts, forgeries, and antimonarchicall Bills of Exclusion notwithstanding.

“And your Ma^{ties} humble Subjects, being conscious to themselves of the double duty, as well of a Military as of a Civill Allegiance, having for many years last past had the honour to bear Armes under yo^r Ma^{ties} Comand as their Princely leader, and at present as their dread Sovereigne, Doe with their lives and fortunes declare their uttermost detestation of all Conspirators and Conspiracys wthsoever, and that they will with their Swords in their hands defend yo^r Ma^{ties} Honour, Person, Crowne, title and Dignity, ag^t all opposers to their last Breath, Beseeching Almighty God to showre down upon yo^r Sacred Ma^{ties} head All blessings both of the Right and left hand. And your Ma^{ties} most dutyfull Subjects do no longer expect Mercy from Heaven then while they continue firm and steady in their faith and Allegiance to yo^r most Excellent Majesty.”

A General day was fixed for Tuesday, the 5th of May, when the Company was to dine with the Lord Mayor; and the Clerk was ordered to provide a purse in which to put the money that was to be presented to the Lord Mayor.

On the 25th of June, Lord Dartmouth applied for permission

* Highmore, pp. 118-19.

to make use of the Artillery Garden for the exercise of his soldiers.

The Company marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 19th of August, and afterwards performed an exercise; and on the 27th they attended the funeral of Sir Thomas Berkford.

On the 10th of September the Company had a General day to Balmes, and in the fields adjacent, and on Tuesday, the 13th of October, they had a General day in the Artillery Garden.

On the 29th of October the Company received the Lord Mayor, as usual, on his return from Westminster. They generally assembled at the Hall of the Company to which the Lord Mayor-elect belonged, at seven o'clock in the morning, in order to take part in the procession.*

The Treasurer was ordered to provide a pullet, bottle of canary, and bottle of claret for each file of four men who marched on the Lord Mayor's day, and to provide a supper for the officers.

On the 26th of November, the President having spoken to one of the Stewards concerning the Feast for that year, they waited on His Majesty, who was pleased to let them know that his Lords were not as yet at leisure, and directed it to be deferred until further orders.

1686.—At a Court, on the 2nd of April, the President stated that he had spoken to Mr. Bridgman concerning His Majesty's letter to the Company, and believed that the letter was laying ready, and Captain Baker was therefore requested by the Court to call for it.

At the next Court, held on the 9th of April, the President brought in His Majesty's most gracious letter, dated the 6th of June, 1685, which was read, and ordered to be entered into the Book of Orders.

This warrant, or letter, was precisely similar to those which had been issued by Charles II. during the last three or four years of his reign; stating that His Majesty, "being well satisfied of the loyalty, good affection, and abilitie of the present Officers

* London Pageants, 1685, Guildhall Library.

and Commanders," and being willing to show not only his royal favour, but his special concern for their welfare, and the better to preserve it in its ancient good order and discipline, directed that no change should be made in any of the Officers. It was left to the discretion of the Court of Assistants, if they thought it necessary, to change or remove any of their number, and elect others to supply such vacancies; and the usual Leadings were to be held in the Artillery Garden as usual.*

At the same Court, on the 9th of April, the Colonels of the six regiments of Trained Bands were requested to make their Officers appear constantly on Tuesdays in the Artillery Ground. It was also ordered that Sam Jones, Esq., should be one of the Court of Assistants of "ye Honnerable Artillery Company," and that notice should be given to him of the same.

On the 18th of May, it was stated that Lord Dartmouth was very willing to pay for any damage done to the herbage, wall, or gates of the Ground by the tents.

Permission was given on the 11th of August for such members as chose, to exercise according to "Ye Method of ye Grano-deeres," upon application to Captain Kelk.

Besides the usual number of drums and fifes usually supplied for a march, three hautboys were provided for the Lord Mayor's Day. A number of the Grenadiers of the Company, dressed in buff, with crimson velvet caps, lined with rich furs, attended the Lord Mayor on the 29th of October, on his landing at Blackfriars.† Taking into consideration the great kindness and respect always shown to the Company by Sir J. Peake, the Lord Mayor, it was resolved that the Company should entertain him at dinner at some convenient time, and it was ordered that the members should be made acquainted with this resolution at the lodging of the colours that evening.

1687.—The first General day was held in the Artillery Garden on the 15th of February, when Sir J. Friend was appointed to Lead; Captain Perry on the next General day, and then the Court of Assistants, in succession from where they left off the previous year.

* Appendix A, No. 8. † London Pageants, 1686, Guildhall Library.

The President, Vice-President, and Treasurer were appointed to wait on His Majesty to know His pleasure about settling the Officers of the Ground for the ensuing year.

The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on Thursday, the 9th of June, when two Captains were chosen to lead the Grenadiers. This is the first time this body is mentioned, and it is probable that they were only lately formed, since the application to the Court on the 11th of August, 1686.

About 500 tickets were generally issued for these marches, which was probably about the strength of the Company.

No Court was held from October, 1687, to October, 1688.

The Company formed the usual Guard of Honour at Blackfriars Stairs, to the Lord Mayor, on his return from Westminster on the 29th of October.

1688.—At a Court held on the 17th of October, Sir James Smith reported that he and Sir M. Andrews had waited on His Most Sacred Majesty to know His Royal Will and Pleasure as to whether the Artillery Company should march on the Lord Mayor's Day according to custom. His Majesty said that he was heartily glad to see them there, and desired that the Company should march by all means, for they were honest gentlemen, and that he could trust them.

Four hundred tickets were ordered to be printed for the occasion; and sixteen drummers, sixteen pioneers, and four hautboys were to be provided as usual.

CHAPTER X.

THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF WILLIAM III. AND
MARY II.*(William and Mary, 1689-1694—William III., 1694-1702.)*

FROM 1689 TO 1702.

CONTENTS.—Royal Warrant restoring Company's Privileges and Right of Elections.—Exercise of Arms renewed.—Sergeants of Trained Bands admitted.—Wall and Gates repaired.—Stewards not to be Members of Court unless elected.—Effigy of Colonel Sheppard restored.—Game of Pall-mall prohibited in Ground.—King declares himself Captain-General.—Duke of Norfolk appointed during his Absence.—Salaries of Clerk and others.—Aldermen made Honorary Members of Court, 1692.—Subscription to pay off the Debts.—Address to the Queen, 1692.—Paving the Highway.—Captain of Pioneers.—Standing Orders relating to Command.—Sergeants of Middlesex Militia admitted, 1693.—Company dine with Lord Mayor.—The Procession.—The Arms to be borne by Marshal and Flankers.—Address to the King, 1696.—The Royal Warrant to the Lieutenancy.—Petition to Corporation for Permission to build, 1698.—The Agreement signed, 8th December.—Pavement in Chiswell Street.—Legal Proceedings against Company.—Want of Funds.—Officers and Servants discharged.—Application to Court of Aldermen.—Proposal to close the Ground, 1701.

IN 1689 the Commons passed a Bill for the restoration of all the Charters, with an exclusion from office of all Mayors and Officers who had consented to, or assisted in, the former surrenders, or contributed towards the issuing or prosecuting the writs of *quo warranto*.

The first point debated in the House of Lords was one of great interest to the City and to all Corporate Societies, being upon the declaratory part, whether a Corporation could be forfeited or surrendered. Lord Chief Justice Holt and two other judges were for the affirmative, and all the rest for the

negative; and the House was so equally divided that the Bill passed by a majority of one only. The Bill received the Royal Assent the following year, reversing the judgment on the *quo warranto* against the City of London, and restoring to it its ancient rights and privileges; and the judgment itself and the proceedings upon it were declared illegal and arbitrary.*

One of the first acts of the King on coming to the throne was to issue a Royal Warrant, dated from Hampton Court on the 22nd of May, restoring all their former privileges, authorizing them frequently to exercise in Arms in the Artillery Ground and other places where they had been accustomed to, and also to hold Courts for the annual choice of officers, and on other occasions as had been their ancient rule and practice.†

The Company had good reason to value so early a sanction as this from a monarch who could have had no personal knowledge of its merits or utility, but from its general eminence and character. Its former important services, and its zealous support of the preceding Sovereigns, may have been detailed to him, and the different parties which surrounded the throne may have given their deserved testimonies to its valour, and their evidence of its regularity.‡

On the 30th of May the Lord Mayor gave orders for the Arms to be delivered to the Clerk, and an exercise was fixed to be held in the Artillery Garden on the 4th of June.

Tuesday the 9th of July, and every Tuesday fortnight during the year, was ordered to be a General day; the two Lieutenants, two Ensigns, and the members of the Court of Assistants to lead each General day in turn according to seniority, and the Leader on such days was not to spend more than a guinea.

All the arrears of quarterage up to Lady-day were remitted, but the Clerk was directed to go to each member who was in arrears and receive what he should please freely to give in consideration of such remission.

On Tuesday, the 16th of July, they marched through the City

* Highmore, pp. 130, 131.

† Appendix A, No. 9.

‡ Highmore, p. 132.



*William III. (Prince of Orange.)
Captain General. 1690-1702.*

to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor; the Commanders were to choose their own Officers, but none under the degree of Captain-Lieutenant, or a member of the Court of Assistants, was to carry a partisan or colour.

Upon receiving intimation from the Grenadiers that Major Kelk, their Leader, was dead, and Lieutenant Thomas Seeley being presented by them to the Court, they approved of him as Leader of the said Company of Grenadiers, for the year ensuing.

A General day was held on Tuesday, the 3rd of September, when they marched to Balmes, there being six Commanders, six Lieutenants, six Ensigns, and six Half-Pikemen, as usual.

At a Court on the 16th of October, it was ordered that all Sergeants belonging to the Trained Bands of London should be admitted members of the Company, to carry muskets, on paying 11s. 6d. entrance-money. This Order was to continue to Lady-day, and no longer.

The walls and gates were ordered to be repaired, in consequence of the late mischief caused by admitting strangers to make use of the ground to try engines, and play at pall-mall.

1690.—A vote of thanks was given to Sir M. Andrews for obtaining £10, from the Ordnance Office at the Tower, towards the cost of making a new pair of gates to the Artillery Garden.

At the General Court, on the 11th of February, it was ordered that only those Stewards who were duly elected should be members of the Court of Assistants, for the coming year.

On the 25th of March, the relatives of Colonel Sheppard were granted permission to erect his effigy in the Artillery Garden, which was ordered to be removed in 1684.

At the same Court a lease of the ground for three years was made to Samuel Smith, Thomas Mainwaring, and John Field, at the rent of £36; on condition that they did not allow any horses to be ridden, or stake to be driven into the ground.

Early in April the Court directed that the stakes which had been fixed there contrary to their former order should be inspected, and the inconvenience which was occasioned by the game of pall-mall, which had been lately practised there was also to be taken into consideration.

At a Court held on the 20th of May, the President, Vice-President, and Treasurer, were ordered to wait on His Majesty, and humbly to entreat him to honour them by being their Captain-General, to which His Majesty graciously assented; and at a Court held on Friday, the 12th of September, a Royal Warrant, dated the 3rd of June, was read, in which the King, for their further encouragement, being well satisfied of their loyalty and respect to his person and government, declared himself Captain-General of the Company, and in his absence appointed the Duke of Norfolk to supply his place until his return.*

On the 23rd of September, they marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and afterwards performed an exercise in the Artillery Garden.

1691.—A new Trust Deed of the ground was ordered to be drawn up at a Court of Assistants, held on the 18th of March. The 30th of June was fixed to be a General day, sixteen drummers in addition to the drummers of the Artillery Ground and of the Grenadier drummers, were ordered to be provided, besides "a set of hautboys," and twelve pioneers. Another General day was held on Tuesday, the 1st of September, to march to Balmes and the adjoining fields.

1692.—At a Court held on the 21st of January it was ordered that the Sergeants of the Trained Bands of the City and the Tower Hamlets who entered themselves members by the 1st of August, should be admitted on paying only 10s. entrance-money, with the usual fees to the servants.

The salaries paid at this period were as follows :—

| | Per annum. | | |
|-------------------------------------|------------|----|----|
| | £ | s. | d. |
| Gunsmith and Armourer | 20 | 0 | 0 |
| Clerk .. | 12 | 0 | 0 |
| Marshal ("and for washing towells") | 10 | 6 | 0 |
| Sergeants | 10 | 0 | 0 |
| Beadle and Ticket-carrier | 16 | 0 | 0 |
| Drumbeater | 8 | 0 | 0 |
| Porter | 4 | 0 | 0 |

* Appendix A, No. 10.



HELIOTYPE,

C. Turner, Sc.

*Henry, Duke of Norfolk,
Appointed Captain General 3rd June, 1690.
(during the Absence of the King only.)*

On the 9th of February it was decided that all the Aldermen of the City who were Members of the Company and paid quarterage should be Honorary Members of the Court of Assistants, and several Members of the Court were appointed to invite the Aldermen who were not Members to join.

Tuesday the 1st of March, and every alternate Tuesday, was fixed to be a General day in the Ground.

A subscription was ordered to be made on the 16th of March by Members for paying off the debts of the Company, and the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Lieutenants, and Aldermen were to be asked to subscribe first to encourage the others.

At the next Court, held in June, it was reported that very few subscriptions had been received, and a deputation was appointed to wait on the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen to ask them to assist, the object for which the money was required being to repair the wall as well as to pay off the debts; all subscriptions were to be paid by the first of July.

The Middlesex Militia, and the City Trained Bands, consisting of six regiments under the command of Sir John Fleet, the Lord Mayor, in all some ten thousand men, assembled in Hyde Park on the 9th of May, where the Queen met them in person (the King being absent in Holland), and expressed her grateful confidence in the alacrity of their zeal for the Crown. On this occasion the Company presented the following Address:—*

“TO THE QUEEN’S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTIE.

“Wee your Majestie’s most loyall dutyfull, and obedient subjects, the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants, of the Artillery Company of the City of London, presume to approach the Royall presence to acknowledge your Majestie’s care and vigilance in dissappointing the designes and mechinations of your most enveterate as well as powerfull enemie the French king, who attempted to invade your kingdoms to support a pretender, whom he hath dignified

* This Address is not in the Court Book, which contains no entries from March to June, but is given in Highmore, p. 135.

with the stile and title of King of Great Brittain, in order to amuse your subjects with ffears and jealousies. But when we consider the glory and honour your Majestie hath acquired to your dominions, by maintaining and supporting so fformidable a confederacy for preserving the reform'd religion and liberty of Europe, we can hardly believe there can be any such monsters in nature as can be disaffected to your Majestie or government, much more considering the benign influence of your Majestie's reign and just administration in all respects. We take this opportunity to assure your Majestie we shall on this, as on all other occasions, to the utmost of our power, maintain and support your Majestie's person and government, as by law established, in church and state, against all your enemies, both at home and abroad, not doubting of your Majestie's ffavor, protection, and encouragement to so long an establisht Society, and wee shall always pray that God may preserve your Majestie's sacred person, as also that of your Royall Consort our Captain Generale, with health and long life, and that your Majestie's reign may be happy and prosperous.

“JOHN FLEET, *President*.

“JEFFERY JEFFERYS, *Vice-President, &c., &c.*”

Tuesday the 21st of June was fixed for the Company to march and pay their respects to the Lord Mayor.

At a Court on the 29th of June, the title of “Drum-Major” was first used in speaking of the “Drumbeater.”

On the 28th of July an order was received from the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen for the Company to pave the highway before the Artillery Garden, and a deputation was appointed to wait on them and give their reasons for not doing it.

At the General day held on Tuesday, the 23rd of August, to march to Balmes, a “Captain of Pioneers” was appointed in addition to the Captain of the Grenadiers.

1693.—At a General Court held on the 14th of February, the following standing orders were made and agreed to, viz. :—

That the Lieutenants and Ensigns of the Ground for the past

year should be honorary Members of the Court for the year ensuing. The officers chosen by the Court were to take rank according to seniority of membership. No person was to "bring up" on General days as Lieutenant-General who was not of the quality of a Knight, Colonel, or Lieutenant or Ensign of the Ground.

Any person chosen to serve as Captain for any General march who refused to serve was to be dismissed the Court, unless he had some reasonable excuse. Members of the Court in all marching and "drawings up" were to take precedence of all others. No person was to be employed on any work or business for the Company until a Member paying quarterage had refused to do it upon as reasonable terms.

It was recommended to the Court to consider of ways and means to prevent the Company falling into debt, and to repair the wall and Armoury effectually.

On the 23rd of February all the Sergeants of the Trained Bands of the City and Tower Hamlets, and of the *Middlesex Militia* were ordered to be admitted as Members on paying 11s. 6d. entrance money only, and the usual quarterage, provided they joined before the next General Court. This order was renewed the following year.

A General day was ordered to be held in the Ground on Tuesday, the 7th of March, and on every alternate Tuesday during the year.

On the 5th of April, Samuel Smith was granted a lease of the Ground for three years, at £36 per annum, provided that if the front of the Ground was let for building he should be allowed a corresponding reduction for the land taken.

Two other General days were held during the year, one on Tuesday, the 20th of June, for the Company to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and perform an exercise in the Ground, and the other on Tuesday, the 29th of August, when they marched to Balmes.

1694.—On the 23rd of January the Company dined with the Lord Mayor at Grocers' Hall; the members were ordered to meet at the Guildhall, with their swords and red feathers, "and that a guinea be allowed for a purse."

"The Method of the Company's March to Dine with the Lord Mayor, as by Sir Matthew Andrews' Order.

The Beadle and Porter.

The President wth A White Staffe.

The Aldermen and Knights by 2 and 2.

The Treasurer with ye Purse & White Staffe.

The Court of Assistants by 2^s.

The Clerk.

The Two Ensignes wth Staves.

The Company Two and Two.

The Lieutenants in ye Reer of all."

The following is a copy of the ticket sent to Members for the occasion:—

*"The forme of ye Tickett for ye Company's Dining with
The Lord Mayor.*

"Sir,

"You being a Member of The Hon^{ble} Artillery Comp^y of London, Are Desired to meet the Presid^t, Treasurer, And Court of Assistants and other Memb^{ers} of the s^d Society, at Guildhall, on Tuesday the 23 of This instant January at one A Clock Precisely, with your sword and Red feather, thence to march to Grocers Hall, to Dine with the Right Hon^{ble} Sir W^m Ashurst, Knight, Lord Mayor of London, and Vice-President of the said Company.

"SAMUEL SMITH, Clerk."

The 6th of March was fixed to be a General day in the Garden, and also every alternate Tuesday during the year, as usual. On Tuesday, the 19th of June, they marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor; and on the 28th of August to Balmes, for a General day. The Court ordered, on the 3rd of October, that no member should go to the place of refreshment on the private General day except those who had been under arms, under a penalty of one shilling, unless they were invited by the Leader.

The Bill of the Keeper of the Guildhall for the Meeting of the Court of Assistants there during the previous two years, was ordered to be paid, viz., £2 for himself and 10s. for the servant.

1695.—The Ground was ordered to be opened for the first day of exercise on Tuesday, the 12th of March. All members under the degree of Captain, who were not members of the Court, were to take their places in all "drawings up" according to

seniority of membership, whether Captain-Lieutenant, or others ; and no officers or servants, except the Clerk, were to attend on the Private days after the Colours were lodged, unless desired by the Leader, so as not to put him to any expense.

Tuesday, the 7th of May, was fixed for the Company to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor ; and it was ordered that no Marshals should march with truncheons except those belonging to the six General Officers and the Captain of the Grenadiers, and no Flankers were to march with a corslet or Commissioned Officer's Pike, but with a weapon eight feet long. The General day at Balmes was held on the 27th of August.

1696.—Leave was first granted by the Court on the 9th of March for members (but no others) to make use of the arms and the Ground privately at convenient times when the Clerk or Sergeants were present.

The following Address was presented by the Company to the King on the 18th of March :—

“ TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTIE.

“ GREAT SIR,—Wee yo^r Maj^{ties} most Loyall & obedient Subjects, the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and body of the Artillery Company of yo^r City of London, Being deeply sensible of ye horrid Conspiracy against ye Life of yo^r sacred maj^{tie}, doe wth all due Resentment Detest so great a wickednesse, and Heartyly Congratulate yo^r Maj^{ties} Deliverance from so Eminent danger, Rendring our utmost thanks and acknowledgments to Almighty God for soe great a blessing, Assuring yo^r Maj^{tie}, that as wee are a Societie that by yo^r Maj^{ties} gracious favour are encouraged in ye Practice of armes, so our Constant endeavours shall always be to Demonstrate our Readynesse to use those Armes for the defence of your maj^{tie}, And Cheerfully to hazard o^r lives for ye maintenance of yo^r maj^{ties} Rightfull, & lawfull Gover^{mt} over us, against all yo^r enemies both at Home & abroad, Ever praying for yo^r maj^{ties} Long life & prosperous Reigne.”

The Court ordered, on the 13th of May, that all members who had entered as Sergeants of the City Trained Bands, Middlesex

Militia, or Trained Bands of the Tower Hamlets, and had since been made commissioned officers, should pay the full entrance money, but Sergeants were still to be admitted at the reduced rate of 11s. 6d., and to pay the difference on promotion.

On Tuesday, the 9th of June, they marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, with Sir J. Fleet as General, Sir Owen Buckingham Lieutenant-General, Lieutenant-Colonel James Boddington, Major-General, and three Captains as Commanders, with six Lieutenants, six Ensigns, and six "Flankers" instead of Half-Pikemen.

Tuesday, the 25th of August, was fixed to be a General day to march to Balmes; and on the 29th of October the Company attended the Lord Mayor on his going to Westminster to be sworn.

1697.—At the General Court, held on the 16th of February, it was ordered that all members who were Knights should be members of the Court of Assistants; also the Field Officers of the City Auxiliaries who were members of the Company and paid quarterage, the same as the Field Officers of the Trained Bands, but the Captains of the Auxiliaries were "to take their dignity by seniority of membership."

The King, desiring that the officers of the Trained Bands should join the Company, sent a Warrant to the Lieutenancy, dated the 21st of March, stating that having confirmed the Artillery Company in its ancient privileges and customs, and wishing it to be preserved in such a manner as should best answer the ends of its first institution, recommended that all the officers of the Trained Bands should join the Company, so that by the frequent exercise of arms according to their rules they might be the better qualified to perform their trust. This recommendation has been incorporated in all subsequent Warrants to the Artillery Company.*

The Court of Assistants were very solicitous for such an acquisition to their numbers as they expected from the effect of this letter; but five months elapsed without any benefit appear-

* Appendix A, No. 11.

ing upon their minutes, and they therefore directed the Clerk to apply to the persons concerned, in order that he might report their compliance or non-compliance at a General Meeting; but his applications were not attended with much success.*

The Ground, which was always closed during the winter months, was ordered to be opened for exercise on Tuesday the 2nd of March.

Those members who were six months in arrears of quarterage were not to be allowed to vote at the General Court. It was then usual for the newly elected members of the Court to entertain the Court on their election.

On the 22nd of June the Company marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor.

Another General day was fixed for Tuesday the 17th of September, for an exercise in the fields leading to Balmes, on which occasion they again had Flankers instead of Half-Pikemen, all of whom were officers, being either Captain-Lieutenants or Ensigns.

On the 9th of December the Court had a debate on the question of letting the front of the Ground for building; at the same Court the arms were ordered to be removed to the Clerk's house to prevent their being stolen.

1698.—The Ground was opened for exercise the first time this year on Tuesday, the 8th of March.

Some difficulty having been experienced in getting members to act as Leaders, after many had declined to lead, the Court, on the 14th of September, elected Captain John Marlows, who offered to serve, to be Lieutenant-General, "he being a very worthy grave citizen and honourable member of the Company."

On the 5th of July they marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor.

In the meantime the affairs of the Company, for the want of the aid which the King's Warrant to the Lieutenancy was calculated to produce, began to decline, and on the 12th of May a Committee was appointed to draw up a memorial to the Court

* Highmore, p. 140.

of Aldermen for permission to build on the frontage of the Ground, who resolved to assist them, and promised them their support if they petitioned the Court of Common Council on the subject. They therefore petitioned the Common Council, through their President, Sir Matthew Andrews, and it was referred by them to the Committee on City Lands, who inspected the Ground, and the Company requested the Lord Mayor, Sir Humphrey Edwin, to call a Court of Common Council for its consideration. On the 29th of October the Court of Assistants was informed that the Court of Common Council had agreed that it was to the interest of the City to grant the request contained in the Company's petition, and that it had been referred back to the Committee on City Lands to conclude an agreement with them.*

A draft agreement was accordingly submitted to the Court of Assistants, on the 6th of December, to allow the Company to build on the South end of the Ground to the extent of ninety feet in depth, next Chiswell Street, but containing a clause that all under-leases should be made by the Controller of the Chamber of London, which clause was rejected by the Court of Assistants, and an amended draft with the said clause omitted was finally approved of by the Controller on the 8th of December.

At a Court held on the 6th of December the Arms were ordered to be sent to the Clerk's house for security, and no more General exercises were to be performed until after the next General Court.

"The Society Exercising Arms in Cripplegate Churchyard," under Lord Dartmouth, applied on the 6th of December to the Company for a copy of the King's Warrant, restoring the exercise of Arms, and to establish "the Society on its ancient foundation"; but the Court of Assistants answered their request by saying that, if any of them were members of the Company, they might attend the Court and hear it read, but that to grant any copy of it would not be "suitable to the respect due to His Majesty." Four of them accordingly attended on the 8th of December, and it was read to them.†

* Highmore, p. 142.

† Idem, p. 143.

1699.—On the 11th of January, the Court ordered that an advertisement should be put in some of the weekly prints, that the front of the Ground was to be let.

The accounts of the Company at the close of the previous year showed that they were at least £78 in debt.

At the General Court held on the 21st of February, a vote of thanks was given to the Committee of City Lands for their kindness and service to the Company, and they were invited to join as Members; and Mr. Isaac Grevill, for his special kindness, was ordered to be elected and continued a Member free of all charges, if he would accept of it.

The Ground was ordered to be opened for exercise on Tuesday, the 14th of March.

On the 31st of the same month, a long debate was held on the question of raising money to discharge the existing debts, to repair the pavement before the Ground in Chiswell Street, to build a wall to separate the ninety feet of land to be let for building from the rest of the Ground, and to promote the buildings. It was resolved unanimously to raise the necessary funds by a subscription, which was opened at the next Court, on the 19th of May, by the President, Sir Robert Clayton, and the Vice-President, Sir William Ashurst, who each subscribed £50. These subscriptions were regarded as loans, to be charged with interest, and to be repaid with the first money received for ground-rents.

This measure was followed by a representation of the case to the Court of Aldermen in July, in which they endeavoured to press for an enforcement of the King's Warrant to the Lieutenancy, and took occasion to urge that they should always be led by an Alderman on their days of exercise. The Court of Aldermen felt the cause of the Company too sincerely to omit any measure in their power for its relief, and therefore desired Sir Francis Child, the Lord Mayor, to recommend the application to the next Court of Lieutenancy, and to request of each other to lead on the days of exercise.*

At a Court of Assistants, on the 5th of September, it was

* Highmore, p. 144.

stated that the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen had been made acquainted with the financial condition of the Company, and that a Court of Lieutenancy would shortly be called to take steps to compel the Officers of the Trained Bands to enter themselves as Members of the Company in accordance with the King's Warrant.

On the 19th of November, it was decided to let the Ground for building, at 3s. a foot.

In the midst of these difficulties an indictment was preferred to and found by the Grand Jury of Middlesex against the Company, for not repairing the pavement in Chiswell Street: the question as to whether the Corporation or the Company were liable to do it had long been disputed, and the repairs had consequently been neglected. Sir Robert Clayton, the President, declared that he thought the honour of the Company was concerned to perform these repairs, and recommended a free gift from the Members in order to effect it. The Court of Assistants adopted this opinion, and took upon themselves to do it in shares guaranteed upon the first money to be received by subscription or otherwise; and upon an assurance from one of the Captains that the repairs should be done as soon as possible (as it was found to be so much out of repair that it could not be done during the winter), the indictment was quashed on the 30th of November.

At a Court held on the 22nd of December, it was resolved that, as the Company's debts exceeded £100, and under the circumstance in which they were then placed by the income not being sufficient to meet the current charges, that all the servants and officers of the Company should be discharged until the next General Court, except the Beadle and the Clerk. Every effort was made to obtain money, and the Colonels of the Trained Bands were called upon to assist in this object.

1700.—Permission was granted by the Court, on the 7th of February, to some of the Members to erect a Butt to shoot at with ball, the cost being defrayed by those who wished to have it made. It was not to be used on Tuesdays when the Company had their exercise, and was to be erected in the north-east

corner of the Ground near the north wall, and to be 36 feet long and 24 feet high.

At the General Court, on the 20th of February, two of the Aldermen were chosen to Lead the Company on the two General days for the ensuing year; and the Ground was opened for exercise on Tuesday, the 12th of March.

On the 22nd of March, one of the Aldermen who had been elected as Leader refused to serve, and the other asked time to consider. A Committee was thereupon appointed to wait on the Lord Mayor and Aldermen to ask them to consider the affair, and those Aldermen who were members of the Company were desired to press the subject on their brethren, which they promised to do.

The inhabitants of Chiswell Street opposite the Ground threatened to make a complaint against the Company at the next sessions if they did not repair the pavement. The work was ordered to be undertaken at once, and £30 per annum was ordered to be set aside from the rent of the herbage, in order to provide the necessary funds for carrying out the repairs. On this security Captain Shorey advanced £100, on which the Company undertook to pay him 6 per cent., and to pay it off at the rate of £30 per annum with the rent from the herbage.

The Company was now in such a serious condition, "through the want of members entering and paying quarterage," that they were unable even to pay their servants; the two Sergeants and the Marshal were therefore informed that they were released from any obligation to serve the Company, and that their arrears of wages would be paid as soon as the necessary money could be obtained.

A deputation waited on the Court of Aldermen, on the 4th of June, and stated that they represented the declining state of the Company to them in the month of July of the previous year, and that as one means of raising it a proposal was then made that the Court of Aldermen should make arrangements for some of them always to Lead, which they promised to recommend to one another. The General Court of the Company consequently elected two of the senior Aldermen, who had never been at that charge before, to be the Generals for that year, but neither of

them would accept it; so that they were still labouring under the same difficulty, and therefore came to "lay the case of the Company before the Court of Aldermen, and to let them know that if they would not consider of some way to support the Company, and particularly to supply it with persons of worth to Lead them, the Company must fall."

Whereupon, being ordered to withdraw, the affair was debated in a full Court, and afterwards, the deputation being called in, the Lord Mayor informed them that the Court had referred the matter to a Committee consisting of the six Colonels of the Trained Bands, who were to report their opinion to the Court, and he had no doubt but that it would be satisfactory to them,

The result of this application is not stated, but some of the Aldermen were probably prevailed upon to lead, as on the 9th of July the Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and on the 17th of September they held a General day and performed an exercise in the fields leading to Balmes.

1701.—At the General Court held on the 3rd of April, the suspension of the Beadle, Sergeants and others was confirmed, and none were elected for the year.

On the 18th of June the Sergeants of the Trained Bands were ordered to be admitted gratis, but to pay quarterage.

But few exercises appear to have taken place this year, as the Ground was not opened until April, and they only had two General days; one on Wednesday, the 2nd of July, when they went to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and the other on Wednesday, the 17th of September, when they performed an exercise in the fields leading to Balmes.

At a Court on the 7th of November a question arose as to whether it would not be better to close the Ground, but it was resolved to keep it open until the General Court, if twenty-four members appeared when summoned for exercise.

1702.—The Ground was opened for exercises on Tuesday, the 3rd of March.

CHAPTER XI.

THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN OF QUEEN ANNE.

FROM 1702 TO 1714.

CONTENTS.—Ensigns Honorary Members of Court.—Address to the Queen.—The Royal Warrant.—Prince George of Denmark Captain-General.—Election of Chairman and President.—Ground let for Building, 1706.—Eight Members to form a Quorum.—Address to the Queen, 1708.—Bayonets to be fixed to Muskets, 1708.—Difficulty in granting Sub-Leases.—An Exercise on Lord Mayor's Day.—East and West Gates.—Elections at General Court, 1702-11.—Fusiliers instead of Grenadiers.—Sergeant Denton expelled.—Court of Aldermen and Leaders.—Salary of Clerk.—Records to be examined.—Twenty-four Grenadiers raised.—“The Queen and House of Hanover.”—Members of Court to attend on Days of Exercise.—Post of Officers on General Marches.

1702.—A General Court was summoned to meet in the tent in the Artillery Ground, on Tuesday, the 5th of May, for the election of Officers, and to take steps to decide what application should be made to the Queen's Majesty for her countenance and favour to the Company, and to obtain Her Majesty's Warrant empowering the Company to meet, exercise Arms, and hold Courts, &c., as in former reigns.

At the General Court it was ordered that the Ensigns of the Ground should be Honorary Members of the Court of Assistants for the year succeeding that in which they served as Ensigns; and the Court of Assistants was directed to draw up an Address and present it to Her Majesty.

The Address was agreed to on the 4th of June, and was as follows :—

*" To the Most Illustrious and High-born Princess Anne,
By the Grace of God Queen of England, Scotland, France, and
Ireland,
Defender of ye Faith:*

" The most humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company, in the City of London :

" Permit us, mighty Queen, to condole with the rest of your faithfull Subjects for ye death of our late most glorious and Heroick Sovereign, of immortall Memory, William the Third, the Deliverer of these Nations from impending Slavery and Superstition, the Rescuer and Maintainer of the Liberties of Europe, and Protector of the Protestant Interest in all the parts of the Earth.

" But of all the obligations he laid on the People of England, what we must ever remember with the most feeling sence of Gratitude, is the preserving of your Majesty from being excluded from the throne; your Accession to which we congratulate with the greatest Sincerity, having not only the most rightful and lawfull Title in the World, but as being likewise the Worthiest to succeed our Deceast Monarch, by your unshaken Adherence to the Church of England, your charitable disposition to tender Consciences, your glorious Resolutions of humbling France, of Supporting your Allies, Maintaining the succession of the Crown in the Protestant Line, and encouraging the peaceable Professions of Arts and Trade in the midst of Tumultuous Wars.

" According to the institution of our Company, we promise to do our best in the training your Loyall Citizens to the use of Arms, for the security of your Royal Person, Title and Dignity, and the preservation of those Blessings so much worth Fighting for, which Citizens can only enjoy in a free government, and under so excellent a Prince. And, in all Humility, we pray that your Majesty would be graciously pleased to appoint us a General, which charge the late King did us the Honour to take upon himself, according to the example of some of your Royal Predecessors : And on our parts we shall never be wanting in

NE

d

Gratitude or Duty, with the Hazard of our Lives and Fortunes, to defend your Cause and Person against the pretended Prince of Wales, and all your Majestie's open or secret Enemies whatsoever."

At a Court of Assistants, held at the Guildhall on the 17th of October, Her Majesty's Warrant, dated the 26th of June, was read, in which, after confirming their rights and privileges in terms similar to those generally used in the previous Warrants granted to the Company, she appointed Prince George of Denmark their Captain-General.*

1703.—At the General Court, on the 8th of April, there was a debate as to whether a Chairman or the President should be first elected; and, after some discussion, it was resolved that the former should be first chosen.

The Court decided, on the 13th of April, that when Sergeants, who had entered as such, obtained Commissions, they should pay up the full entrance-money, and that those admitted gratis in 1701 should not be considered members unless they paid quarterage, and that for the future they were to pay 11s. 6d. entrance, as usual.

The Ground was opened for exercise on the 20th of April.

On the 31st of August, the Clerk made a humble request that he might be paid his arrears of salary; and, as they were still in difficulties, Captain Shorey advanced them another £100, at 6 per cent., to pay off some of the debts; and the lease which he held as security was extended until his loan should be all repaid.

A Committee was again appointed to wait on the Court of Lieutenancy, and to use their utmost endeavours to obtain from them positive orders for the Officers of the Trained Bands to become Members of the Company, in accordance with the Queen's Warrant.

1704.—On the 21st of March, the Court ordered that no Officer of the Trained Bands under the rank of Captain-Lieutenant should be elected a Member of the Court.

* Appendix A, No. 12.

In the previous year the Court of Assistants had taken into consideration how much of the Ground might be let without prejudice to the Company. A considerable time elapsed before any report was made on this subject, until at length, in the month of October of this year, a report was made that any lease would be prejudicial, as the remainder would be scarcely sufficient to draw up a regiment, but that twenty feet from the east wall would not create any inconvenience; and after much consideration they resolved not to grant more than the ninety feet of ground next Chiswell Street to build on.*

On the 26th of May the Court ordered advertisements to be inserted in the *Daily Courant*, stating that the Company were willing to let the ground next Chiswell Street, for building, at 4s. a foot per annum.

The Company marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 13th June; and on the 19th of September had their usual exercise at Balmes.

1705.—The ground was opened for exercise on the 27th of March; on the 19th of June they paid their respects to the Lord Mayor, as usual.

A Committee was appointed, on the 7th of November, to look after the repairing of the pavement opposite the ground, about which there had been so many disputes for several years, as proceedings had been taken against them in the Crown Office.

An advertisement for letting the ground was ordered to be inserted four times in the *Postman*, and a notice-board to be put up at the corner of the ground, and also at the Royal Exchange.

1706.—A Committee was appointed by the Court, on the 10th of April, to inspect the Armoury, and order such immediate repairs as they thought necessary to prevent it from falling. It was also agreed at the same Court to let Mr. William Seabrook and Mr. William Goodson half the piece of ground in Chiswell Street, which they had advertised for building, at 3s.

* Highmore, p. 156.

a foot per annum for sixty-one years, commencing from Michaelmas, 1707; a space for a gateway, twenty feet in width, to be reserved in the middle, and this allotment was to be on the west side of it. At the next Court, on the 22nd of May, they received permission to exchange this plot for sixty-five feet next to the Watch-house—viz., Mr. Goodson, twenty feet next to the Watch-house in Chiswell Street, then Mr. Seabrook twenty-five feet in continuation, and the remaining twenty feet to Mr. Goodson, at the same rent and for a like period as for the former plot.

At a Court of Aldermen on the 23rd of July, the Clerk of the Company was ordered to attend at their next Court, on the 30th of July, to give an account of the prosecution against the City for not repairing the pavements before the Artillery Ground.*

The Surveyor of Arms having reported that the Pikes and Bandoliers wanted repairing, sufficient were ordered to be done for forty-eight members, in case such a number should come to exercise, which would cost about £4.

The Clerk waited on the Lord Mayor-elect, on the 10th of October, to know whether the Company should attend him on the day of his being sworn. His Lordship desired "yt ye Treasurer, with such of ye Court of Assistants as were his neighbours, would take a glass of wine with him in an evening," which invitation they accepted on the Monday following, when His Lordship accepted the Company's offer to march on the day of his being sworn, and the next morning sent £30 (the sum usually given on these occasions) to the Treasurer towards the expenses.

1707.—At a Court, on the 26th of February, Mr. Goodson was granted fifteen feet more ground on the same terms as the other portion he held.

On the 21st of July it was decided that when the President and Vice-President were both absent, and eight members of the Court were present, they might elect a Chairman and proceed with the usual business.

* Repertory, Vol. CX., ff. 179, 184.

The Company paid their respects to the Lord Mayor, and afterwards performed an exercise in the Artillery Ground on the 1st of July; and on the 9th of September marched to Balmes; each Commander on both these days paid £5 towards the expenses, and the drums, hautboys, and other necessaries, were provided as usual by the Treasurer.

A debate was held on the 21st of August, as to whether a substitute on General days should take the place and dignity of the person whom he represented; the Court decided that in all future General Marches, the Company being formed in one battalion, the three Captains for the day should march in front, and the three field-officers and Lieutenants in the rear.

1708.—The attempted invasion of Scotland by the French, with the Pretender, and their defeat by Admiral Sir George Byng, gave the Company an opportunity of expressing their loyalty to the Queen, in an Address, which was presented to Her Majesty at St. James's, on the 31st of March, which was as follows:—

“ TO THE QUEEN'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTIE.

“ Wee yo^r Majestie's most Loyall, dutyfull, & obedient Subjects, The President, Vice-President, Treasurer, & Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company of the City of London, Presume to Approach y^r Royall presence to acknowledge y^r maj^{ties} Care & vigilance in dissappointing the Designes & mechinations of yo^r most Enveterate as well as powerfull Enemie, the French King, who Attempted to Invade yo^r Kingdoms, to support a pretender, whom he hath Dignified wth the Stile & Title of King of Great Brittain, in order to amuse y^r subjects wth fears & Jealousies.

“ But when we consider the Glory & Honour y^r maj^{ties} hath acquired to your Dominions, by maintaining & supporting so formidable Confederacy for preserving the Reform'd Religion & Liberty of Europe, we can hardly believe there can be any such monsters in nature, as can be disaffected to yo^r maj^{ties} or Government; much more Considering the Benign Influence of yo^r majesties Reign & Just Administration in all respects.

"We Take this opportunity to Assure yo^r majestie, we shall on This, as on all other occasions, to y^e utmost of o^r power, maintain and Support yo^r majestie's person & Government, as by law Establisht, in Church & State, against all y^r Enemies both at home & abroad, not Doubting of yo^r maj^{ties} favour, protection, & Encouragement, to so long an Establisht Society, and wee shall always pray that God may preserve yo^r majestie's Sacred person, as also that of yo^r Royall Consort, our Captain-Generall, wth Health & Long Life, and that yo^r majestie's Reign may be Happy and prosperous.

"JOHN FLEET, *President*.

"JEFFERY JEFFERYS, *Vice-President*,
(& 22 Members of Court)."

At a Court, on the 4th of May, bayonets were ordered to be fitted to the muskets of the Company.

The pavement in front of the Ground, which had been the cause of so much trouble and expense, was at last reported to have been repaired on the 3rd of September.

On the 15th of October, Mr. Peter Predmore was accepted as a tenant for twenty feet of ground, at the corner of the Ground next the Watch-house, on the same terms that Mr. Goodson had been granted.

General leads were ordered to be discontinued after Lord Mayor's day, but private leads were to be continued as long as the muster was sufficient.

Prince George of Denmark, the Captain-General, died on the 28th of October.

Although the Company had obtained a beneficial lease of ground from the Corporation, in order to increase their revenue by building, yet they found great difficulty in carrying out the arrangement. A Court was therefore summoned, on the 30th of November, to consider the subject, and, the opinion of counsel thereon having been laid before them, they resolved that application should be made to the Court of Aldermen, and that they should be informed that the grant made to the Company in the year 1698, for permission to build, in order to raise money for the support of the Company, had not only proved ineffectual in

consequence of the trustees named in the said grant, which rendered it impracticable to make under-leases; and that the great expenditure for making good the pavement, which formerly was a charge to the City, had involved the Company in considerable debt, and they therefore desired that the Court of Aldermen would be pleased to direct and advise what means might be best to attain the objects of the City's grant to the Company, either by procuring an Act of Parliament to empower the Court of Assistants for the time being to grant leases, or otherwise, as in their wisdom should seem best.

1709.—At a Court, on the 16th of February, it was stated that, in the opinion of the Recorder, the best way for the Company to attain their object would be to apply to the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, and Common Council, and that the City should resume their title by ejecting the then trustees, and then make a new grant to such persons as would act, or such a number as should be suitable, to sign under-leases to the tenants.

At the same Court, it was ordered that, with a view to reduce the expenses of the Leaders, the names of persons present on private General days, should be taken by the Clerk, as was ordered in February, 1668, and called over at the place of entertainment, so as to prevent the expenses the Leaders were often put to, in order to treat such as were not under arms, and that the order regarding the expenses should be put up in the Armoury.

At a Court of Aldermen, held on the 17th of May, the memorial of the Company regarding the grant made them in 1698 to build on the front of the ground next Chiswell Street, was referred to a Committee.*

Such was the financial condition of the Company at this period, that when the collector of the Chamber of London applied for five years' ground rent, he was informed that the Company was unable to pay it.

On the 29th of June they paid their respects to the Lord

* Repertory, Vol. CXIII., ff. 224, 225.

Mayor, the drums, hautboys, pioneers, and other necessities being paid for out of the money received from the six commanders, instead of by the Treasurer; this had been resorted to lately in consequence of the Company being so much in debt that they could not afford any extra expenses.

An exercise was afterwards performed as usual, of which the following description is given in the *Tatler*:*—

“ *White’s Chocolate House, July 12th.*

“There is no one thing more to be lamented in our nation than their general affectation of everything that is foreign; nay, we carry it so far, that we are more anxious for our own countrymen when they have crossed the seas, than when we see them in the same dangerous condition before our eyes at home; else how is it possible, that on the 29th of the last month, there should have been a battle fought in our very streets of London, and nobody at this end of the town have heard of it?

“I protest, I, who make it my business to inquire after adventures, should never have known this, had not the following account been sent me enclosed in a letter. This it seems, is the way of giving out of Orders in the Artillery Company; and they prepare for a day of action with so little concern, as only to call it, *An Exercise of Arms.*

“*An Exercise at Arms of the Artillery Company, to be performed on Wednesday, June 29th, 1709, under the command of Sir Joseph Woolf, Kt. and Ald., General; Charles Hopson, Esq., present Sheriff, Lt.-Gen.; Capt. Richard Synge, Major; Major John Shorey, Capt. of Grenadiers; Capt. Wm. Grayhurst, Captain; John Buttler, Capt. Robert Carellis, Captains.*

“*The Body march from the Artillery Ground through Moorgate, Coleman St., Lothbury, Broad St., Finch Lane, Cornhill, Cheap-side, St. Martin’s, St. Anne’s Lane; Halt the Pikes under the wall in Noble St., draw up the firelocks facing the Goldsmiths’ Hall, make ready and face to the Left, and fire, and so ditto three times. Beat to Arms and march round the Hall, as up Lad Lane, Gutter Lane, Hony Lane, and so Wheel to the Right, and make your*

* The *Tatler*, No. 41, July, 1809.

salute to my Lord; and so down St. Anne's Lane, up Aldersgate St., Barbican, and draw up in Redcross St., the Right at St. Paul's Alley, in the rear. March off Lt.-Gen. with half the body up Beech Lane; he sends a subdivision up King's Head Court, and takes post in it, and marches two divisions round into Red Lion Market, to defend that Pass, and seccour the division in King's Head Court, but keeps in Whitecross St., facing Beech Lane; the rest of the body ready drawn up. Then the General marches up Beech Lane, is attacked, but forces the division in the Court into the Market, and enters with three divisions while he presses the Lt.-Gen.'s main body; and at the same time, the three divisions force those of the Revolters out of the Market, and so all the Lt.-Gen.'s body retreats into Chiswell St., and lodges two divisions in Grub St.; and as the General marches on, they fall on his flank, but soon made to give way; but having a retreating place into Red Lion Court, but could not hold it, being put to flight through Paul's Alley, and pursued by the General's Grenadiers, while he marches up and attacks their main body, but are opposed again by a party of men as lay in Black Raven Court; but they are forced also to retire soon in the utmost confusion; and at the same time those brave diversions in Paul's Alley ply their rear with Grenadiers, that with precipitation they take to the rout along Bunhill Row. So the General marches into the Artillery Ground, and being drawn up, finds the Revolting party to have found entrance, and makes a show as if for a battle, and both Armies soon engage in form, and fire by Platoons."

"Much might be said for the improvement of this system; which, for its style and invention, may instruct Generals and their historians both into fighting a battle and describing it when it is over. These elegant expressions, *Ditto—And so—But soon—But having—But could not—But are—But they—Finds the Party to have found, &c.*—do certainly give great life and spirit to the relation. Indeed I am extremely concerned for the Lieut.-Gen., who, by his overthrow and defeat, is made a deplorable instance of the fortune of war, and vicissitudes of human affairs. He, alas! has lost in Beech Lane and Chiswell St. all the glory he lately gained in and about Holborn and St. Giles.

“The Art of subdividing first, and dividing afterwards, is new and surprising; and according to this method, the troops are disposed in King’s Head Court, and Red Lion Market: Nor is the conduct of these Leaders less conspicuous in their choice of the ground or field of battle. Happy was it, that the greatest part of the achievements of this day was to be performed near Grub Street, that there might not be wanting a sufficient number of faithful historians, who, being eye-witnesses of these wonders, should impartially transmit them to posterity: But then it can never be enough regretted, that we are left in the dark as to the name and title of that extraordinary hero who commanded the divisions in Paul’s Alley; especially because those divisions are justly styled brave, and accordingly were to push the enemy along Bunhill Row, and thereby occasion a general battle.

“But Pallas appeared in the form of a shower of rain, and prevented the slaughter and desolation which were threatened by these extraordinary preparations.

“*Hi Motus Animorum atq: hæc Certamina tanta
Pulveris exigeri Factu compressa quiescunt.*”

The ground was closed as usual after Lord Mayor’s Day.

1710.—The Ground was opened for exercise on Tuesday, the 18th of April, and on the 27th of June they paid their respects to the Lord Mayor.

The Clerk’s salary was now a year in arrears, and on a debate as to how the money should be raised to pay the expenses on the General day, it was resolved that each Commander should pay £5, to treat the files and pay other contingent expenses.

On the 14th of September a General day was held in the fields leading to Balmes, the Treasurer providing all necessaries as usual, and each Commander paying £5 to defray the expenses.

The East gate, being in such a bad condition that it could not be repaired, was ordered to be bricked up, and a new one was made on the West side of the ground.

1711.—At this period party feeling ran very high, and the financial difficulties of the Company are ascribed by Blackwell to political causes, who relates that, in 1702, the Court at that

time giving encouragement to an adverse party, changing the Lieutenancy, and putting it into such hands that the Company was again much distressed, the high party gained the ascendant, and got the government of the Company into their hands, whereby the chiefs, viz., the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and many of the Assistants, were thrown out at the general election held on the 8th of April, 1703, and Sir William Pritchard, Sir John Fleet, and Sir Charles Duncombe were chosen in their room, under whose management (according to custom) the Company was in a very few years brought into its old state of debt, and obliged to mortgage the herbage rent of the Ground to raise money for its support. But the Ministry being again changed, and the Lieutenancy of the City put into the former hands, the low party or Whigs, were resolved once more to endeavour to rescue the Company out of the hands of the contrary party: and at a general election held on the 27th of April, 1708, gave almost a total overthrow to them, and chose Sir William Ashurst, Sir Owen Buckingham, and Sir Gilbert Heathcote, their President, Vice-President, and Treasurer, and many other worthy gentlemen into the Court of Assistants; so that the Company began again to revive and flourish. But still the adverse party used all ways and means they could to depress and discourage them; so that when the Ministry and Lieutenancy were again changed after Dr. Sacheverel's trial, they made the greatest effort that ever was known to gain the government of the Company at a General Court held on the 20th of March, 1711, but the honest citizens, observing which way things were then going, and being resolved to keep that little privilege they had of exercising Arms, happily prevented them; and though all means were used, during the remainder of that reign, to depress the Company, they often threatening to bring the Queen's Warrant, as had been done in the reigns of King Charles the Second and King James the Second, yet notwithstanding all, when under the highest discouragements, they kept their ground.*

At the General Court held in this year 260 members were

* Blackwell, pp. 7, 8.

present, and the voting was so close that a poll was in several cases demanded; this is the first mention of a poll being taken at a Court.

Highmore gives the following account of the proceedings:—

“The contest for the office of President was carried by Sir William Withers against Sir William Ashurst, by 124 votes against 101; that for Vice-President was secured by the Lord Mayor, against Sir Richard Hoare (who had received his honours at the same time), by 135 votes against 126; and Sir Charles Peers was elected Treasurer by 133, in preference to John Cass, Esq., who pressed him with 127. Sir James Bateman and Sir William Lewin, Aldermen, were elected Generals, and Sir George Thorold and Alderman Eyles (a director of the Bank), Lieutenant-Generals. The spirit of opposition carried all these parties into the labours of a scrutiny, in which, although several bad votes were rejected on both sides, yet the majorities were in favour of the same candidates. The Court of Assistants were chosen with the same scrupulous attention, which could not fail to give new energy to the Society in general; and, considering the small number which had for some time past appeared at the field exercises, the Company must at this period have been very materially augmented, so as to produce 261 votes for the office of Vice-President.”*

At a Court, on the 12th of June, Colonel Green was chosen to lead “an advance party of Fusiliers” on the day appointed for an exercise, instead of having Grenadiers, and £4 was allowed them to provide drums, music, grenades, &c., which was the amount usually given to the Grenadiers.

At the Court, on the 14th of June, Sergeant Denton was ordered to ask pardon of Ebenezer Briggs, at the head of the Company on the next private leading day, for having challenged him to fight, and making use of bad language; but as, instead of apologising, he again challenged Briggs to fight, he was expelled.

1712.—The Ground was opened for exercise on the 29th of April, Alderman Eyles, one of the Lieutenants of the Ground,

* Highmore, pp. 165, 166.

taking the first lead, then the Colonels, and the remainder of the Court, according to seniority of membership, both elected and honorary.

The Company paid their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 9th of July, and on the 16th of September had a general exercise in the fields leading to Balmes.

1713.—The Company being still in difficulties, Captain Shorey paid the servants' salaries up to the previous Michaelmas, his securities being extended until all should be repaid.

The Lord Mayor for this year was Sir Richard Hoare, who was one of those gentlemen who had been knighted by the Queen on her first entrance into the City after her coronation. Great efforts had been made for him by the Tory party in 1710, to be Lord Mayor, when Sir Gilbert Heathcote was elected; he had immediately afterwards been made a Colonel of the Lieutenantancy, and become a leading member of the Company, and had afterwards been returned at the general election as one of the four members to serve the City in Parliament. He was of the High Church party, and on that account Sir William Lewen, Alderman and Sheriff, whose turn it was to lead as Lieutenant-General, on the day appointed for the Company to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, declined to lead, and the march had to be postponed. A Committee waited on the Lord Mayor to acquaint him with the reason of the Company not attending, and proposed to lay the subject before the Court of Aldermen, of which he approved. The case was represented at a Court of Aldermen specially summoned for that purpose, who found, on referring to the order which they had made on the subject, that they could not oblige any one to hold such an office; which gave great cause of triumph to the Whigs.*

The 1st of October was fixed for a march to Balmes, but Sir S. Clarke, the Alderman chosen to lead, refused to do so, as he had no inclination to military affairs, and was lame, and would not have anything to do with it.

The Company was ordered to attend on Lord Mayor's day, all the expenses exceeding the sum of £30—which was always

* Highmore, pp. 166, 167.

allowed by the Lord Mayor—being paid by Captain Shorey, on behalf of the Company.

1714.—On Tuesday the 4th of May the Ground was opened for exercise.

The Clerk was ordered to be paid £20 per annum, £4 being paid from the rent for the herbage (or the same in proportion for what amount it was let); one shilling for every member on joining for entering his name in the books; two shillings in the pound on all money received for quarterage, and one shilling in the pound on all other moneys; and to be further allowed at every Audit what the Court should please, for his encouragement to serve the Company with diligence.

At a Court on the 21st of May, the Officers of the Green Regiment of the Trained Bands requested as a favour that they might have leave to exercise the postures of firelocks and pikes, and drill in the ground when the Company did not assemble, which was granted, they finding their own Arms.

A Committee was chosen on the 4th of June to examine the books and records belonging to the Company to ascertain under what power or grant they held the Garden to exercise Arms therein.

At the same Court it was decided that it would be for the honour and grandeur of the Company to have twenty-four members equipped as Grenadiers to lead the way on General Marches, and accoutrements were ordered to be provided for that number at the expense of the Company; also caps for two flankers, caps and coats for two drummers, and pouches for the two Lieutenants; and a Committee was appointed to carry out these instructions, by borrowing the necessary money "with the best good husbandry" they could. Blackwell states that, "to show their hearty zeal for the Hanover Succession, being then under no small apprehension of the endeavours of some to frustrate it, they raised a new body of Grenadiers, with this motto on their caps—'*The Queen and House of Hanover*,' thereby speaking their fears and apprehensions, as loudly as they could, that too many were for the *Queen and Pretender*; and as this small transaction was at that time almost a national discourse (all the newspapers being filled

with it), so it served to rouse up many, before unthinking persons, to assert and vindicate, in their discourse and conversation, the legal right of that succession; and many gentlemen entered themselves members of the Company on purpose the better to qualify themselves to fight for their liberties and properties, which they apprehended were in the utmost danger."*

In order to insure Leaders being present on the days of exercise, four members of the Court of Assistants were ordered to attend the ground on days of general exercise and two on private days, commencing as usual with the seniors; and as a general rule, when Field Officers, Captains, and members of the Court were all present, regard was only to be had to seniority of membership.

At a Court on the 23rd of June it was ordered that the three Captains, or their substitutes for General Marches, should take post in the front, the Lieutenants to the Field Officers in the rear, the Lieutenants to the Captains to lead the Grand Rear Division: the Field Officers' Lieutenants to be allowed to wear white feathers, but not the Lieutenants to the Captains, nor the Officers who carried the colours.

A debate being held on the subject of the qualification for the Court, it was resolved, that no member of the Court should or ought to be elected who held any rank in the Trained Bands of the City or Tower Hamlets under the degree of Captain-Lieutenant, in accordance with former orders; and if the General Court should at any time elect an unfit or unworthy person for the Court, whereby the Company would be dishonoured, and the Court debased, the Court would reject such person or persons.

Two pouches and slings, all well embroidered, were ordered for the two Lieutenants of Grenadiers.

On the 7th of July Major Shorey, having been paid off, surrendered his mortgages, but he was at the same time requested to pay a bill of £50, towards the Grenadiers' caps: and on the 11th of August another mortgage on the herbage was given to him for £200.

* Blackwell, pp. 8, 9.

CHAPTER XII.

IMPROVEMENT IN THE CONDITION OF THE COMPANY
DURING THE REIGN OF GEORGE I.

FROM 1714 TO 1727.

CONTENTS.—The King's Entry into London.—Opposition to Company being represented.—A Place assigned to them.—The Procession.—Burgesses not to be Presidents.—No Officer under Degree of Captain-Lieutenant to be Member of Court.—Address to the King, 1715.—Prince George of Wales Captain-General.—The Royal Warrant.—Letting of the Ground, 1715-19.—No Strangers to Exercise.—Clerk appointed Adjutant.—Court of Lieutenancy.—Officers of Trained Bands.—Colonel Shorey's Loan repaid, 1721.—Compensation to Sergeant Richford.—An Engineer appointed.—Company reviewed by King.—Scarlet first worn.—Address to the King, 1722.—His Gift of £500.—Major Delafountain.—Fall of West Wall.—Application to build on Bunhill side of Ground.—Blackwell's History of the Company, 1726.—Grand March, 1727.—Address to His Majesty.—Corporation's Offer of New Lease rejected.—The Old Artillery Ground.

1714.—A General day had been appointed for a march to Balmes on the 1st of September, but was several times postponed on account of the uncertainty of the King's public entry into the City.

A memorial was drawn up, on the 3rd of September, to be presented to the Lords Regents, requesting that a place should be assigned to the Company in the cavalcade, when His Majesty made his public entry into the City on the 20th of September. This request was granted, and a detachment of the Company in buff were ordered to take part in the cavalcade, which was accordingly inserted in the Earl Marshal's Orders, and entered

at the Heralds' College as a part of all such ceremonials, notwithstanding the very great opposition made against it by the Commissioners of the Lieutenancy of the City of London.*

A place was assigned for a detachment of the Company in buff coats, and the Grenadiers; but as a number of members desired to go as Fusiliers, it was ordered that a body of forty-eight, or not more than sixty-four, should be allowed to attend as such, provided they equipped themselves in clean buff coats, hats edged with gold, red feathers, white stockings, and black garters, their hair tied behind with red ribbons, and black ribbons before, fusils unslung, and cartouch boxes.

The Court chose to lead the Fusiliers, a Colonel, Lieutenant-Colonel, and three Captains, who were to march in front, and three Lieutenants in the rear; six Lieutenants were also appointed, three being styled "Sub-Lieutenants," and four Flankers.

A Committee was appointed to draw up the applications made from time to time to procure for the Company the right of marching or taking part in public ceremonials, "and the Lords Justices' Resolution thereon," but it was not carried out.

The King landed at Greenwich on his arrival from Holland, and the procession to London started from the Queen's House in Greenwich Park, being joined at St. Margaret's Hill, Southwark, by a detachment of the Artillery Company, in buff, who headed the procession from thence, followed by the Lord Mayor and Corporation. The Southwark Trained Bands lined the way from the end of Kent Street to the foot of London Bridge. Three regiments of the City Trained Bands extended from the Bridge to the Stock Markets, and the other three regiments from St. Paul's to Temple Bar; then the Stewards and Burgesses of Westminster with their constables, the Westminster Militia, leaving a space between them and His Majesty's Foot Guards (who lined the way from St. James's to the Strand) for the Artillery Company to draw up in, who were to proceed thus far, with the consent of the Lord-Lieutenant of Middlesex. During the whole period occupied by the procession moving from St. Margaret's Hill, the conduits at the Stock Markets

* Blackwell, p. 10.



Heliotype.

H. M. Wright & Co.

AN EXERCISE FOR THE HALBERT, WITH ITS USES.

Fac-simile (reduced) from Blackwell's Military Discipline, 1726.

1. Recover your Halberts. 2. Advance your Halberts. 3. Shoulder your Halberts. 4. Level your Halberts. 5. Charge your Halberts. 6. Push with your Halberts.
7. Cut with your Halberts. 8. Reverse your Halberts. 9. Order your Halberts. 10. Hats on your Halberts. 11. Plant your Halberts. 12. Lock your Halberts.

and other parts of the City ran with wine as usual on such occasions.*

In the account of these proceedings by Dr. Doran he states that "for the royal entry into and through London every preparation had been made." Occasionally little difficulties presented themselves. For example, Captain Silk, whose office and principles may be guessed by his being described as "Muster-Master with others of his kidney," ventured to assert that the London Artillery Company had no right to appear officially at the royal passage through the City.

"The Cannoneers, descendants of primitive heroic Cockneys, appealed to the proper authorities, and the appeal was allowed. Further, the Artillery Company had their little revenge. Captain Silk was prevented from even seeing the spectacle. The warlike Company charged him with having drunk the health of the pretended James III. on his knees, while the song was sung of 'The King shall have his own again.' The Captain was laid by the heels, and the Artillery of London rejoiced at it. But 'Captain Silk's Jacobite Militia tune' became a favourite with Tory musicians."†

An exercise was appointed to be held on Lord Mayor's Day, the 29th of October, at nine o'clock in the morning, before the Lord Mayor's procession, instead of an exercise at Balmes, as the season was so far advanced, but this was not to be made a precedent for any future march another year under any pretext; and the Clerk was ordered to provide 300 "fusades" for the use of the Grenadiers and Fusiliers, at a cost not exceeding three-pence each.

On the 26th of October application was ordered to be made to the Court of Aldermen for the sum of £20, which they usually voted to the Company when the King or Queen came to dine in the City, towards meeting the expenses of their parading on such occasions.

* The Ceremonial for the Reception of George I., upon his arrival from Holland, at Greenwich. Printed by Authority, 6th September, 1714. British Museum, 816, M, 4.
8.

† London in the Jacobite Times. By Dr. Doran. Vol. I., p. 13.

1715.—The Ground was opened for exercise on the 8th of March. At a Court held the following day a question was raised as to whether two members of the Court, viz., Mr. Hillyard and Mr. Lambe, who had accepted the office of Burgesses, should continue to be members of the Court; it was decided in the affirmative, on the understanding that they were never to be President “in all time to come.”

On the 14th of March, the Court being informed that there was a design to reject the President, Vice-President, and Treasurer, at the next General Court, resolved to enforce the usual rule that no one more than six months in arrears should be allowed to vote, and that all subscriptions were to be paid before the day of election.

On a motion relating to Leading on Court of Assistant days, commonly called Private days, it was resolved that it was not for the honour of the Court, or Company (being contrary to the constant practice of the Ground), for any one to lead on such days, except members of the Court, and that this rule should remain until the Court should see fit to alter it; and no “commissioned Captain” or other person was to lead for any member of the Court, unless he was a member of the Court, but the arms were to be locked up, and no lead held that night; and no member of the Company was to carry colours or “bring up” on Court of Assistant nights under the degree of Captain, unless there were not members of the Court present to do it.

Being informed, on the 17th of March, that there was a design to elect officers of the Trained Bands under the degree of Captain-Lieutenant at the General Court, contrary to orders, because the Court had thought proper to continue Mr. Hillyard and Mr. George Lambe, the Court passed a resolution (as on the 23rd June, 1714) not to allow or admit any officer, &c., “for that they think it very unreasonable that inferior officers should be permitted to make laws and orders for the commanding officers;” it being also contrary to the practice and orders of the Court; and if at any time any member of the Court should afterwards accept any commission or post in the Trained Bands under the degree of Captain-Lieutenant, he should be immediately dis-

missed the Court, having disqualified himself by accepting such commission.

On the 29th of March a Committee was appointed to attend the Commissioners of Sewers, to solicit them to remove the ditch running by the west wall; and to arrange for letting the front of the Ground.

At the General Court, held on the 23rd of March, the Company voted a very loyal Address to the King, and on the 6th of April it was ordered that the Court, and such other gentlemen as pleased, should go to present the Address, in gentlemen's coaches, at their own expense, being dressed in black, with swords, and the Beadle was to take the Vellum Book for His Majesty to sign his name. The Address was as follows:—

“ TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

“The humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company of London, at their General Court, held at Guildhall, March 23rd, 1715.

“With Joyfull hearts we adore that Almighty Providence which placed your Majesty on the Imperiall throne of Great Brittain, and with the greatest Sincerity we dutyfully own and acknowledge your Majesty to be our only rightfull and Lawfull King.

“We strenuously asserted and were resolved to maintaine to the utmost of our power yo^r Majesty's undoubted right, and the Legall Establishment of your Succession to these Realms at a time when, by many, it was deemed a Crime to be zealous for it, but now (blessed be God) we enjoy the end of our prayers and wishes, and feel ye happy influences of yo^r Majesty's Just Government.

“We in great humility beg Leave to assure yo^r Majesty yt we will chearfully concur with our fellow-Citizens, and all other your faithfull Subjects, in defence of your sacred person and Royall family (as the greatest securitys of our Religion & Libertys) against all pretenders and their open and secret abettors.

"We are Religiously determined to pay a constant obedience to your Majesty, and Humbly hope you will be gratusly pleased to appoint to us a Captaine-Generall as has been done by your Royale Predecessors.

"We most devoutly pray that your Majesty's reign may be long & glorious, and that the Crown may descend to your Royall Issue, & Continue in your Most Illustrious Family for Ever."

To this Address His Majesty was pleased to make the following reply :—

"I thank you for this dutiful and Loyal Address, and as a mark of my particular Regard for you I will appoint the Prince of Wales your Captain-General."

H.R.H. the Prince of Wales, having signified his pleasure by letter from the Duke of Argyll to Sir Gilbert Heathcote, Vice-President, that he would receive "ye Hon^{ble} Artillery Company" on Wednesday, the 13th of April, the Court, and such members as wished, were desired to attend, and the Clerk was directed to take the Vellum Book with him.

The Clerk's accounts were balanced on the 27th of April, and he was given £5, and it was resolved that he should not have less for the future if he behaved well.

At a Court, on the 29th of April, Colonel Lekeux reported that they had attended H.R.H. George, Prince of Wales, and that he was pleased to receive them very graciously, and to declare his acceptance of being Captain-General, and wrote his name in the great Vellum Book, and they all had the honour to kiss His Highness's hand.

The Clerk was sent for by Lord Townshend, Principal Secretary of State, to know what Commission the Prince ought to have as Captain-General of the Company; but as there were no records in the Minute Books of the Company of any Commission, it was resolved to draw up a letter or Warrant, in the same form as that issued by Queen Anne declaring Prince George of Denmark Captain-General, but substituting the name of George, Prince of Wales; and a Committee was appointed to attend the Secretary of State with it. The usual Warrant

was accordingly issued, dated the 5th of May, appointing the Prince of Wales Captain-General.*

Permission was granted to the Officers of the Trained Bands, on the 25th of July, to make use of the Arms and Ground for private exercise, when it did not interfere with the Company; and the Clerk was ordered to attend to receive the entrance-money of such officers who were not members, and the quarterage of such as belonged to the Company, and every endeavour was to be made to get them to join, in accordance with the King's Warrant to that effect.

A General March was fixed for the 1st of August, to celebrate His Majesty's accession, and to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor; six shillings being allowed for every file of four men; but the entertainment at night was not to exceed £3, and this was not to be made a precedent at any future time.

On the 12th of August, the Clerk reported that but few of the officers of the Trained Bands had entered as members, many absolutely refusing to do so; it was thereupon resolved that only those who were members and paid quarterage should be admitted to exercise in the Ground.

It was decided by a large majority to present an Address to the King, on account of the late unwarranted riots, and intended invasion by the Pretender: these disturbances resulted in the passing of the Riot Act on the 20th of July, which gave the magistrates the power of directing any number of persons exceeding twelve to disperse.

A March to Balmes was fixed for the 20th of September, and at a Court held the previous day it was resolved, in accordance with an order of the 14th of February, 1692, that for the future, when no Alderman, Sheriff, or Knight, could be obtained to lead the Company on a General or Grand March, the post of General should be left vacant, and that no one should march as Lieutenant-General under the degree of a Knight or Lieutenant-Colonel, or a Lieutenant or Ensign of the Ground.

On the 12th of October, Mr. Peter Predmore was granted a lease of the house he formerly built on the Company's ground,

* Appendix A, No. 13.

and also for twenty feet of ground on which it was built, for sixty-one years from the first agreement in 1707. .

The Company was ordered to attend on Lord Mayor's day, —and a detachment attended him on landing at Westminster, at his desire—and the entertainment at night was ordered not to exceed £12.

On the 22nd of November, they resolved to entertain the Prince of Wales, and the Court of Assistants decided that no Court of Assistants Gentleman, or Captain, should be allowed to subscribe less than £5 towards the entertainment, or any other member less than £2, and that none but members should be allowed to subscribe; but any person paying £5 might be elected a member on paying the Clerk's and Beadle's fees, and should continue members as long as they paid quarterage; all subscriptions to be paid into the Bank of England before the 7th of January.

1716.—On the 6th of January a Committee reported regarding the ground-rent due on forty feet of ground belonging to Mr. William Goodson, deceased, which had not been built upon, that the attorney advised that they could not claim rent on more than five feet, part of twenty-five on which the house was built, the remaining thirty-five being a distinct bargain; the Court therefore resolved to release the Administrator of all rent due, on his resigning the lease to the Company.

Seventy-five feet of the Ground next to the twenty feet on which the said house was built, was let to Mr. Massey, a soap-maker, for three dwelling-houses, at £11 5s. per annum, and £6 down for the party-wall of the house adjoining; he undertaking to build the whole front in dwelling-houses on or before Michaelmas, 1717; and, as he intended to build a soap factory, they insisted that the chimneys should be thirty feet high, or as high as the dwelling-houses, so as to carry off the smoke and smell, and not to cause a nuisance.

A Committee was appointed to consider what proceedings should be taken against the inhabitants of Bunhill Row to make them rebuild the wall which fell down during the winter from the water overflowing the ditch by the side of it, as the

Commissioners of Sewers had ordered that the water was not to be allowed to run there.

The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 28th of June; and it was ordered that the entertainment at night was not to cost the Company more than £5.

In October a lease of sixty-seven feet of ground was granted to Mr. Gules Dance.

The Ground was closed after the 9th of October for public leads, but remained open for private leads till after Lord Mayor's day.

1717.—During the past two or three years a Committee had been annually chosen by the Court to whom they referred matters requiring consideration, and they reported their opinion to the Court; and they were instructed to consider how the inhabitants of Blue Anchor Alley and Thieving Lane could be made to pay for the wall which had fallen down.

The Auditors were ordered to meet two hours before dinner on the day the new members of the Court entertained the other members (which was called the Colt's Feast), so as to avoid any expense to the Company.

The Orders of the 17th of August, 1707—that no members were to lead or carry trophies on any general or private day of exercise, or to bear office on any general march who were in arrears of quarterage—were to be strictly enforced; and complaints having been made that when drawn up for exercise a great number of strangers were often in the ranks, to the great scandal of the Company, it was ordered that no person who was not a member should exercise arms on any public or private lead.

On the 17th of July the Court decided that, for "special reasons" the proposed entertainment to H.R.H. the Prince of Wales should be deferred, and the subscriptions, which amounted to about £400, were ordered to be returned.

1718.—On the 9th of May the Court ordered that a "Committee Book" should be kept, and an index to the Court-Book.

On the 23rd of May, Sir J. Case, who had been elected General for the march when the Company went to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 28th of May, insisted that Major

Triquett could march as Lieutenant-General on that day. The Committee sent a message to say that they were ready to pay every deference and respect to him of which they were capable, and were very willing to appoint the Major to be his Captain-Lieutenant, or youngest Captain, but could by no means admit that he should march in any higher post, it being contrary to the orders of the General Court of the 14th of February, 1692.

In July, Mr. James Pitman obtained a lease of sixty feet, on which to build two or more brick messuages or tenements, for sixty-one years from Midsummer; and another to Captain J. Shorey for the house and ground, for fifty-five years, lately purchased from the Administrator of William Goodson, deceased.

In October, leases were granted to Mr. J. Wickes, citizen and cooper, for twenty feet of ground, for sixty-one years from Michaelmas, for one brick house; and thirty feet to Mr. Pitman, for the same period, from the following Christmas, for one brick house.

1719.—A lease of thirty-four feet of ground to Mr. Robert Hackshaw, merchant, at 3s. per foot per annum, was granted by the Company for sixty-one years, from Lady-day, for one or more houses; and he shortly afterwards took thirty-one feet more, for sixty years and eleven months from Lady-day.

At a Court on the 9th of April the question of building a new Armoury was again raised, and the Clerk was directed to search the books for gifts or legacies left for this purpose.

On the 12th of May the Committee reported that the following amount of ground still remained to be let:—

| | Feet. Inches. | |
|---|---------------|---|
| From the 31 feet lately taken by Mr. Hackshaw | | |
| to the Great Gate, Westward, there is | 77 | 4 |
| Breadth of Gate and Post | 13 | 8 |
| From Great Gate to House lately built by Mr. | | |
| Wickes | 131 | 0 |
| | <hr/> | |
| | 222 | 0 |
| Deduct Gate and Post | 13 | 8 |
| | <hr/> | |
| Remaining to let | 208 | 4 |
| | <hr/> | |

The Company had thus nearly completed the letting of the front of the Ground for building, by which they obtained upwards of £70 per annum. On the 23rd of May, the Company being still in debt, a Committee was appointed to consider some speedy and effectual means to discharge it.

The Clerk complained of the great difficulty in obtaining members of the Court to lead in the absence of those whose turn it was; the Court therefore appointed the Clerk Adjutant to the Company, and to lead on any Public Leads in the Artillery Garden in place of any member of the Court, provided he could not prevail on any other member of the Court to do so.

The Court of Lieutenancy, observing how negligent many of their officers were in entering themselves as members of the Company, notwithstanding His Majesty's and their repeated orders for that purpose, and how necessary it was for them to qualify themselves for their respective commands, issued the following Orders on the 22nd of July:—

That all the Commission and Staff Officers (not already members of the Artillery Company) be obliged forthwith to enter themselves and exercise with the said Company at all convenient times. And that the said Officers make their appearance at the three General Marches or Exercises of the said Company.

That £78 per annum be allowed to such of the said Commission Officers who shall be members of the said Company (paying Quarterage), and making their appearances as aforesaid either in person, or by a fit person or persons in his or their room or stead.*

That £72 per annum be paid half-yearly, commencing at Michaelmas, 1718, to the said Company towards providing arms, powder, &c. And in consideration that the Sergeants of the several Regiments of the Trained Bands of this City do enter and continue members of the said Company without any other expense than one shilling to the Clerk, and sixpence to the Beadle upon entrance.

All which the Court took into consideration, and being willing

* This sum was divided between all the Officers of the Trained Bands who attended.

to the utmost of their power to give encouragement to the said Officers to become members of this Company, and duly to pay their quarterage, did agree to the following Orders, viz. :—

1. That all the Staff Officers in the Trained Bands of this City be admitted members of the Artillery Company gratis, only the payment of the Clerk and Beadle's fees upon entrance, and free from the payment of any Quarterage so long as they continue sergeants, and do march in buff on the three General Marches of the said Company, or else to have no right of voting on any election.

2. That Twenty Shillings on a Public Lead in the Artillery Ground, and Ten Shillings on a Private Lead be allowed by the said Company over and above the usual expenses of the Respective Leaders for the time being (which sum the Clerk is hereby directed to lay out on the Company's account) for the better entertainment of the Gentlemen in Arms, but always on this proviso, that there be not less than twenty-four Members in Arms on a public night, and sixteen on a private night, besides Officers.

3. That no person (members or others) be permitted (except Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants) to be at any entertainment at night after the exercise is over, but such only as have been under arms the whole time of exercise; and that the names in writing of all such be taken by the Beadle. And to take their seats at table according to their seniority of membership, except Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants and Captains in Commission.

4. That it be a standing Order and Rule—That a Public or General Lead in the Artillery Ground be not made with a less number than twenty-four Members under Arms besides Officers; and that none but Members duly qualified be permitted to Exercise on any General or Private Nights on any pretence whatsoever.

5. That four Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants on Public Leads and two on Private Leads be desired to attend in the Artillery Ground, and to go on successively according to the rotation on the Roll. The Beadle to underwrite on their summons to give them notice.

6. That no other pikes be made use of for the future in the Artillery Company, on either of their three General Marches, but half-pikes.

7. That no Marshal, "nor any other person in mean habitt," be permitted to march with a half-pike in the said Company on any of the said General Marches.

8. That one shilling and sixpence per man be paid to all the Members under Arms marching, on any of the said three General Marches of the said Company, for their entertainment.

9. That from and after the 11th of September next no member of this Company shall be allowed to re-enter by paying less than his full quarterage then due, except he lose his seniority of membership, and take it only from such times as he doth so re-enter. This order not to extend to such Gentlemen that go out of the Land beyond the Seas, provided they conform to the 30th Order on the Roll of General Orders.

The Clerk had to certify that the Officers of the Trained Bands from time to time were members, and also such gentlemen as were to have commissions from the Lieutenancy were also members; but only those who paid their quarterage were to be so certified, the Clerk receiving 6d. for each certificate for his trouble.

1720.—The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, on the 28th of May; the expenses for the entertainment in the evening being limited to £3, the amount allowed during the previous three or four years.

The Clerk was ordered not to certify to the Lieutenancy that any Sergeant was a member, until he had paid his entrance fee, viz., 10s., for those who were formerly admitted for 11s. 6d., and 20s. for those who were admitted on only paying the Clerk's and Beadle's fees.

The Company marched to Balmes on the 1st of August, the commanders choosing their own officers as usual.

1721.—On the 7th of March, Colonel John Shorey was paid the balance of his loan, amounting to £25 11s. 5d., and his mortgage deed was cancelled. The Company was thus freed from the debts which they had for so many years been struggling to

discharge, and it was mainly owing to the annual vote of £72 from the Lieutenancy towards paying the expenses of the officers of the Trained Bands that it was at last extinguished.

At a Court, on the 18th of May, it was stated that Sir J. Fryer, Bart., the Lord Mayor, declined to appoint any day, or to receive any such visit as that which, according to ancient custom, was always paid by the Company to the Lord Mayor for the time being. On the 29th of May, they therefore had a march instead through Chiswell Street, Beeshland [Beech Street], Barbican, Aldersgate Street, St. Martin-le-Grand, Cheap-side, Poultry, Cornhill, Leadenhall Street, Houndsditch, and thence to Broad Street, where they commenced to perform an exercise.

As the pikes were so often broken or lost on General days, the Armourer was allowed to charge sixpence for every pike given out, and he had to replace or repair any that might be lost or broken.

A march to Balmes having been ordered for the 1st of August, it was debated whether it was convenient to elect Sir George Caswell, one of the Sheriffs, Lieutenant-General for the march, "he being under some displeasure of the Hon. House of Commons," and it was resolved not to elect him; but this decision was reversed at the next Court, when they also decided that he should continue to be a Lieutenant of the Ground.

Complaints having been made that the Grenadiers and Fusiliers did not always provide themselves with sufficient cartridges to maintain good firing at General exercises, and that some of the Flankers on the General Marches wore their sashes slung on their shoulders, contrary to the usual method of the Company; the Flankers were ordered to examine the pouches and cartouch boxes of the Grenadiers and Fusiliers, to see that they had not less than the number of cartridge mentioned in their summons, or too small to make a good report, and if deficient in any way they were not to be permitted to march until the defects were made good; and any Flanker without a sash or scarf, or who wore it otherwise than round the waist on the outside of his outward garment, was not to be allowed any part of the allowance granted by the Lieutenancy for that march, or permitted to go to the entertainment for the officers afterwards.

Sergeant William Richford petitioned the Court, on the 12th of October, on account of the great hurt and damage he had received by the fall of a bomb on his head on the 1st of August; and at a Court held on the 13th of December, £13 14s. 6d. was ordered to be paid, as follows, to the persons who had the care of him while under cure, but this payment was "declared to be only in consideration of his mean circumstances," and was not to serve as a precedent:—

| | £ | s. | d. |
|--|-------|----|----|
| To Mr. Henry Middleton, Surgeon | 3 | 3 | 0 |
| „ Captain James Cox, Apothecary | 4 | 0 | 0 |
| „ Mr. Bristed, for boarding him, in full | 3 | 19 | 0 |
| „ Clerk, for money advanced during his illness . | 2 | 2 | 0 |
| „ Mr. Baker, Surgeon | 0 | 10 | 6 |
| | <hr/> | | |
| | £13 | 14 | 6 |

The Court signed the usual formal application "humbly requesting the Treasurer" to pay to the Clerk the sum of £72, received by him from the Lieutenancy in lieu of quarterage for the Sergeants of the Trained Bands.

1722.—In April, Mr. Thomas Goodcheap presented a petition to the Court that he might "be admitted their Ingenier, and to make their Fireworks," which they granted on the condition that he performed the work as well and as cheaply as any other person.

It was proposed, on the 18th of May, that the Company should pay their respects to the Lord Mayor; but on being informed of their intention, his Lordship stated that he was much indisposed, and must go into the country for the sake of his health, and therefore could not receive them that day, or appoint any other time. It was decided to have a March all the same, and an entertainment at night, as was usual after the Balmes Marches. Three "Boloons" were ordered to be provided, and made use of at the exercise.

The Court were informed, on the 30th of May, that Lord Viscount Townshend, one of His Majesty's principal Secretaries of State, had signified that it was His Majesty's pleasure that the whole Artillery Company should be reviewed by him on Friday, the 1st of June, between the hours of twelve and one, in St.

James's Park; for which the same Officers were elected as those who commanded on the March held on the 28th inst., viz. :—

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| General | Colonel Samuel. |
| Lieutenant-General ... | Major Thomas Exelbee. |
| Major-General... .. | Major John Triquett. |
| Captain of Grenadiers ... | Major Noah Delafountain. |
| 1st Captain | Captain Henry Tame. |
| 2nd „ | Captain George Stray. |
| 3rd „ | Captain William Brind. |

All the Officers were ordered to appear in scarlet, and the Grenadiers to wear the caps belonging to the Company, or the new ones lately made.

Members who were armed with the half-pike were also to be dressed in scarlet, and were not to use the pikes belonging to the Ground, but Captains or Lieutenants, half-pikes, white stockings, and black garters. The Fusiliers were to be dressed in buff, with laced hats, wigs in black bags, white stockings, or spatterdashes, and black garters; and any members appearing with foul arms or habit were not to be permitted to march.

The Officers for the day were to be at liberty to post every member as they should consider most advantageous without regard to seniority of membership or any other consideration.

The drummers, music, and pioneers to be provided at the expense of the Company; but no charge was to be made for any entertainment at night, nor was any money to be paid to the files.

It was also resolved to present an Address to the King, and they sent to ask the Prince if they should pay their respects to him at Leicester House, on their return; but he replied, saying that he would see them in the Park.

There was at first some opposition to these orders, Major Delafountain, the Captain of the Grenadiers, declaring that he would not conform to any order that the Court should make, but would march his men when, where, and how he pleased; whereupon it was ordered that, if he attempted to march in any way but that laid down by the Court, the Company's caps and accoutrements were to be taken from them.

The Committee appointed to regulate the March recom-

mended that the Flankers should march on the angles of each division, on the right in the front, and left in the rear, with partisans, and not quarter-pikes, and that they should not wear crosslets.

That all the Commissioned Officers should be permitted to wear white feathers, and the Flankers red, or none whatever; that all the Commanding Officers ought to march on foot, and no officer of the Company to ride in the Park until after the review was over, and they had marched out of the Park on their return home, when they might march at their discretion.

This appears to have been the first occasion on which members of the Company were ordered to wear scarlet, and it has been ever since retained, being the colour which the greater portion of the Infantry of the Company have always worn since then.

The Company presented the following Address to the King on the occasion of their being reviewed:—

“TO THE KING’S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

“The Humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company of the City of London.

“Most Gracious Sovereign,

“Your Majesty’s Goodness and Benevolence, Your Tender and paternal Care and protection of the Laws of the Relm, and of the properties of Your Subjects, Are Vertues known to be peculiarly Inherent in Your Majesty.

“But Benevolence and Goodness, and all that tend to make a prince Beloved by honest and Gratefull Subjects, are the very things that makes him Less Feared by those that are Ungreatfull and Wicked.

“Mercy and Lenity, it seems, are now the Causes and Springs of Rebellion, and Sence these are the Causes of Rebellion in Impious Subjects.

“Give us Leave most Excelent Prince to Assure Your Majesty, that We are amongst the Number of Such as Highly Admire those Princelike Qualities which are so naturally Inherent in Your Sacred Person, that by the Lustre and Excellency of them We are Incited to Assure Your Majesty that We will

use Our Arms in the Defence of Your Royal Person, Crown, and Dignity, against all Popish Pretenders, and all other Your Majesty's Enemies, and their Traiterous Abettors."

At a Court held on the 7th of June, the President reported that the Address had been presented to His Majesty, who was pleased to make the following reply :—"I thank you for this Dutiful and Loyal Address in which you express so much zeal and affection for my person and government." In addition to this His Majesty said that, in testimony of his Royal favour and approbation of the good order of the Company when they were reviewed by him, he had ordered the sum of £500 to be paid to them as a present and gratuity for the use of the Company.

The humble thanks of the Court were voted to His Majesty for this gift, and also to the Right Hon. the Lord Viscount Townshend, and the Right Hon. the Lord Carterett, His Majesty's two principal Secretaries of State, for their great favour and service to the Company.

It was also debated whether the Court should notice an advertisement in the *Daily Post*, of the 6th inst., relating to the March, but it was decided to let the matter drop; Major Delafountain declaring that he did not order any such thing, and knew nothing of it until he saw it in print. It was resolved by a large majority that Major Delafountain for his insolent behaviour to the Court on the 30th of May, should be discharged from being any longer Captain of the Grenadiers; and as the senior Lieutenant of the Grenadiers declined promotion, Captain Bell was elected, who requested that one hautboy and one "courtail" might be added to the Grenadiers' music, which was agreed to.

On the 27th of July Mr. Thomas Gregory was chosen Adjutant, to lead on Court of Assistant nights in the Artillery Ground in case of necessity.

The Court—taking into consideration the handsome appearance the Company made when they marched in review before His Majesty on the 30th of May, and how handsome and uniform it would look to have all the gentlemen who carried half-pikes dressed in scarlet, and the Fusiliers in buff—ordered that, for



George I.
 Founder of the Armoury House. 1722.

the future, no person should march with a half-pike unless he appeared in scarlet with white stockings and black garters, and that no person carrying a firelock should appear otherwise than in buff, with white stockings or spatterdashes and black garters, the same as when reviewed by the King.

On the 14th of November the £500 given by the King was ordered to be appropriated towards building a new Armoury House, which was to be a noble edifice to perpetuate the memory of His Majesty.

It was decided to apply to the Court of Aldermen for permission to let the ground for about 750 feet in length, and 35 feet in depth, for building, on the side next to Bunhill Row.

1723.—On the 17th of May the Court decided that no person should in future carry a pike, or march as an officer on any General March, unless he was dressed in scarlet, except the Flankers of the Grenadiers.

The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 28th of May; and on the 1st of August had a march to Balmes, the Commanders choosing their own officers, and the Clerk prepared the exercise, and provided all necessaries as usual.

1724.—In May, John Blackwell was appointed second Adjutant. It was stated at a Court in July that arrangements had been made to free the Company from debt in five years, and it was decided in October that the £500 given by the King should not be applied for paying off the debt, or any other sums given for the like purpose, and from this time they appear to have discontinued allowing any money to be spent for entertainments in the evening after the marches or exercises.

1725.—It was ordered, on the 7th of May, that there were to be no public or private leads on Whitsun, or Easter Tuesday, in the Artillery Garden, or any Tuesday when the Trained Bands of the City exercised or mustered in the Ground.

The Clerk gave notice to Mr. Robinson, who rented the herbage (having obtained the lease in October, 1722, from J. Smith, Jun.), to take up the posts and put a stop to the exer-

cising of horses in the ground, which was contrary to the lease, and damaged the herbage, besides being "dishonourable to this Company." As Mr. Robinson took no notice of this, on the 7th of October proceedings were ordered to be taken against him for it, and also for allowing cricket.

Some ninety feet of the wall having fallen, which was principally caused by Mr. Addison allowing a great tree to rest against it, although cautioned on the subject, the Clerk was ordered to try and obtain permission to build on that side, so as to avoid re-building the wall. The subject of building on the Bunhill side of the Ground had been referred to the Standing Committee annually since 1722, but no active measures appear to have been taken until the latter part of this year.

A Memorial, dated the 7th October, was presented by the Company to the Court of Aldermen, on the 23rd of November, setting forth that, in 1698, the Court of Aldermen gave them leave to erect dwelling-houses on the front of their ground next Chiswell Street; but as many difficulties arose about granting under leases (which hindered the building), it was not completed until 1722. That maintaining the pavement in Chiswell Street for upwards of twenty years was so great that the Company got into debt. The West wall next to Bunhill Row was very bad on account of the water in the ditch on the outside, which forced its way through, so that, in 1716, about eighty feet of it fell down, and on the 28th of the previous September, about ninety feet more, to repair which would, at a moderate estimate, cost £200, which was a charge too heavy for them to bear under their present circumstances. They therefore begged for permission to build dwelling-houses there, for about 750 feet in length, and thirty-five feet in depth; and that they might have the benefit of the common road lying between the houses in Bunhill Row and the house they wished to build, as far as the kennel, about the middle of it, which would free the City from repairing it, and the Company would thereby avoid the charge of rebuilding the wall. The Court of Aldermen referred the subject to the Court of Common Council for their consideration.*

* Repertory, Vol. CXXX., ff. 24-6.

1726.—On the 28th of April the Court ordered that no sergeant was to vote at the General Court unless he had attended the three previous General Marches.

On the 10th of May, Mr. Wheatly, author of the *Flying Post*, was voted one guinea for divers paragraphs inserted in that journal relating to the Company, and the same sum was ordered to be paid annually.

At a Court of Common Council, on the 12th of May, the petition of the Company, dated the 7th of October, 1725, for permission to build on the west side of the Ground, was read, and it was referred to the Committee for letting City Lands to report their opinion thereon.*

The Ground was opened for exercise on Tuesday, the 17th May; the Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, on the 28th of May, but no entertainment at night at the expense of the Company was allowed, and on the 1st of August they had their usual march to Balmes.

In this year was published a brief history of the Company, entitled "A Compendium of Military Discipline," by John Blackwell, the Clerk and Adjutant of the Company. The greater part of the book consisted of the drill for a battalion, firelocks, halberds, &c., and the whole work only occupied about 112 octavo pages. In the concluding paragraph he says that "this Ancient and Honourable Company, after having struggled through innumerable interruptions, difficulties, and oppressions, has now the hopes and agreeable prospect of being much more considerable and flourishing than it has ever yet been."

1727.—At a Court, on the 10th of February, it was ordered that the Company should march under arms to present an Address to the King; the same regulations relating to dress being observed as those for the review in 1722, all Pikemen being in scarlet, and the Fusiliers in buff; and the Commanders were not to wear white feathers, but laced hats and black cockades only. All the officers taking part in this march were to attend at the Ground at such times as the Major-General should order, so as to be instructed in their several salutes to be paid to His Majesty,

* Journal, Vol. LVII., f. 143.

and any who did not appear, or who were deficient in their performance, were to be replaced by others.

The Committee appointed to draw up the regulations for the March submitted the following regulations, which were approved of.

The files to be drawn up four deep on parade, which was to be in the Guildhall Yard, and when formed to proceed to the Privy Gardens in coaches or by water, as it should best suit them.

After marching back to the Guildhall, the Clerk was to pay each four files 10s., and gentlemen of the Court of Assistants who marched in the files might elect to receive this sum, or to dine with the Company; but the entertainment was only to be sirloins of roast beef, and a bottle of wine to each gentleman, and no more.

The Captain of the Pioneers was to march with a Field Staff, and his Lieutenant with a Battleaxe, and to salute with their hats only; and no children, servants or others, were to march between the divisions or ranks. The orders for the March were ordered to be printed, as formerly, and were as follows:—

“ The Order of the March of the Artillery Company before His Majesty, March 2nd, 1727.

| | | |
|--|------------------------|--|
| 1. The Captain of the Pioneers. | 1. Capt. of Pioneers. | |
| 2. The Company of Pioneers, with their proper Accoutrements, to clear the Route. | | |
| 3. The Lieutenants of the Pioneers. | | |
| 4. The led Horse belonging to the Captain of the Grenadiers, with a Groom on horseback. | | |
| 5. The Servants belonging to the Officers of the Grenadiers, in a Rank, bare-headed before the King. | 2. Pioneers. | |
| 6. The Marshal of the Grenadiers. | 3. Lieut. of Pioneers. | |
| 7. The Grenadiers' Music, in a Rank. | | |
| 8. The Captain of the Grenadiers (Major Joseph Bell) on horseback, but dismounts, and marcheth on foot before the King with his Fusil. | 4. A led horse. | |
| | 5. Servants. | |
| | 6. Marshal. | |
| | 7. Music. | |

- | | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 9. The two Lieutenants of the Grenadiers (Mr. John Lambe and Mr. Thomas Gregory), abreast, with Fusils. | Major 8. Bell. |
| 10. The Company of Grenadiers, in Buff, three deep in files, with their Flankers on the Angles of the Divisions. | 9. Mr. Gregory. |
| 11. The led Horses belonging to the General Officers, with Grooms on horseback. | Mr. Lambe. |
| 12. The Servants belonging to the General Officers in a rank, bare-headed, as before. | 10. Grenadiers.—Lt. Carter. |
| 13. The Marshals belonging to the Commanding Officers, in a rank, with their hats under their left arms, before the King. | Grenadiers.—Capt. Tame. |
| 14. The Beadle of the Company, with his Staff in his right hand and hat under his left arm, before the King. | Lt. Gilbert.—Grenadiers. |
| 15. The Music belonging to the Body, in a rank. | 11. Led horses. |
| 16. The General (Sir William Billers, Kt. and Alderman), on horseback, but dismounts, and marcheth on foot before the King, with his Half-pike. | 12. Servants. |
| 17. The Lieutenant-General (Lieut.-Colonel Samuel Westall) and the Major-General (viz., Major John Williams, in the room of Major Joseph Bell), on horseback abreast, but dismount, and march before the King with Half-pikes. | 13. Marshals. |
| 18. The three Captains, with the Captain-Lieutenant, in one rank—viz., Captain John Weedon, Captain William Bell, Captain Edward Raybould, and Major John Triquett. | 14. Beadle. |
| 19. The Front Grand Division of Fusiliers in Buff, march four deep in files, with the Flankers in Scarlet, and sashes round their waists, march on the Right Angles of the Sub-Divisions with Partisans shouldered. | 15. Music. |
-
- | | | |
|--|-------------------|----------------------|
| | Major Williams. | 16. Sir Wm. Billers. |
| | Captain Roybould. | Lt.-Col. Westall. |
| | Major Triquett. | |
| | Capt. Weedon. | |
| | 17. | |
| | 18. | |
-
- | | | |
|--|-------------|-----------------------------|
| | Capt. Bell. | 19. Fusiliers.—Lt. Gregory. |
| | | Fusiliers.—Lt. Leak. |
| | | Fusiliers.—Lt. Brind. |
| | | Fusiliers.—Lt. Philpott. |

20. Two Brivates, with the Bringer-up in one rank, bring up to the Front Grand Division of Fusiliers—viz., Captain John Johnson, Captain Nicholas Faulcon, and Lieutenant William George.

{ Capt. Faulcon.
20. { Lieut. George.
Capt. Johnson.

21. The Surgeon, Mr. Henry Middleton, with his Scarf and Arms of the Company, marcheth with his hat under his left arm, as before.

21. Surgeon.

| | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|--|
| □□ □□ | □□ □□ | □□ □□ |
| Capt. Anbury. (Lt.-Gen's colour) | Capt. Gerard. Maj.-Gen's colour) | Lt.-Col. Phillips. (General's colour) |

22. {

22. The three Ensigns of the General Officers—viz., Lieutenant-Colonel Peregrine Phillips, Captain Robert Anbury, and Captain George Gerrard—march in one rank, Colours flying.

23. The First Grand Division of Pikes, in Scarlet, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the right of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.

23. Lt. Wilmott.—Pikes.

Ens. Laurence.—Pikes.

| | | |
|--------------|---------------|-------------------|
| □□ □□ | □□ □□ | □□ □□ |
| Capt. Lambe. | Capt. Fulker. | Capt. Cartwright. |

24. {

24. The three Ensigns of the Captains—viz., Captain Thomas Cartwright, Captain Joseph Lambe, and Captain Thomas Fulker—march in one rank, Colours flying.

25. The Second Grand Division of Pikes, in scarlet, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the Left Angles of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.

25. Ens. Embroy.—Pikes.

Lt. Brown. —Pikes.

26. The two youngest Lieutenants, with a Brivate, in one rank, lead the Rear Grand Division of Fusiliers, viz., Captain Walter Sutton, Captain Benjamin Osgood, and Captain Samuel Saunders.

{ Capt. Osgood.
26. { Capt. Saunders.
Capt. Sutton.

27. The Rear Grand Division of Fusiliers, in Buff, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the left angles of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.

27. Lt. Hingist. —Fusiliers.

Lt. Woodcock. —Fusiliers.

Ens. Owen. —Fusiliers.

Lt. Shortland. —Fusiliers.

28. The three eldest Lieutenants, with a Bri-
viate, march in one rank, and bring up
the Rear, viz., Captain Paul Ferris, Cap-
tain William Brind, Captain Charles
Thompson, and Captain John Bassin-
dine. John Blackwell, Adjutant and
Clerk, and Captain Joseph Willoughby,
Assistant-Adjutant, to march at dis-
cretion.

Capt. Ferris.
Capt. Thompson.
Capt. Bassindine.
Capt. Brind.
28.

N.B.—The Company consists of the Officers of the Trained Bands of the City of London and Suburbs thereof, and other gentlemen who are instructed in the Use and Exercise of Arms.

By approbation of the Major-General,

JOHN BLACKWELL, *Adjutant and Clerk.*"

The following Address was on the same day presented to His Majesty :—

"TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

"The Humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and whole Body of your Majesty's Artillery Company of the City of London.

"Great Sir,

"We cannot but observe, with the Greatest Concern, the present Situation of the affairs of Europe, & the Menaces and Threats used by ye Spaniards and the Emperour against your Majesty, your Dominions, and our Libertys and Propertys.

"Therefore we take this Opportunity to wait on your Majesty in Arms, to assure y^r Majesty, that we are ready at this Time (& shall be at all Times) to defend y^r Majesty and your Royall Family against all your Enemies, & the Enemies of our Laws, Liberties, & Properties, & all those that dare attempt to invade or Disturb them.

"Signed, by Order of the Court of Assistants,

"JOHN BLACKWELL, *Clerk.*"

To this Address His Majesty returned the following answer :—
"I thank you for this dutiful and loyal Address, in which you express so much zeal and affection for my person and government."

On the 21st of March Mr. Robinson surrendered the lease of the herbage, as he owed a year and a quarter's rent, amounting to £65, which he was unable to pay, but offered to take it for £34 per annum, and promised not to allow any more horses in the Ground, to give good security, and pay £4 a quarter towards paying off his debt of £65, to which the Court agreed; but at the next Court, on the 14th of April, his securities being found very insufficient, his offer was rejected, and they decided to keep the Ground themselves for a year and make the best they could of it.

A small door was ordered to be made in the wall, near Mr. Pridmore's garden wall in Thieving Lane, and the gaps in the wall were ordered to be repaired so as to prevent the boys getting over into the Ground.

At a Court held on the 17th of May it was stated, with reference to building on the West side of the Ground, that the Corporation required that the Company should surrender their old lease, and have a new one for the remainder of their term under the same rent and covenants, but distinguishing the Freehold from the Leasehold, and quitting the Freehold at the end of the term; but the offer was rejected.

An undertaking was entered into with Mr. Skillethorp to repair the iron gates for £10, to keep them in repair for fourteen years, and to open and shut them on all public occasions for thirty shillings per annum.

The Clerk's accounts for the year 1725-1726 were audited in July, and showed a debit balance of £202 8s. 4d.; and as it was thought a great hardship that the Clerk should advance money from year to year without interest, it was agreed to allow him interest on the several yearly balances.

The Old Artillery Ground, near Bishopsgate, where the Company used formerly to exercise, was now entirely changed; it is described in this year as the Liberty of the Old Artillery Ground, an extra-parochial Royalty belonging to the Tower, consisting of 202 houses, with six persons who kept coaches.*

* Maitland, p. 482.



THE NEW ARTILLERY GROUND, AND MOORFIELDS IN 1732,
Heliotype Facsimile, reduced, from the Plan of London, by Ogilby & Morgan. scale 300-ft to 1-in. with additions by Jeffereys to 1732.

CHAPTER XIII.

ADVANCEMENT OF THE COMPANY DURING THE REIGN
OF GEORGE II.

FROM 1727 TO 1760.

CONTENTS.—Permission to Build on West side of Ground.—Petition to Aldermen, 1727.—The Guards allowed to use the Ground.—The Exercise performed, 1728.—Value of the Ground.—Rules for the Subscriptions to New Armoury.—Memorial to Lieutenancy.—Plans for Armoury approved.—Lieutenancy subscribes £500.—Annual Committee.—Lieutenant-Colonels of Trained Bands.—Application of Mrs. Gregory for place of Armourer.—List of Subscribers.—Armoury House completed, 1735.—Panels for Names ordered.—Regulations for Use of Armoury.—Action in King's Bench against Officers.—List of Arms and Armour, 1738.—The Finsbury Archers.—Payment to Militia Officers.—Duties of Clerk, Armourer, and Beadle, 1740.—Iron Gates for West side ordered.—Remainder of West side let, 1742.—Address to King, 1744.—The Colts' Feast.—Salutes fired.—Guns sent to Tower.—Gates made for Entrance Hall, 1746.—Certificates of Efficiency.—The Royal Blue Fusiliers.—Sergeants not to be less than 5 ft. 6 in.—Military Examinations.—The Hanover Grenadiers.—Sergeant-Major appointed.—Contributions to Poor Box.—Scarlet and Blue Uniforms.—Chaplain appointed, 1748.—Search for Charter and Warrants.—The Lord Mayor.—The Prussian Exercise.—British Volunteers.—Middlesex Militia.—Death of the King.

UPON the accession of George II., the affairs of the Company were in a more flourishing state than they had been for many years, Mr. Blackwell's plan of retrenchment having already taken effect.

In July, the Court agreed to present an humble Address to His Majesty, expressing their deep sense of the great loss the nation had sustained by the sudden and unexpected death of

his late royal father, and of their joy in His Majesty's peaceful and happy accession to the throne. Major Bell was desired to wait on Lord Townshend, to appoint a day to present it to His Majesty, which he promised to do; but the subject appears to have dropped, as no further mention of it is made.

At a Court of Common Council, held on the 12th of October, the Report of the Committee of City Lands, dated the 28th of June, was read, in which they recommended that the Company should be granted permission to build on the west side of the Ground, in consideration of their surrendering their lease on the terms already stated; to which the Court agreed.

The Company was ordered to attend under arms on Lord Mayor's day; after which, private leads were to be discontinued, and no more public leads were to be held after the 12th of October.

As His Majesty was going to dine at the Guildhall on Lord Mayor's day, the Court sent to inquire whether he would be pleased to receive the salute of the Company on the occasion; to which he assented.

All the three Generals chosen to lead were unable to appear, and the Court of Aldermen being also engaged, it was decided to march without a General, and that a Lieutenant-General and Major-General should lead, riding abreast. Only three "sheets" of Colours were to be made use of, and the Flankers were to march with partisans, which were to be carried at the angles of each division.

It being usual for the Corporation to allow the Company £20 towards the expenses of their march when the Sovereign came to dine in the City, they presented the following Petition to the Court of Aldermen:—

"To the Worshipfull ye Committee of Aldermen and Common Councill of the City of London ;

"The Petition of ye Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company of the said City,

"Humbly sheweth,

"That the Artillery Company have been accustomed, time out of mind, to attend, in Arms, ye Right Honourable ye Lord



G. Kneller. Pinx.

J. Faber, Sc.

*George, Prince of Wales,
(Afterwards George II.)
Captain General. 1715-1760.*

HELIOTYPE.

Digitized by Google

Mayor of this City, for ye time being, ye same Day He is Sworn at Westminster, from ye place of His Landing to ye place where His Lordship Dineth, towards ye charge of which March His Lordship, for ye time being, payeth to ye Company ye sum of £30, which is but about one-half of ye Charge of the said March.

“That when any King or Queen of this Realm is pleased to Honour this City with His or Her Royall Presence to Dine with ye Lord Mayor, the City are usually pleased to allow the said Company a further sum of Twenty Pounds towards ye Charge of their said March, which is always attended with a greater Expende on such an Occasion than is Usual at another Time.

“Therefore, as His Majesty is pleased to Declare His Royal Pleasure that He will honour this City, on Monday next, for ye aforesaid Purpose, They humbly pray yt this Worshipfull Committee will please to grant ye sum of £20 as is Usual on such an Occasion.

“By Order of the Court of Assistants,

“JOHN BLACKWELL, *Clerk.*”

1728.—At a Court on the 27th of February it was stated that the usual present had been paid into the Poor Box as was customary on renewing the lease, and that John Blackwell, citizen and loriner, Thomas Gregory, citizen and gunmaker, and William Harris, citizen and glazier, had been appointed temporary Trustees.

Colonel Williamson, of the Tower, requested permission to exercise His Majesty's Guards on duty there, on Tuesday and Thursday mornings in the Artillery Ground for two or three months; which was granted on the understanding that he should recompense Mr. J. Smith, their tenant, for any damage done to the herbage.

The public and private leads of the Company were always fixed at the first Court of Assistants after the annual elections.

The Ground was opened for public leads on Tuesday, the 4th of June, the two Ensigns being appointed to lead first, then the Colonels of the Trained Bands, by seniority, as usual. The Majors

of the Trained Bands, being honorary members of the Court of Assistants, were generally requested to inform the Colonels of their regiments on all such subjects: and, as it was considered an honour to be summoned to the Court, all those who refused to lead, or to pay quarterage, had no more summonses sent to them.

On the 16th of July, having received the new Lease, empowering the Company to build on the west side of the Ground, they resolved to advertise that the ground was to be let for that purpose, and as the wall had not been rebuilt, they were thus saved considerable expense.

On the 9th of October, the Clerk reported that he had advertised the ground to be let, for building, in the *Daily Courant*, but that people did not care to make any agreement until the making and price of bricks were settled. The Clerk was voted fifty guineas for his trouble in getting the new lease and seeing about the letting of the Ground.

The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on Tuesday, the 11th of June, and on Thursday, the 1st of August, they marched to Balmes; and performed the following exercise or sham fight:—*

THE DESIGN.

Draw up the files in the Artillery Ground (three deep), extend north and south upon the lines, march the Company out at the little gate, pursue the same into Pest-house Field, and draw up facing westward.

The Field Officers, having reviewed the Body, and received the salutes of the rest of the Officers in their proper posts, then

* An Exercise of Arms to be performed by the Honourable the Artillery Company, on Thursday, the 1st of August, 1728, under the command of the Right Worshipful Sir John Thompson, Kt. and Alderman, General: the Right Worshipful Sir Thomas Lombe, Kt., Alderman and Sheriff, Lieutenant-General; Major William Brind, Major-General; Major Seth Adams, Captain of the Grenadiers; Captain Walter Sutton, 1st Captain; Captain Paul Ferris, 2nd Captain; Captain Benjamin Osgood, 3rd Captain. Bodleian Library: Gough, London. No. 278.

divide into two battalions, and order the Lieutenant-General into winter quarters; accordingly the Lieutenant-General takes his march northwards, and, finding the country to be barren and incommodious, he draws up his men, and, by an oration he makes to them, engageth them into a revolt.

The General, by his spies, having received certain intelligence of his said revolt, sends an Officer, with a trumpeter, to know the reason of it.

The Lieutenant-General sends the Officer back in disgrace, bids defiance to the General, and said that he would give the reasons for his revolt at the point of the sword.

The General calls a Council of War, in which it was resolved to reduce the Lieutenant-General to obedience by force of arms, and therefore pursueth him with much expedition.

The Lieutenant-General draws up his forces in ambuscade, and fires upon the General on his march; upon which the General draws up his men, and returns the fire; but, the Lieutenant-General being very advantageously posted, the General could not force him, and therefore pursues his march to gain a more open ground.

The General, having gained an open country, draws up his forces to give battle to the Lieutenant-General; which the Lieutenant-General perceiving, and not willing to come to a close engagement, draws off, and gains the possession of a strong line drawn across the country, and then draws up his men, in order to defend the same.

The General marcheth his forces after him (in battalia), and being willing to prevent the effusion of blood that might ensue, sends a second summons to the Lieutenant-General to give the reasons of his revolt, or submit to his mercy at discretion, otherwise he would compel him by force of arms.

The Lieutenant-General sends word that his revolt was for want of pay, and that, if he did not send all the pay due to him, and provide him better winter quarters, he would stand the utmost extremity.

The General lets him know that all the pay due to him was ready, but that he must first execute the orders he had given him.

The Lieutenant-General, not being willing to trust to the honour of the General, fires upon him at a narrow pass in the centre of the lines.

The General returns the fire, and at last, by springing a mine, makes a breach and mounts the same, which forceth the Lieutenant-General to come to a general engagement; and accordingly both armies draw up in order of battle, which is begun by cannonading, and then to a close fight, in which victory seemed doubtful for some time; till at last the Lieutenant-General was obliged to give way to the superior force of the General, to quit the field, and to make the best retreat he could to a strong pass in his rear, where he stands his ground for some time, until the General, by sending a division, flanks him on the left, which causeth him to retire to a bar at the extremity of the said pass; but finding his army much weakened, springs a mine and throws a shoal of grenades, which disorders the General's forces, and by it gains time to secure his retreat into a strong fortress some distance southward.

The General being resolved to reduce him, orders several shells to be thrown into the place; but they not having the desired effect, orders his cannon to play (*which the Lieutenant-General answers from his batteries*) and also to scale the walls, but to no purpose; so that, after several firings of small arms on both sides, both parties desist the general fire, and only are for "birding."

The General marcheth his forces down the great road on the east of the fortress, and draws up at the great gate leading towards the entrance of the castle, which at last is forced by him, and then draws up facing the entrance itself; and, after many firings on both sides, the Lieutenant-General's forces being beat into the place, the General prepares for a general assault; which the Lieutenant-General perceiving, and having several mines planted at the entrance of the interior polygon, springs the same with such success that many of the General's forces are slain thereby.

The Lieutenant-General observing the resolution of the General to storm the place, and his ammunition being spent, came to a resolution to try if he could gain an honourable

capitulation, and therefore hangs out the White Flag and beats the "Chamade."

The General, not knowing the danger he might expose the rest of his men unto in the storming the place, therefore, upon hostages being exchanged, enters into a treaty, and after some time articles were agreed unto and signed; the Lieutenant-General marcheth out with all the tokens of honour, as drums beating, colours flying, &c.; the General takes possession of this important place; and afterwards both armies join and march into the Artillery Ground, where they fire three volleys and lodge the colours, which concludes the EXERCISE.

DIRECTIONS FOR PERFORMANCE.

1st Firing.—At the Avenue by Lady Lumley's Almshouses in Ship Field, one round, by single ranks, the Lieutenant-General making the first fire.—N.B. The ranks after their firings to wheel off to the right and left outwards, and post themselves in the rear of their own divisions, after they all have fired; then wheel off the division, that the second may advance. (So of the rest.)

2nd Firing.—At the centre of the line, between Ship Field and Rose and Crown Field (both sides being drawn up in battalia), the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire, fire one round by single ranks of each division, and then wheel off to the rear of their own divisions. Let the firings be from right and left to the centre; then the General throws a shoal of grenades and springs a mine, and forceth the Pass.

3rd Firing.—The Field Fight.—Cannonading, three rounds on each side, three rounds by platoons on each side, the General making the first fire. 1. Fire from right to left; 2. From left to right; 3. From right and left into the centre.

4th Firing.—At the Rose and Crown, where fire two rounds by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; the General flanks his left, and throws a shoal of grenades, which causeth the Lieutenant-General to retreat to the Bar, after he has delivered a shoal of grenades.

5th Firing.—At the Bar, where fire one round by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; then the Lieutenant-General throws another shoal of grenades, springs a Mine, and retires into the Castle.

6th Firing.—The Siege.—1. Bombardment (three shells); 2. Cannonading (three rounds); 3. By the Divisions of small shot (three rounds); and then Birding on each side.

7th Firing.—At the Great Gate, one round by divisions, the General making the first Fire; and then the General throws grenades and springs a mine, which forceth the Gate.

8th Firing.—At the Entrance of the Citadel, where fire one round by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; then the Lieutenant-General throws a shoal of grenades; after which the General springs a mine, to force the said entrance; then the Lieutenant-General springs another, to beat off the General's men, whereby many are destroyed; *and then beats the Chamade.*

1729.—The value of the Ground at this period is shown by a lease granted to Sir Joseph Eyles, on the 18th of March, for the herbage of the Ground, at a rent of £36 per annum, he keeping the east wall in repair. A lease was also given to Mr. Rymill, for seventy feet on the west side of the Ground, on the condition that he should build the whole front in a handsome and uniform manner, according to the agreement in the City's lease: the period was for fifty-one years certain, with an additional ten years if the Company got their lease renewed, he paying 1s. 6d. per foot clear of all taxes, parliamentary or otherwise.

The subject of building a new Armoury was again taken up in April, and referred to the Committee.

The Company marched to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, on Wednesday, the 11th of June, it being the anniversary of the King's accession: the Commanders appointed their own officers and paid their share of the expenses, the Clerk having to provide all necessaries and prepare an Exercise.

At a Court held on the 17th of July, plans for a new Armoury were submitted by Mr. Stibbs and Mr. Dance, when it was decided that the former was the best, and it was thereupon adopted.

1730.—On the 18th of February, the Committee appointed to consider how money should be raised to build the New Armoury, presented their report to the Court recommending that a voluntary subscription should be opened forthwith; and to facilitate and encourage the same it should be commenced by the gentlemen of the Court of Assistants, as an example to others to be liberal on this occasion.

The preamble and conditions for a voluntary subscription were as follows:—

His Royal Majesty King George the First having been graciously pleased to order the sum of Five Hundred Pounds

to be paid to the Honourable the Artillery Company of the City of London, as a mark of His Royal favour towards them, and a testimony of his approving the good order in which they appeared on the 1st of June, 1722, as they marched in review before him: it is the intention of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of the said Company to appropriate the said Five Hundred Pounds towards the building of a new Armoury; and it being the design of the aforesaid gentlemen that the said Armoury be a noble structure or edifice in honour to the memory of his said Royal Majesty, and likewise in honour of his present Majesty, King George the Second, their august Captain-General: they do therefore order that a voluntary subscription be forthwith taken for raising a sufficient sum for completing the same, according to a model or plan prepared for that purpose.

That for the encouragement of such gentlemen as are pleased to become subscribers to this undertaking:—

1. That such gentlemen as shall subscribe and pay the sum of five pounds or upwards, shall have their names set in letters of gold on the panels in the Great Room in the said Armoury, with the respective sums by them subscribed, as a grateful acknowledgment of their being kind benefactors to the said Company (if they please to give leave for so doing).

2. That such gentlemen as shall subscribe and pay the sum of ten pounds or upwards, shall not only have their names set as aforesaid, but be admitted and entered members of the said Company (if they are not so already) free from paying any quarterage (*Durante Vita*), provided they are not Officers in the Trained Bands of this City.

3. That such gentlemen as shall subscribe and pay the sum of twenty pounds or upwards, shall not only have their names set, and be admitted members of this Company, as aforesaid, but be also admitted honorary members of the Court of Assistants; but this not to extend to any Officers in the Trained Bands of this City, the Westminster, or Tower Hamlets, under the degree of a Captain-Lieutenant.

That when a sufficient sum is subscribed to complete the building of the said Armoury, that the said subscription money

be collected and received by the Clerk and paid into the hands of the Honourable Sir Gerrard Conyers, Treasurer to the said Company, or into the Bank of England, as the Court of Assistants shall see proper to direct and appoint; and not to be converted or employed to any other use or purpose whatsoever than for building the said Armoury.

These rules were ratified and confirmed by the Court, several members in the room subscribing to the fund at once.

At a Court on the 28th of May, the usual order, that when eight members were present they might elect a chairman and proceed to business, was confirmed; and the usual standing Committee, consisting of eleven members, was appointed, but the following year the number was reduced to nine.

The Captain of the Grenadiers requested that he might be allowed to provide the music for each march, which he undertook to do for thirty shillings each march, which was agreed to.

1731.—On the 17th of May the Court drew up and approved of the following Memorial to the Court of Lieutenancy:—

To the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor and the rest of the Honourable the Commissioners of His Majesty's Lieutenancy for the City of London and Liberties thereof.

“The Memorial and Representation of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company of the said City,

“Sheweth:

“That they have been informed that this Honourable Court, some years since, had an intention to build a House or Armoury in the Artillery Ground, for the Use and Service of the Officers and Soldiers of the Militia of this City, on the Days of their Muster and other public drawings forth.

“And that they had appointed a Committee and advised with Counsel thereon, as in particular in the years 1702 and 1704, and that the said Committee did, in the year 1704, make their report to this Honourable Court in the following words, viz.,

“That pursuant to the matter to them referred, they have had the Opinion of the Recorder and the Common Serjeant,

that this Court has authority by law to expend what sum of money they shall think necessary to build a House for the Use and Service of the Officers and Soldiers of the Militia of this City upon the days of their Muster and other public drawings forth.

“ ‘They also report that the Artillery Garden, being given by this City, as well for the use of the Trained Bands as of the Artillery Company, is a proper place to build such a House upon, and are of Opinion that the sum of ———, or thereabouts, will erect a building proper for the uses aforesaid.’

“ For the greater certainty of which they refer to the Books of this Honourable Court.

“ That the Artillery Company, taking into consideration the great want of an Armory, are about raising a sum, by way of a voluntary Subscription, towards the erecting such a building, with Offices and Accommodations, as may be convenient to receive the Officers and Soldiers of the Trained Bands of this City on Muster Days and other Public Drawings forth, and Exercise the Artillery Company therein, in case of wet weather.

“ Therefore the said Court of Assistants humbly hope that this Honourable Court will please to take the premises into their Consideration.”

The Company's accounts for the years 1727-9 showed that the sum of £198 19s. 1d. was due to John Blackwell, the Clerk.

It was ordered that the Flankers on General Marches should carry partisans at the angles of the divisions, as was done at the review before George I.; and that they should provide themselves with partisans, as the Captains and Lieutenants did with half-pikes. Every member under arms on a Public Lead was entitled to go to the entertainment at night, but was obliged to spend 6d., the same as on private nights.

On the 11th of October, Public Leads were ordered to be discontinued, and also Private Leads after Lord Mayor's day. The Grenadiers' music was ordered to consist of one curtail, three hautboys, and no more, and the Clerk was to pay for the same.

On the 15th of November, the Court ordered that for the future a rough draft of the Minutes should be signed by the Chairman, and brought to the next Court.

1732.—On the 8th of May, the Court of Assistants finally approved of the plan for the New Armoury prepared by Mr. Stibbs, and which it was estimated would cost £1,800.

It had been proposed, at a Court held on the 19th of July, 1731, that the Captains should be elected for the year instead of for each march, and it was referred to the next Court, on the 26th of July, who decided in the affirmative; but at another Court, held two days after, this decision was reversed, and it was ordered to be left over for the next General Court.

At the first Court held after the General Court in this year, on the 26th of May, it was decided to choose the three Captains for the three marches for the year, the same as the Grenadiers did, each Captain to pay £5 only, towards the expenses.

For the march to Balmes, on the 1st of August, the Captain of the Grenadiers was allowed £6, instead of £4, for the next two marches, for the expenses of the entertainment.

On the 5th of October, the Clerk produced precedents of the Court expelling a member of the Court and electing another, which proved satisfactorily that they had the power to do so.

1733.—At a Court on the 5th of March, the Annual Committee reported that on the 27th of July, 1732, they met a Committee of the Court of Lieutenancy, who were appointed to inspect the old building in the Artillery Ground to see if it could be repaired and enlarged, but they decided that nothing could be done to it.

The plan adopted on the 17th of May, 1731, was submitted to the Committee of the Court of Lieutenancy, who inquired what sum they were expected to subscribe on the conditions named in the Memorial of the 17th of May, 1731, viz., that it was to be appropriated for the accommodation of the Trained Bands and officers thereof on Muster days and other public drawings forth, whenever the Honourable the Commissioners

of His Majesty's Lieutenancy for this City, &c., should see proper to appoint the same. The ground-floor great room to muster the Trained Bands in ; and the great room above for the reception and accommodation of the Officers thereof. The Committee of the Company said they hoped to receive not less than £600. The Lieutenancy approved of the plan, and agreed to subscribe £500 towards the expense. On considering the plan the Committee decided that a window, door, and balcony over the great door in the front of the house, instead of a niche, would be much more useful and commodious for the Field Officers of the Trained Bands, and the Court resolved to apply to the Court of Lieutenancy for permission to alter the plan accordingly.

On the 26th of May, 1732, the usual Committee was chosen to manage and prepare such affairs as might from time to time be referred to them by the Court to report their opinion thereon ; the Committee consisted of nine, five being a quorum, which was altered the following year by the Committee being formed of the whole Court, and seven being the quorum.

At a Court on the 28th of May, 1734, the order for holding Courts in the absence of the President, Vice-President, or Treasurer, was continued for another year ; and it was ordered that when any of the Lieutenant-Colonels of the Trained Bands who were *members of the Company* thought it necessary to call a Court, the order of one of them to the Clerk should be deemed a sufficient warrant for him to direct the beadle to summons a Court, and when eight were present it should be lawful for them to choose a Chairman, and proceed to act on all such affairs of the Company as might come before them. On the 3rd of June, 1735, another alteration was made, as it was ordered that the Court should not be assembled by the Lieutenant-Colonels unless they were *members of the Court*. On the 1st of June, 1736, the Court ordered that *any* of the Lieutenant-Colonels of the Trained Bands might direct the Clerk to wait upon one of the three chiefs, viz., the President, Vice-President, or Treasurer, to request them to appoint a day for holding a Court ; and when eight were present, but none of the three chiefs, they might choose a chairman, and proceed to business.

The Company's Accounts being audited to Lady-day, 1732, showed that £105 9s. 9d. was owing to the Clerk.

On the 12th of March, the Court directed that application should be made to Sir R. Walpole to inquire when and in what manner his Most Sacred Majesty would be pleased to permit the Company to wait upon him, in order to lay before His Majesty their proposals for a new Armoury, hoping that he would be pleased to grant them some kind aid towards completing the same.

In order to oblige members to take their turn as leaders, the General Court ordered that for the future a list of those whose turn it was to lead should be kept, and that if any of them refused, they should be declared to be no longer members of the Company.

The first Court was held after the General Court, on the 4th of June, and it was then decided to discontinue electing an Annual Committee, which, for the future, should consist of the whole Court; seven being a quorum.

The Ground was opened for exercise on Tuesday the 12th of June, and the Hon. Sir William Bellers, Kt., Colonel of the Blue Regiment, was appointed to be the first to lead; after him the two Ensigns of the Ground, and then the members of the Court.

As many of the Sergeants of the Trained Bands had for some years been very neglectful in attending the three grand marches, properly dressed in buff, with firelocks and bayonets, and did not provide substitutes if ill or unavoidably absent—as they were bound to do by the Orders of the Court of Lieutenancy of the 22nd of July, and Court of Assistants of the 5th of August, 1719, which were confirmed by the General Court on the 14th of April, 1720—the Court, on the 23rd of July, ordered a list to be kept of all who did not attend, and that it should be laid before the Lieutenancy, and Commanders, with a request to discharge them.

1734.—The Court, on the 25th of April, having applied, through the Right Hon. Sir Robert Walpole, for permission for the Court to wait on His Majesty, to present an Address of

Congratulation on the Marriage of the Princess Royal with His Highness the Prince of Orange, were informed that His Majesty had signified his pleasure to prevent as much as possible the attendance of any great bodies on that occasion; for that the Prince was so weakly in his constitution that it would be too great a fatigue to him under his present circumstances, and that His Majesty would graciously accept their kind offer as well as if it were done.

The Armourer, Mr. Gregory, having died, Mr. North, an Ensign, petitioned the Court, on the 23rd of April, for the place, and Mrs. Gregory, the wife of the late Armourer, also applied for it at the same time; but the Court decided that it was improper to make choice of a woman as an Armourer, there being no precedent for it, and elected North by a large majority.

All the Court of Aldermen having taken their turn to lead, they had great difficulty in obtaining Generals for the Marches; at a Court, therefore, on the 9th of May, the President offered to lead on the first march, and the Vice-President on the second march.

The Armourer was ordered to give security for £100, and find two sureties.

An advertisement was ordered to be inserted in the *Daily Advertiser* for contracts to build the Armoury, which were to be sent in by the 6th of June.

The contracts were examined on that day, and found to be as follows:—

| | £ | s. | d. |
|----------------------------------|-------|----|----|
| Major B. Osgood... .. | 1,653 | 0 | 0 |
| Mr. Thomas Dunn | 1,459 | 15 | 5 |
| Mr. Robinson | 1,390 | 0 | 0 |
| Mr. John Baker | 1,440 | 0 | 0 |
| Mr. Poltney | 1,450 | 0 | 0 |
| Messrs. Harris and Stibbs | 1,390 | 0 | 0 |

The last-named firm then offered to do it, including the additional masonry, amounting to about eleven guineas, which had been omitted in the original draft, for £1,284.

On the 6th of June, Lieutenant Ladyman was appointed Sergeant of the Ground, to assist the Clerk on the three General

Marches; and at the same Court twelve members were chosen to be Trustees of the Ground, in place of the Clerk and Mr. William Harris, the surviving Trustees.

As it was found necessary to sink the foundations of the new Armoury House three feet lower than was originally intended—at a cost of about £70—or else to cross and long plank it—which would only cost £48—the latter plan was adopted.

On the 26th of July, the sum of £500, the gift of George I., which had been invested in South Sea Annuities, was ordered to be realised, and subscribers were requested to pay up their subscriptions.

The Accounts of the Company to Lady-day showed that the balance owing to the Clerk had been reduced to £61 11s. 1d.

The Old Armoury stood near the west wall, and the Watch House and sheds at the corner of Kissing Lane.

In December the building had so far advanced that it was insured in the Hand-in-Hand Insurance Office.

1735.—The Ground was generally opened for private leads on the first Tuesday after Lady-day, but it was postponed this year to the 15th of April, as the ground before the new Armoury had only been just levelled, and had to be sown with grass.

On the 10th of April, it was decided to build two walls behind the new Armoury, and to make an enclosure for a yard or garden, and to build a house there.

On the 3rd of June, it was ordered that the Company should pay their respects to the Lord Mayor on the 11th of June, and that the Commanding Officers for the day should prepare an Exercise, and get the Clerk to assist them. The Exercise was formerly drawn up by the Lieutenants of the Ground.

A list of subscribers to the fund for building the Armoury was drawn up in June, showing that the following had been elected Members in accordance with the conditions published on the 18th of February, 1729:—

| | | | | | | |
|---------------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|---|--|
| Captain Thomas Rutt | ... | ... | ... | £20 | 0 | Elected 7th October, 1734, an Honorary Member of Court for life, and another Member was elected in his room. |
|---------------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|---|--|

| | | | | |
|-----------------------------------|-----|-----|----|--|
| Lieut.-Colonel John Williams | ... | £20 | 0 | Member of Company for life. |
| Lieut.-Colonel James Seamer | ... | 20 | 0 | " " " |
| Lieut.-Colonel Paul Ferris | ... | 10 | 10 | 23rd December, 1734, Member of Company for life. |
| Lieut.-Colonel Peregrine Phillips | ... | 12 | 0 | " " " |
| Major Henry Tame | ... | 10 | 0 | " " " |
| Major John Sedley | ... | 10 | 0 | " " " |
| Major Samuel Saunders | ... | 10 | 0 | 19th March, 1735, Member of Company for life. |
| Major B. Osgood | ... | 10 | 0 | " " " |
| Mr. John Hawkins (gunsmith) | ... | 20 | 0 | 12th May, 1735, Hon. Member of Court. |
| Major Joseph Lambe | ... | 10 | 0 | 12th May, 1735, Member of Company. |
| Mr. William Dobinson | ... | 20 | 0 | 21st July, 1735, Hon. Member of Court. |

On the 21st of July Captain Mason was appointed Engineer for the next march; and it was ordered that, for the future, members who wore scarlet on any of the three grand marches might carry either fusils or half-pikes, as they might prefer.

The new Armoury having been completed, the Court, on the 31st of July, resolved to let it for the year to a Sutler during the time of mustering the six regiments of Trained Bands, who might sell beer, ale, and all other liquors below stairs, but suffer no beer drinkers to sit upstairs. Two bids of eight guineas were made for it, and it was given to Captain Ratty. The Clerk thereupon applied for some compensation, as it was his perquisite to have the use of the Armoury for sutling during musters.

The Beadle was ordered to hoist the flag on the Armoury on all proper and public occasions, and therefore asked for some addition to his salary for this "extraordinary service."

Another Military work was published during the year by a member of the Company, entitled "A Complete System of MILITARY DISCIPLINE, as it is now used in the British Foot; with explanations. Being a-few Military Flowers collected out of The Artillery Garden of London. By John Gittins, a member thereof, and a Captain in the Blue Regiment."

1736.—The Accounts of the Company for the year 1734 were

audited on the 2nd of February, and for the first time for many years the Company found they were out of debt, and had a sum of £99 11s. 7½d. to their credit, which was still further increased the following year. It was then ordered that, for the future, the accounts should be made up each year to Christmas, and audited within six weeks.

An application was made to allow the Armoury to be used on the 1st of March, being the Queen's birthday, by such members as wished to have an entertainment at their own expense, and to drink a glass of wine in honour of the day.

On the 22nd of April the Court voted £50 to Mr. Stibbs, and the like sum to John Blackwell, the Clerk, for their trouble in looking after the New Armoury; and £10 to the Beadle for summoning the Trustees for meetings on the subject of the buildings; and £27 1s. 10d. to Mr. Harris, Jun.

The persons who rented the Burying-ground complained that the corner of the wall, belonging to the Company, where the old Armoury stood, was broken down, and required to be repaired.

At a Court on the 1st of June panels were ordered to be put up in the Great Room upstairs, with the names of the subscribers to the Armoury House in letters of gold.

In July an arrangement appears to have been made with the Corporation for the Watch House, at a rent of 11s. 8d. per annum.

Captain Mason was allowed one guinea for providing powder and firing the great guns to salute the officers of the Trained Bands on entering the Ground on the six days of muster.

At a Court, on the 17th of July, the Trustees having ordered the panels, applied for instructions as to how the names should be put up; the following regulations were therefore made :—

1. His Majesty King George I., in one panel.
2. The Honourable His Majesty's Commissioners of Lieutenancy, in the next panel.
3. The Aldermen of the City of London, in the next.
4. The Honorary Court of Assistants.
5. The Elective Court, as it stood in the year 1734.
6. The Members of the Company, according to their seniority, who had subscribed and paid £5, or more, towards the said Company.

In 1803 they had been removed or painted over, and some of them were fixed to the sides of the little staircase leading from the sutling-room to the orchestra and roof.*

In order to prevent confusion when the Trained Bands mustered for the first time in the new Armoury, the following orders and regulations were agreed to:—

“That it is the opinion of this Court that the new Armoury was built to and for the use of the several Members of the Honourable Artillery Company, and for the muster of the Trained Bands, and for the accommodation of the Officers of the said Bands, whenever they shall be ordered by the Commissioners of His Majesty’s Lieutenancy for the performance of any duty or service.

That the table next the window, on the right hand going in, be for the use of the Commission Officers for the day on which they respectively march.

That the table on the right hand, at the back of the room, be for the use of the Sergeants of the several regiments as they respectively march.

That the table on the left hand, next the window, be for the use of the Members of this Company, being spectators, on any of the days the regiments respectively muster; regard always to be had to such as are Subscribers.

That the table on the left hand, at the back of the room, going in, be for the use of any body of Volunteers who do march in the respective regiments.

That the room on the right hand, at the top of the stairs, be for the use of any body of Grenadiers, if any such march with any of the regiments.

That whenever any Gentlemen of the Court of Lieutenancy please to come, they be admitted into the room at their pleasure, and be seated at the Officers’ table.

That no person, on any pretence whatsoever, do presume to bring into the said Great Room any person or persons not being Members of the said Company, without leave of the Field Officers for the day had first been obtained.

* Highmore, p. 203.

That the Beadle, or his Deputy, do attend at the door to let in the several Members that shall desire to come in; and that the said Beadle or his Deputy be supported by a good body of Sentinels, to withstand any person or persons who shall forcibly endeavour to break any of these orders.

That if any person or persons shall stir up or raise any riot, tumult, or disturbance in the said room, being members or not, shall be by the said Field Officers ordered to be turned out of the room.

That a copy of these Orders be fairly wrote, and hung up near the door of the said Great Room.

That no malt liquors be permitted to be sold or brought into any part of the Armoury.

That the Clerk have the liberty to sell wine in the said Armoury, and all other liquors (malt liquor excepted), on the six Muster days only, and then to discontinue selling, and to clear the said Armoury. This order to continue for one year.

That if any Member of this Company have a desire to erect a shed or tent for the selling any sort of liquors on the six days of muster only (wine excepted), may make application to the Court of Assistants for leave for their so doing, and that it be on the west side of the Ground."

Permission was given to Mr. Merry to erect a booth or tent against the west wall, not exceeding about forty feet long and thirty feet deep, to sell beer, ale, and other liquors, but not wine, during the six days of muster only, and to clear all away immediately after, and pay 3s. as an acknowledgment to the Company.

The annual march to Balmes, for some reason which is not explained, was postponed, a notice being put in the newspapers stating that the Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company had, "for special reasons," ordered the march to Balmes, which was to have taken place on Monday, the 2nd of August, to be postponed to a future day. It afterwards took place on Monday, the 30th of August.

On the 4th of November, Major Joseph Lambe, Major B. Osgood, and Captain W. Martin complained to the Court that they were being tried for a pretended assault on a man who

attempted to drive an empty chaise with a pair of horses through the ranks of the Company in Bishopsgate Street, on the 29th of June, when they were going to perform an exercise after paying their respects to the Lord Mayor. The Court ordered the case to be defended at the expense of the Company, and an application to be made to the Court of King's Bench to enlarge the rule.

A lease of forty feet of the Ground on the west side, next adjoining the Burial Ground, to a depth of forty feet, was granted to Hannah Thompson, on the 4th of November, at one shilling per foot per annum, from Christmas, on which to build two dwelling-houses.

1737.—On the 23rd of March, the Trustees appointed to build the New Armoury reported that the building was finished, that part of the furniture was made, and all had been paid for with the exception of setting the names on the panels, the total sum being

| | | | | | |
|---------------|-----|-----|--------|----|----|
| Cash received | ... | ... | £1,691 | 0 | 6 |
| „ paid | ... | ... | 1,689 | 11 | 1½ |
| | | | <hr/> | | |
| Balance | ... | ... | £1 | 9 | 4½ |
| | | | <hr/> | | |

The Trustees recommended that the rooms remaining unfurnished should have tables and benches, and that application should be made to subscribers to pay up what they had promised. The Watch House was ordered to be taken down at Lady-day, and the pavement made good (according to the agreement with the Committee on City Lands) in Bunhill Row, commonly called Thieving Lane, from the south end to the end of Mr. Freedmore's garden, amounting to ninety feet.

At the Court on the 23rd of March, Mr. Robert Reynolds, a bricklayer, was granted thirty feet of ground on the west side next to the forty feet granted to H. Thompson.

The costs incurred in defending the three officers from the charge of assault on the 29th of June in the previous year, amounting to £31 10s., were ordered to be paid, but a Committee was at the same time appointed to report on the case.

They presented their report on the 20th of April, stating that they considered the case was only taken up by the Company on account of their believing the defendants to be innocent. Three Counsel were employed, and the case came before the Court of King's Bench on the 16th of November, and was tried before the said Court at the Guildhall on the 25th of February, when all the defendants were found guilty. The Attorney had declined any assistance from the Clerk, and neglected to acquaint them with the material occurrences after the proceedings of the 16th of November; nor did he communicate with the Court, or take their instructions, which if it had been done, proper measures would probably have been taken to arrange matters without a trial; and that on the whole the Company had suffered sufficient reproach for concerning themselves about the defendants, who appeared to be guilty. The Committee thought that the Company could not, with regard either to their circumstances or honour have anything more to do with the case, although the defendants still insisted on their innocence, but if they were not guilty, it was incumbent on them to prove it at the trial for their own sakes as well as for the Company. The total costs, amounting to £66 13s. 11d., were ordered to be paid, at a Court held on the 12th of July, 1739.

In May an order was issued that, for the future, half the pioneers were to march in front on General Marches with the Captain, but no drummers, and the other half in the rear with the Lieutenant.

On the 20th of July, Mr. John Merry was granted the same amount of ground on the same terms as the previous year, in order to provide refreshments during the time that the Trained Bands were out for training; but no skittles were to be played. A similar permission was granted to Mr. Ladyman—only two being allowed, and the Clerk having the use of the Armoury.

On the 7th of October, Ensign Henry Wardell presented a painting of the Arms of the Company, for which a frame was ordered to be made similar to the one at the upper end of the Great Room, by William Harris: the cost amounted to £7, and the following March it was ordered to be fixed at the east end of the Great Room.

1738.—A Committee having been appointed to assemble and examine the state of the Company's Arms, their report was read at a Court held on the 24th of February. They stated that they had taken an inventory of the arms and ammunition, &c., belonging to the Company, on the 17th of November, and found as follows :—

1. An entire suit of Horse Armour.
2. A Back, Breast, and blue Headpiece of Foot Armour.
3. Ditto Headpiece of ditto.
4. A Breast and Headpiece of ditto.
5. Ditto.
6. Ditto.
7. Ditto.
8. Ditto.
9. Ditto.
10. A Breast and Face in one piece.
11. Pieces of a Suit of Indian Armour.
12. A Hand and Gauntlet.
13. A Face Piece.
All the aforementioned want painting except the Headpiece No. 2.
14. Nine Fieldpieces in good order, and one damaged.
15. One Mortarpiece and Carriage.
16. One Tilting Staff and Lance.
17. Seventeen Half-Pikes and one Quarter-Pike.
18. Five Quarter Pikes with Rests.
19. An old Leading Staff.
20. Two old Halberds and one Partisan.
21. Two Halberds, two Partisans, and one Leading Staff, all in good order.
22. Six sheets of Colours.
23. Fifty-four Firelocks, fifty-five Bayonets, and eighteen Belts.
24. Three Swords and Belts.
25. Four Drums.
26. The Present of Mr. Black Wardell, one of the Executors of Captain John Bassindine, deceased, consisting of one Picture, two Models, and two Lions.

The Committee recommended that the above pieces of armour should be set up as ornaments, after such as required had been painted and repaired.

On the 11th of April, the herbage was let to Sir J. Eyles, he undertaking to keep the iron gates in repair and to paint them

once in two years, and to keep the raised portion of ground before the Armoury in repair, which was frequently much broken up by the sheep and cattle: he was also granted a lease of 350 feet of the west side of the Ground for twenty-one years.

Panels were ordered to be made for the east end of the Great Room, similar to those at the west end.

The Field Officers of the Trained Bands agreed that the Officers of their several regiments should be privately exercised in the Armoury on the following days, in accordance with the resolution of the General Committee of the Court of Assistants on the 20th of June, viz.:

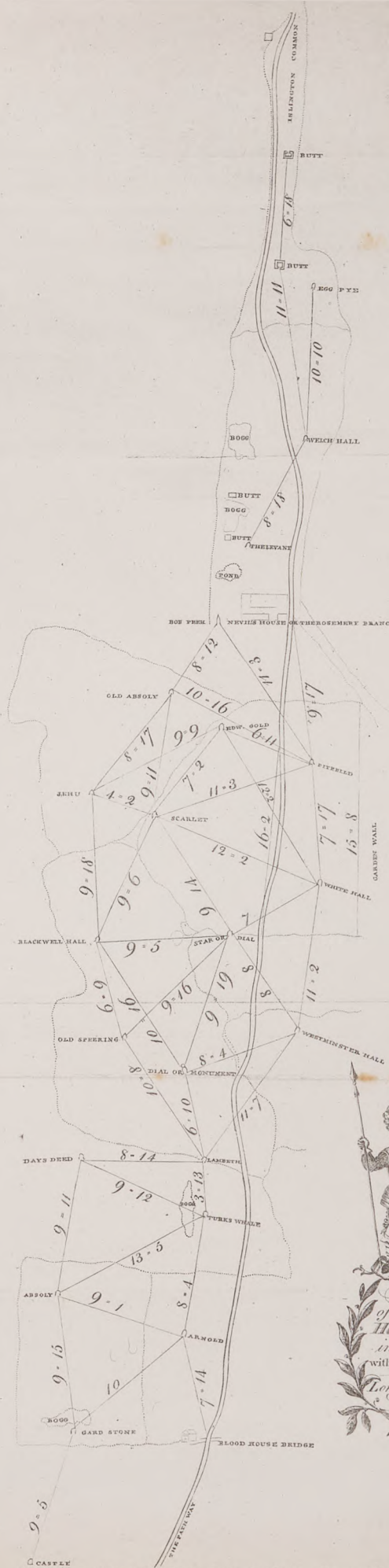
| | | | | |
|---------------------------------|---|------------|------|-----------|
| The White Regiment on Thursday, | | | | 13th July |
| „ Red | „ | Friday, | 14th | „ |
| „ Blue | „ | Monday, | 17th | „ |
| „ Green | „ | Wednesday, | 19th | „ |
| „ Yellow | „ | Thursday, | 20th | „ |
| „ Orange | „ | Friday, | 21st | „ |

One guinea and a half was allowed for the powder for firing eleven guns to salute the Officers of the Trained Bands on their six days of muster, each charge consisting of 4 ozs. of powder.

The same arrangements as usual were made for the Sutlers, and a lock and two keys were ordered for the door to the balcony; one for the use of each Field Officer on the day of their respective musters.

A letter was received from the Society of Finsbury Archers, in October, requesting permission to erect two shooting butts, at a range of fifty yards, at the north end of the Ground, which would be gratefully acknowledged by them as a favour; and their request was referred to the General Committee.

The Company's marks for shooting with the long-bow and cross-bow in the fields near Finsbury were still standing. They extended from the Castle at Moorgate to Islington Common, on each side of a public pathway leading by the Rosemary Branch; along the side of which path twenty-seven stones, or butts, were then standing, with the distances carved upon them,



A PLAN
 of all the MARKS belonging to the
 Hox²² ARTILLERY COMPANY,
 in the Fields near Finsbury,
 with the true Distance as they stood Anno 1737.
 for the use of
 Long Bows, Cross Bows, Hand Guns,
 and ARTILLERY.

X3. the Figures between the Stones, denote the Number of Scores & Yards they are distant from each other.

for the use of the Company, as the accompanying map will show.*

On the 18th of October, Captain-Lieutenant Lewis Davis paid £20 towards the Armoury, and was admitted an Honorary Member of Court.

1739.—At a Court on the 8th of February, it was ordered that at least 23 feet 10 inches of the Ground mentioned in the Committee Minutes of the 14th of December, should be reserved for a gateway, with dwarf walls and palisade; and that for the future none of the Exercises for Grand Marches were to be printed without the previous order of the General Committee.

It was reported, at the same Court, that the Clerk had taken upon himself to distribute the £78 given by the Lieutenancy to Officers of the Militia who seldom attended the marches, which the Court regretted, and decided to take steps to see it properly divided for the future.

The Court of Lieutenancy were requested to order all the Marshals of the City Militia to march in buff, at their three grand marches: this is the first occasion on which the Trained Bands were styled Militia.

In May the old arms and bayonets were ordered to be set up as ornaments in the Great Room.

On the 17th of May the Court ordered that no person should be given a certificate of membership, by the Clerk, until he had been admitted by the Court of Assistants.

At the same Court it was reported that the following gentlemen, who had paid £20 each towards the New Armoury, had been admitted Honorary Members of the Court, in accordance with the order of the Court of the 18th of February, 1729, and their election was confirmed at the General Court on the 24th of May:—

Lieutenant-Colonel John Williams.

Lieutenant-Colonel James Seymour.

* This map is a facsimile (reduced) from one given by Highmore. A somewhat similar one is in the "Aim for Finsbury Archers," in the Guildhall Library, and another in a collection of London prints and maps in the Bodleian, at Oxford, and the Print Room, British Museum.

Captain Thomas Ruty.
Captain John Hawkins.
Mr. William Dobinson.
Captain-Lieutenant L. Davis.

At the Court on the 17th of May, the lease granted to H. Thompson was altered by the word "three," instead of "two," houses being inserted; and seventy-two feet of ground next to hers was granted to Mr. S. Barrett, for building dwelling-houses, the leases being made in March the following year.

The sum of £78, given annually by the Lieutenancy to the Company for the Militia Officers, was ordered to be divided as follows for the year 1737: £26 for each Grand March, viz., 3s. 4d. for each Officer represented by a substitute, and the remainder in equal parts amongst those present in person.

The General Committee met at the Armoury House on every General day, or public lead, at three o'clock in the afternoon, and at ten o'clock in the morning on the day for each of the three Grand Marches; their business being to examine the state of the Company's affairs, and to consider and determine all matters brought before it, which were proposed and seconded by any member of the Court. Five were to form a quorum, but they could not authorise more than £2 being expended.

On the 30th of May the Officers were again elected for the three marches during the year, the General Committee having the power at any time to change the Officers for any march if they thought fit.

The first record on the Minutes of the Court made of the admission of members, occurs on the 17th of May, when Mr. James Little, and, on the 12th of July, Mr. William Williams, —who were presented to the General Committee of Assistants; the latter by Captain King and Captain Luck, and were admitted members.

A vote of thanks was given to Captain Price for procuring, as a present to the Company, sixteen new cohorns, ten new great guns (with their carriages painted), twelve gabions, and thirty-seven hurdles.

On the 5th of November, the Armoury House was illu-

minated, and the great guns fired, in commemoration of the King's Accession.

1740.—On the 20th of March the Court approved of the agreement of the General Committee of the 12th of November, to allow Mr. Mitchell to carry his south wall seven inches further than the thirty-two feet already allotted to him, on the condition that he should allow the person who built next to him to have part of the said wall on paying him for it, according to the Act of Parliament.

On the 21st of May, trees were ordered to be planted behind the Armoury; and eighteen feet of the west side was let to Captain Long, for building a dwelling-house upon.

It was ordered that for the future no person should be chosen to any chargeable office in the Company, without his consent, until he had been a member for more than twelve months, unless he was a Field Officer, or Captain in the Militia.

No vintner was to be admitted a member until it had been agreed upon at two successive Courts.

The election of the Clerk and Beadle at the next General Court was ordered to be by ballot, in order to preserve a good understanding between the members of the Company.

On the 21st of May, the election of two Sergeants of the Ground, to instruct the members, and perform sergeants' duties at every lead, was ordered to be recommended to the General Court, and that an allowance of £4 each should be paid to them for performing those duties during the season, when they were to attend at the Armoury every Tuesday at three o'clock.

The duties and allowances of the Clerk, Armourer, and Beadle were laid down by a Court of Assistants, held on the 21st of May, as follows:—

“ THE CLERK.

1. The Clerk to take care of all the books and writings belonging to the Company.
2. To attend at all Courts and Committees.
3. To collect the Rents of the Tenants, and Quarterage of the Members.

4. To attend at all Leads in the Ground, and call off the Lieutenants and Ensigns on Private Leads.

5. To take and keep an account of what Members appear at the Exercises on every Tuesday.

6. To make and deliver to the Armourer and Beadle an inventory of all the arms, furniture, and stores committed to their charge respectively, and to keep copies thereof in a book for that purpose.

7. To do such other business as the Court or General Committee of Assistants shall from time to time order or appoint.

8. To give such security for his fidelity as the Court of Assistants shall approve of.

That the allowances to him for the ensuing year be as follows: viz., £25 for salary; one shilling in the pound for rents collected by him; two shillings in the pound for quarterage by him collected of the Members; one shilling of every Member at his admission; and one shilling for entering the translation of every Sergeant from one Commander to another.

THE ARMOURER.

1. To take care of, keep clean, and repair, all the Company's arms, artillery, and armour.

2. To take care of the hurdles, gabions, canvas, ropes, stakes, pioneers' accoutrements, and such other military stores as are not appointed to be under the care of the Beadle.

3. To be present at delivering them out, and receiving them back, at all the Company's exercises.

That his allowance be £12 per annum.

THE BEADLE.

1. To summon all Courts and Committees.

2. To attend at the door with his staff at all their meetings.

3. To summon all the Members every Public Lead, and at all such other times as the Court or General Committee of Assistants shall appoint.

4. To make up all the Company's cartridges.

5. To give notice to the Members of their Leads.

6. To deliver the pouches at the Leads.
 7. To appear and walk with his staff in the Ground between the Officers and spectators when the Company is drawn up on the Lines, in order to prevent interruptions.
 8. To look after, keep clean, and air at least once a week, both winter and summer, the Armoury and furniture.
 9. To take into his charge the silver leading staves, sheets of colours, pouches and powder, and the Beadle's silver-headed staff.
 10. To call off the Lieutenants and Ensigns, in the absence of the Clerk, on Private Leads.
 11. To assist the Armourer in delivering out and receiving back such of the Company's military stores as shall be used in their exercises.
 12. To hoist the Flag on the Armoury on the eve of the King's Birth, Accession, and Coronation, the Restoration, the 1st of August, the 4th and 5th of November, each of the three Grand Marches of the Artillery Company, and at the Muster of every Regiment of Trained Bands.
 13. To do such other business as shall from time to time be appointed by the Court or General Committee of Assistants.
- That his allowance be £20 per annum, sixpence of every Member at his admission, and sixpence for entering the translation of every Sergeant from one Commander to another."

At the General Court on the 3rd of June, Mr. Ebenezer Blackwell paid £20 towards the Armoury House, on condition of being made an Honorary Member of the Court.

On the 21st of October, Mr. Mitchell having died, the materials for his house were bought by Mr. Samuel Barrett, and the lease was transferred to him.

On the 5th of December, it was ordered that the General Committee should have the power to admit any person a Member who had been duly recommended at the previous meeting of the Committee; and, on the 28th of January, it was further ordered that the entrance-money of candidates should be deposited with the Clerk before the election, and to be returned to them if not elected.

1741.—A lease of eighteen feet of ground to Captain Richard Long, for building a dwelling-house on the west side, was ordered to be executed, on the 28th of January.

The Court ordered, on the 24th of March, that all members who did not pay their subscriptions before the 1st of May should be excluded from the Company.

At the same Court, iron gates were ordered to be put up on the west side, with the Company's arms in copper. The work was undertaken by Mr. Hannum at 4d. per lb., exclusive of arms and locks, the bars being one inch square, and to be finished by the 1st of May.

At a Court on the 25th of March, the Company was ordered to parade the following day, to escort the new Lord Mayor from the Guildhall to Tower Hill and back, where he was going to be sworn, in place of the Lord Mayor who had lately died, it being during the vacation, so that the Courts at Westminster were not sitting. The Company having a right to wait on the Lord Mayor as his body-guard to the very steps of the stage on which he was to be sworn on Tower Hill, his Lordship was desired to insist on this right.

On the 8th of April, three tenders were received for building two stone piers for the iron gates, at £39, £35, and £33 respectively. That of Mr. C. Horsnail, for £33, was accepted, the contract being as follows: Two Portland stone piers, with proper bases and caps, with two necks, and balls with flames (grenades), the dimensions of each pier being 13 feet 10 inches high, 2 feet 2 inches square; 16 feet 8 inches of Portland stone steps between the gates or piers, 2 feet 2 inches wide and 7 inches thick; two small stones at the sides of the small gates in the brickwork on the top of the gates; the balls to be 1 foot 9 inches in diameter: all in sound Portland stone,—piers, bases and caps, solid.

The trees behind the Armoury being dead were ordered to be removed, the middle gravelled, and a bank to be made round the walls.

The ground still remaining unlet was to be advertised in the *Daily Advertiser*, on Tuesdays and Thursdays, for three weeks.

At the General Court, on the 28th of May, the Court of

Assistants was instructed to revise the old orders, and to leave out the obsolete rules, to insert new ones, and to lay them before the next General Court; but at the General Court in 1742 it was again deferred to the following year.

The Committee who were superintending the new iron gates were directed to look after the new storehouses, and stabling also.

On the 16th of July, twenty-one guns were ordered to be fired, to salute each of the six regiments of the Trained Bands when they entered the Ground, under the direction of the Engineer.

At a Court on the 17th of December, it was proposed that the Court of Aldermen and Sheriffs should be summoned to the Court of Assistants.

1742.—On the 3rd of February, a lease was granted to Mr. Samuel Barrett for thirty-six feet of the west side, on which to build two houses; and Mr. William Norman was also granted thirty-six feet for the same purpose; and the Trustees appointed on the 19th of September, 1734, were requested to sign the said leases.

On the 23rd of March, the remainder of the west side of the Ground still remaining unlet, amounting to about 158 feet, was let to Mr. Barrett and Mr. Norman in equal proportions, for the yearly rent of £7 10s. from Midsummer following for one half, and from Michaelmas for the other half, and they were allowed one year for building.

The lease to Sir J. Eyles, for the herbage and 350 feet of ground, was renewed.

Mr. Barrett was allowed £12 towards paving and posting the passage leading to the iron gates on the west side of the Ground.

On the 13th of April, four Members of the Court were ordered to be summoned in turn (according to ancient custom) on each Public Lead, and two on each Private Lead, commencing by seniority.

The three Captains for the Grand Marches were chosen for the year on the 5th of May.

On the 14th of September it was ordered that the Clerk should be allowed interest at five per cent. per annum for money advanced to the Company; and the Ground was ordered to be closed for Public Leads after the 21st of September.

In October fur caps were purchased for the pioneers.

1743.—At a Court on the 11th of May, it was ordered that the two Ensigns of the Ground should march on the three Grand Marches for the ensuing year; the senior Ensign on the right on the Lord Mayor's visit, and the junior on the right on the 1st of August, and on the Lord Mayor's day.

On the 13th of July it was ordered that there should be sixteen pioneers for the General Marches, twelve to march before the Grenadiers, and four in rear of the whole Company; all of them, however, being under the command of the chief officer for the day.

1744.—At a Court on the 20th of February it was resolved that the Company should pay their respects to His Majesty on the present intended invasion; and the following Address was unanimously agreed to:—

“TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

“The Humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company of the City of London;

“Most Gracious Sovereign,

“When we reflect on the Wisdom, Equity, and Mildness of your Majesty's Government, and the known Constancy, Firmness, and Resolution, of Your Royal Mind, we could scarce have thought that any Persons either could desire or would Dare to give you any Domestic Disturbance.

“But since the Eldest Son of the Pretender to your Majesty's Crown is arrived in France, and since they who have long aimed at Universal Monarchy, forgetfull of the late Glorious Victory obtained in the Fields of Dettingen by the Bravery of your Majesty's Troops Animated by your Royal Presence and Example, have now the Insolence to make preparations to

invade this Kingdom, in Concert with Disaffected Persons here, wicked and Senceless enough to assist the Enemies of their Country, of their Religion, and of their Lawfull Sovereign :

“ We humbly beg leave with the rest of your Faithfull subjects, to approach your Throne, and, from the highest Sentiments of Duty and Gratitude, to express our just Detestation of so daring and desperate an attempt, and to assure Your Majesty That we are fully determined to sacrifice our lives in the cause of Liberty, in the Defence of your Majesty’s Sacred Person, Crown, and Dignity, and in Support of the Protestant Succession in your Royal Line.”

It was agreed that all members should appear in coloured coats, plain hats, with a cockade, swords, and white stockings; and that they should go to St. James’s in coaches at their own expense.

On the 16th of March the Court—being informed that Mr. Norman had not built within the period fixed and agreed upon, and that he was not to be found—decided to grant a lease of one-fourth part of the ground still unbuilt, on which to erect a dwelling-house.

At a Court, on the 20th of April, it was agreed to have a Colts’ Feast before the next election.

The march, which had been fixed for the Company to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, on the 11th of June (the anniversary of the King’s Accession), was postponed—as his Lordship refused to receive them according to ancient custom.

On Friday, the 15th of June, the Company marched through the City, and afterwards performed an exercise in the Artillery Ground, to celebrate the anniversary of His Majesty being proclaimed King of Great Britain. The officers were ordered to provide the supper in the evening in as frugal a manner as possible; but each member was to be allowed a pint of wine. It was also agreed that the expenses of the meetings of the Court of Assistants should not exceed twenty shillings, or those of the General Committee ten shillings; and that no breakfast should be provided on any of the three Grand Marches—except for the musicians and servants, which was to be done by the

Clerk in as frugal a manner as possible ; and that not more than eight bottles of wine should be allowed for the Court of Assistants and Officers, or more than two for the musicians.

At a Court, on the 19th of July, it was ordered that the names of such members as had subscribed £5 and upwards should be put up on the panels at the west end of the General Court Room, similar to those already there ; and the names of those who had made any valuable present to the Company should be put up at the east end of the room, mentioning the objects given by them.

1745.—On the 22nd of February Mr. Samuel Barrett surrendered his claim to the sixty feet of ground he had taken, formerly belonging to William Norman, and it was let to Mr. Robert Alfrey.

The Colts' Feast was fixed for the 11th of June, but was afterwards changed to the 18th of June.

On the 6th of June, it was ordered that the names of members who had subscribed should be put up at the west end of the General Court Room, and those who were not members at the east end ; and that every gentleman who subscribed two guineas should have his name put up at that end of the room.

A complaint was made in July that a certain body of men were in the habit of marching whenever they pleased, in military order, with drums beating and armed with firelocks and other weapons of war, without any authority to do so ; a Committee was therefore chosen to inquire into the subject, and to draw up a remonstrance to be laid before the Lieutenancy on the subject.

At a Court on the 15th of August, it was ordered that on the day on which the six regiments of the City Trained Bands were to muster, eleven great guns were to be fired at the first health drunk by the senior officer of each regiment, commencing with the senior regiment.

On the 22nd of October, "a company of gentlemen," about fourteen in number, desired to be admitted members of the Company ; but on the condition that when they marched with the Company they might do so in one separate division and

choose their own flankers, and that they might wear blue coats "with other uniform military habit": their application was complied with, and they were duly admitted members. Permission was at the same time given for several gentlemen of great worth, exercising arms in Leathersellers' Hall, to use the Ground and Armoury to learn the use of arms.

An order was issued that no person should be entitled to file-money, or to be present at the supper after marches, unless they appeared in scarlet or buff.

On the 10th of December, the Court ordered that the twenty-one pieces of cannon, one mortar, and sixteen cohorns, belonging to the Company, all of which were mounted on carriages, should be sent to the Tower of London for security "until the present troubles are over," and all the small arms were also removed to a place of safety.

The sum of £20, which had been given by the Right Hon. Sir Richard Hoar, Lord Mayor, was ordered to be spent in providing a pair of iron gates in the great arch leading to the staircase, and Mr. William Alexander was directed to prepare a plan of it for the next Court.

1746.—On the 21st of January, the plan was approved of and they were ordered to be made.

On the 14th of March, it was ordered that no person should be allowed to exercise with the Company in battalia on the several days of leading, until he produced a certificate from one of the Adjutants that he was efficient.

The Royal Blue Fusiliers, who were members of the Company, were allowed to exercise with the Company as an entire division at the several public and private leads on Tuesdays, provided they found their own arms and powder, and placed themselves under the command of the Leader for that night.

In July, an order was issued stating that it was the duty of the Commandants for the day to see that the members were clean, and properly dressed and sized, and that those who did not appear properly dressed should not be allowed to parade; and care was to be taken that at the leadings proper words of command, according to the exercise then in use in the King's

Book, were to be made use of, and anything else necessary for the beauty and order of the exercise.

On the 13th of August, an estimate was ordered to be prepared of the cost of a new wing on the east side of the Armoury, for a kitchen of the same size as that on the west side of the building.

At the same Court, it was ordered that no person should be admitted a member as a Sergeant under five feet six inches, and that all under that height should be discharged.

The Armoury was illuminated on the night of the 9th of October, being the day fixed for a public thanksgiving for the glorious victory gained over the rebels at the battle of Culloden.

1747.—At the first Court held after the General Court, on the 21st of May, it was ordered that for the future the Lieutenants and Ensigns of the Ground should be styled "Lieutenant-General" and "Major-General" respectively.

On the 28th of July, the Flankers were ordered to march without crosslets, and the Sergeants and Marshals (who did not wait on their Commanders) were to march with a firelock, bayonet and pouch, in buff or blue, and without swords, according to ancient custom.

The Clerk was directed to insure the Armoury in the Hand-in-Hand Office for £1,600, in November, and a convenient place was ordered to be made in the storehouse in which to keep the gunpowder, and none was to be kept in the Armoury for the future.

1748.—Five of the Captains were appointed to examine into the qualifications of those whose turn it was to lead, and if they were not considered capable of conducting the exercise, then one of the above-named Captains was to take command, or some other qualified person.

Every member was to be tested by exercising a squad of men at least a month before his turn to lead.

The first forty-eight members under arms on public leads, and twenty-four on private leads, were to be the only ones

entitled to the entertainment provided afterwards, the Court of Assistants excepted.

The exercises were continued on Tuesday nights during the winter after the Ground was closed for private leads, and any member might be Leader on giving a week's notice to the Beadle: the first member who appeared to be the Leader for the night, or any one he should depute. The hours of exercise were to be from five to eight.

On the 28th of April, Captain William Hows offered to present the Company with a clock, with two dials, of the value of £20, which offer was accepted.

The Grenadiers were ordered always to be summoned by the title of the "Hanover Grenadiers of the Artillery Company."

At a Court on the 14th of June, one of the two Adjutants having resigned, it was decided that one Adjutant was sufficient with the assistance of a Sergeant-Major; for which latter place Mr. Isaac Escande was chosen.

On the 5th of July, it was ordered that, in conformity with the orders of the Court, confirmed in 1658 and 1659, a Poor-box should be put up in the Committee Room. The money which should be put in to be distributed by the Court at their discretion to such persons as they should think proper; members or their widows having the first claim. Every member, on election, had to pay 1s. to the fund, and 2s. 6d. on being elected to the Court. Any member on duty who should curse or swear, or get drunk, or abuse any of his comrades, or refuse to obey an officer, and be convicted thereof before the Court of Assistants or General Committee, had to pay into the box 1s.; if an officer, 2s.; or if a member of the Court, 2s. 6d.

In July, an order was issued that all members who commanded on public leads should appear in proper regimentals, either in scarlet or blue, with his sash, crosslet, and sword.

In consideration of the many good offices that Major Carrington had done the Company, the Court, on the 19th of July, presented his son, the Rev. James Carrington, Rector of Clayworth, Northamptonshire, and Prebendary of Exeter, with the freedom of the Company, and appointed him their Chaplain.

1749.—At a Court held on the 21st of February, it was stated that it appeared from ancient books that there was a Charter of Incorporation granted to the Company in the reign of Henry VIII., and also that Letters Patent were granted by Kings James I. and Charles I., conferring on them certain privileges; but as none of these could be found, it was resolved to choose a Committee to search in the proper offices for the records of the above documents, in order to obtain exemplifications of the same.

Copies of the new Manual Exercise and Evolutions, which had been printed by order of the Court, were ordered to be given to all members.

The third battalion of Foot Guards at the Tower having applied, on the 19th of May, for permission to exercise in the Ground, were informed that the Company had no power to grant such permission.

1750.—A complaint was made, on the 19th of June, that Captain-Lieutenant J. Hunt had misbehaved himself, by drinking a toast "wishing discord to ye Artillery Company for ever"; upon which it was agreed that he should not be again summoned to the Court until he had apologised, which he afterwards did.

On the 12th of December, several members were expelled for having on the evening of the 18th of October, between the hours of seven and eight, broken open the east window and entered the Armoury, and then forced open the west door. On being sent for by the Court, they offered to make good the damage they had done, but refused to make any submission, insisting on their right as members to enter the building whenever they thought fit.

1751.—A list of the arms and accoutrements in the Sergeants' Room, made in January, shows that the arms consisted of firelocks and bayonets, spontoons, halberds, and partisans.

On the 30th of April, an estimate was submitted to the Court for making and fixing frames, with canvas over them painted and prepared for the artist to paint the trophies thereon, for ten guineas.

At a Court on the 21st of May, the General Committee was discontinued.

1752.—It was ordered by the Court, on the 5th of May, that all the Commissioned Officers of the Trained Bands who were in arrears of quarterage and had been summoned, but failed to attend, should have another summons, to show cause why their names should not be laid before the Lieutenancy, in order that they might be superseded for their contempt in not appearing; and, on the 19th of June, several of them were expelled.

A Colts' Feast, which was held almost every year, was appointed to take place on the 30th of November.

By the 24 George II., cap. 23, the calendar was altered to the new style, Wednesday, the 2nd of September, being called Thursday, the 14th of September—eleven days being thus omitted—and the year was ordered to commence from the 1st of January instead of the 25th of March, as it had hitherto been reckoned.

1753.—On the 14th of June, the three Generals were chosen for the next march, paying the same fees as usual (unless they had already served), viz., the General and Lieutenant-General £10 each, and the Major-General and three Captains £5 each. The Officers prepared the exercise, assisted by the Adjutant and Clerk.

It was customary for the Lord Mayor to allow the Company £30 for their three marches to attend him, viz., on the day of his being sworn at Westminster, at St. Paul's on the King's accession, and on the day they paid their respects to him; but unless they had previously served as Generals or Lieutenant-Generals, and paid the usual fee of £10, the Company usually declined to attend him: such cases were however very rare.

The Company escorted Alderman Benn, representing the Lord Mayor, on the 9th of November, from Blackfriars to the Guildhall, as was the ancient custom on Lord Mayor's day; the Right Hon. Sir E. Ironside, the Lord Mayor-elect, being so ill that he could not go by water or in the state coach, but had

to be carried to Westminster in a chair in order to be sworn, and was unable to be present at the entertainment at the Guildhall in the evening. His Lordship died on the 27th of the same month, and the Right Hon. Thomas Rawlinson was chosen to succeed him. The Company was accordingly ordered to attend him on the day of his being sworn—the 4th of December—on Tower Hill, and to appear on that day in the Artillery Ground completely armed, where the muster-books would be opened at nine o'clock in the morning and closed at half-past ten, after which no person would be allowed to fall in. The Cripplegate Grenadiers also took part in the procession, and marched as Fusiliers. The Company marched to the Guildhall, where the Field Officers drew their swords, and received the Lord Mayor. The procession started at twelve, the Pioneers leading the way, then the Hanover Grenadiers and the remainder of the Company, to Tower Hill, where the two regiments of the Tower Hamlets lined the way to the steps of the booth in which the Lord Mayor was to be sworn, where the Field Officers halted, remaining on the right and left with their swords drawn during the ceremony, the Company marching off to the right until it was over. His Lordship was received by Lord Cornwallis, and the Recorder made a speech and presented the King's writ, which was read, and then the Lord Mayor was sworn; after which the Recorder, in the name of the Lord Mayor, invited the Constable of the Tower and the gentlemen present with him to dine with his Lordship at the Mansion House.

1754.—On the 20th of February, some new regulations for the Grenadiers were drawn up, in order to reduce the expense, the number being fixed at thirty-six, none of whom were to be under five feet six inches, and each man was to be allowed 3s. file-money instead of any entertainment, and the Fusiliers 2s. 6d. each. The Engineers were ordered for the future to march in front of the Pioneers, instead of in the centre of the Company near the colours.

It was agreed that the Company should only have one Drum-beater, and that he should be styled Drum-Major, and be paid

£8 a year, out of which he was to provide the usual number of drumbeaters.

On the 21st of May, it was ordered that the Major-Generals should always be mounted—except on the Balmes march, when it was left to their discretion.

The General Court, on the 29th of May, ordered that for the future every member of the Court of Assistants who did not undertake to provide the entertainment at their respective leads should pay to the Clerk, to be applied to that purpose, the following sums:—

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|----|----|---|
| Member of Court | £2 | 2 | 0 |
| Captain | 1 | 11 | 6 |
| Subaltern and Gentlemen Members | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| Sergeants | 0 | 10 | 0 |

No entertainment of less value to be accepted.

The Committee appointed on the 21st of February, 1748, to search for the Charter and Warrants relating to the Company, presented their report on the 9th of August; stating that they had searched the documents in the Rolls Chapel, with the assistance of the Clerk there, and found enrolments of Letters Patents from James I. and King Charles I. similar to those published by Blackwell in his "Military Discipline," but could not find any trace of a charter.

They were informed that previous to the reign of Henry VIII., and for many years after, the Charters and Letters Patent were not regularly enrolled, nor were any indices made to them, but were kept in chests and cases without any order whatever, so that they could not be examined without great labour and expense.

1755.—On the 22nd of October, it was agreed that, for the future, as soon as there were five "Colts" on the Court of Assistants, they should make a feast; and that if there were more than six, the juniors should be left for the ensuing feast; and that a bill of fare should be presented to the Court by them.

The Court of Lieutenancy wrote to the Company on the 11th of December, requesting that steps might be taken to keep the

public out of the Artillery Ground on the days appointed for the exercise of the Militia. The Court accordingly ordered the east and west gates to be locked on such days, and the south gate to be left open only until the Militia had marched in and a guard told off to prevent any persons entering who had no right there, and that blinds were to be put up before the gates.

1756.—The Court, considering that the state of public affairs rendered it highly expedient that the members should have more frequent opportunities of perfecting themselves in military exercises, ordered that the Armoury should be open for that purpose every day, except Sundays, at five o'clock; but at the end of February it was changed to Tuesdays and Fridays only, sufficient numbers not having attended.

Five guineas were voted to the widow of Benjamin Bennett, who was accidentally shot in the Artillery Ground on the 12th of August.

At a Court held on the 19th of October, it was resolved that, considering the great expense the Company had been put to by several Aldermen and Sheriffs refusing to pay their several proportions towards the public marches of the Company, it was necessary to retrench the expenses, and therefore agreed not to have wine at any future Court of Assistants, and that the breakfast at all future public marches should consist of rolls, butter and cheese, and that the wine should not exceed one dozen; the entertainment after the said public marches being roast beef, without any other provisions except the customary sauce, and the allowance of wine was not to exceed one pint for each member; and the file-money for the Grenadiers and Fusiliers was reduced to 1s. 6d. each.

1757.—On the 19th of July, the lease of the herbage to Mr. Davidson was proposed to be renewed for £50, so that it should expire at the same time as the lease for the houses, viz., Lady-day, 1780; and on the 23rd of February it was let to him for twenty-two years, at £40 per annum.

The Surgeon was ordered to attend the inquest on a man who lost his life on the 28th of July, by firing a cannon, to ascertain

whether his death was occasioned by the wadding, or any other cause that might be prevented for the future.

The use of the Armoury House was granted "to the Association of Antigallicans, at the Crown and Magpie, in Aldgate High Street," to entertain "the Hon. Lord Blakeney, a worthy member of this Company," on the 19th of September, it being his Lordship's birthday.

1758.—On the 30th of March, the Court, taking into consideration the great expense they were put to for gunpowder, by the frequent firing of the cannons, ordered that no more should be fired for a year, and that the salary of the Engineer was to be consequently discontinued.

At the same Court, the Ground was ordered to be opened for private leads on Tuesday, the 18th of April, and that no other exercise should be used than that practised by His Majesty's Foot Guards; but on the Chairman informing the Court that as many members were then unacquainted with what was known as the "Prussian Exercise," then ordered to be used, and would require a person skilled in it to instruct them, which would add to the expenses and debt of the Company, one of the members offered to pay the expenses of a Drill-master for the season, and for printing a sufficient number of copies of the Exercise to distribute amongst all the members. It was also recommended that those members whose turn it was to lead should carry on the Prussian Exercise in the form of a drill.

At a Court on the 31st of May, it was agreed to escort the Lord Mayor from St. Paul's to the Mansion House on the 22nd of June, as usual, it being the anniversary of His Majesty's accession.

The file-money of the Grenadiers was again increased to 2s.; and it was ordered that the cannons should only be fired at the Company's expense when any of the Chiefs of the Court appeared, viz., the President, Vice-President, or Treasurer.

On the 15th of June, it was agreed that Mr. F. Holman should finish painting the trophies in the Committee Room, according to the specimen already completed in one of the frames, and that he should have ten guineas for executing the same in five

weeks, but they were not reported finished until the 16th of October the following year; and they are now fixed in the Court Room.

On the 24th of October, it was ordered that it should be an instruction to the Major-General to provide beef, mutton, or pork, according to his discretion, with eight boiled plum-puddings, for the Lord Mayor's day.

1759.—At the General Court on the 5th of April, it was ordered that the Captain of the Grenadiers should continue to pay two guineas, and each of his Lieutenants one guinea, towards the expenses of the marches, and the file-money was increased from 2s. to 2s. 6d.

On the 15th of May, the Court gave leave to Mr. Ladd to make use of the Ground for testing a curious machine which he had invented to travel without horses, which he was unable to try in any field or public place without risk of its being injured by the crowd.

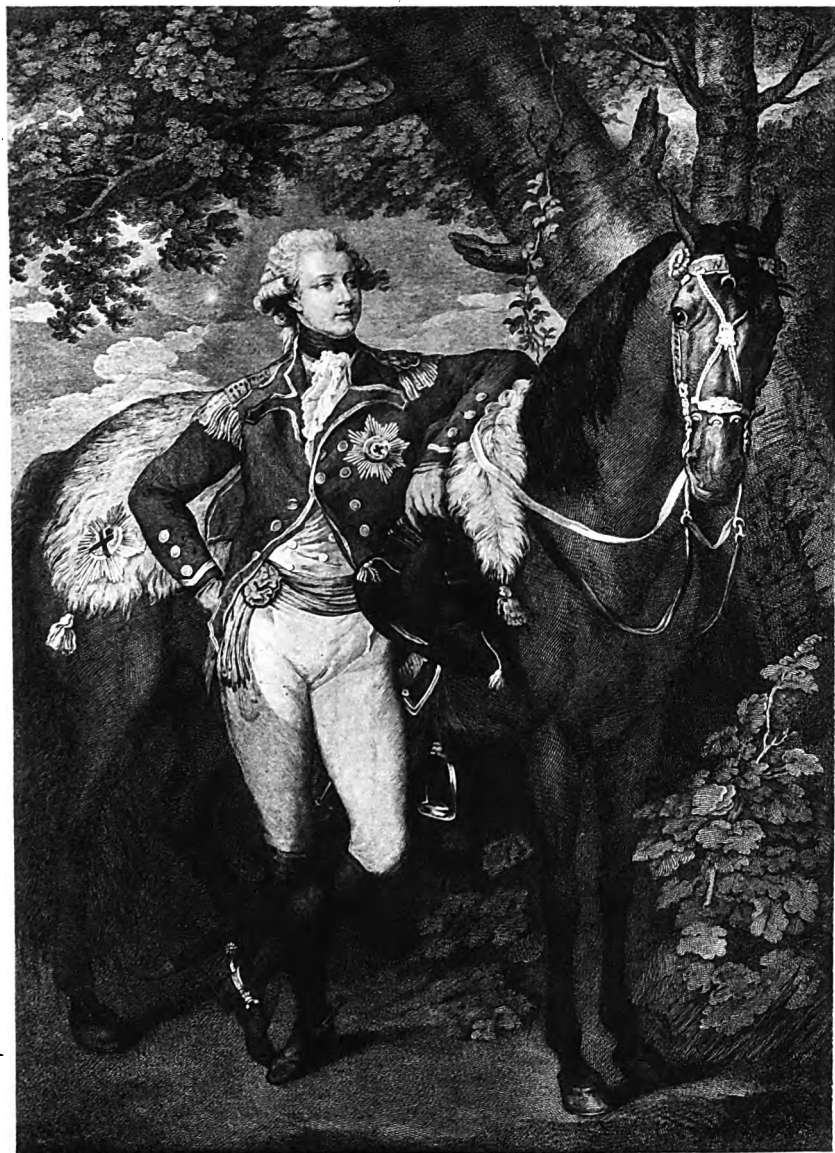
The Colts' Feast was fixed for the 4th of June, it being the day on which the Prince of Wales attained his majority.

On the 21st of August, it was moved that the old English exercise, as set forth by His Majesty's royal authority, should for the future be performed by the Company, notwithstanding their Order of the 30th of March, 1758, ordering the Prussian exercise to be practised, as it did not appear that the King had issued any order for abolishing the English exercise; but the consideration of the subject was postponed.

1760.—The Officers and Chiefs of the Company at this period consisted of the following numbers:—

1 President,
1 Vice-President,
1 Treasurer,
2 Generals,
2 Lieutenant-Generals,
2 Major-Generals,
24 Elected Assistants,

The Honorary Members of the
Court of Assistants, about
thirty in number (exclusive
of Lord Mayor and Alder-
men),
1 Chaplain, and
1 Surgeon.



T. Gainsborough, Pinx.

A. Canton, Sc.

George Augustus Frederick,
PRINCE OF WALES
Captain-General 1766-1830.

Officers and Servants of the Ground.

| | |
|-------------|----------------------------|
| 1 Engineer, | 2 Sergeants of the Ground, |
| 1 Clerk, | 2 Drumbeaters, and |
| 1 Armourer, | 1 Beadle. |

On the 15th of July, the Court granted the use of the Ground and Armoury to a corps called the British Volunteers, for exercise, at such times as it was not required by the Company.

On the 9th of September, Sir William Beauchamp Proctor applied to the Court for permission to muster four companies of the Eastern Regiment of Middlesex Militia, then being raised by him under the recent Acts of Parliament, in the Ground, on the 11th of September, as notices to that effect had already been posted on the church doors and elsewhere; the Court granted his request, on the condition of the men being without arms.

On the 25th of October, the King died suddenly at Kensington Palace.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY
OF BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS,FROM THE INCORPORATION OF THE COMPANY TO THE CLOSE OF THE
LAST CENTURY.

FROM 1638 TO 1798.

CONTENTS. — New England. — The Pilgrim Fathers. — City of Boston founded. — The Trained Bands. — The Military Company of Boston. — Charter of Incorporation, 1639. — Election of the First Officers. — Captain Robert Keayne. — His Character. — Major-General Sedgwick. — Major-General Sir J. Leverett. — The Militia. — “Timorous Persons” exempt from serving. — Title and Dress of Officers. — Will of Captain Keayne, 1653. — His Legacies to the Company. — Decline of the Company. — Number enrolled. — Rules and Orders, 1657. — Sir Edmund Andross. — Meetings suspended. — Revival of the Company, 1691. — Earliest Records of the Company, 1698. — Revised Rules and Orders, 1700. — Grants of Land to Company, 1641-1729. — Sale of the Land by the Company, 1737. — The Company freed from all Taxes. — Hanging out the Colours, 1743-1796. — First Fire Society. — The Cadet Corps. — Military Company of Harvard College. — New Regulations, 1762. — Major-General Winslow. — The Revolutionary War, 1775-1783. — Meetings Suspended. — Major-General Brooks. — Early Use of Artillery. — Title of Company at various periods. — Honorary Members. — Uniforms. — The Ceremony on Election Days. — Faneuil Hall. — The Colours. — Dan and Si. — The Arms. — Espontoons and Halberds. — Organisation of the Company.

A LARGE tract of land in America was granted by James I. to the Plymouth Company in 1606, which was then known as North Virginia: the first settlement was made the following year, and it was afterwards named New England by Captain Smith, who explored it in the year 1614. It consisted of the

settlements in Massachusetts Bay and surrounding district. A band of 102 Puritans, now termed the "Pilgrim Fathers," with twenty-eight women, arrived here in the *May Flower*, and founded the settlement on Plymouth Rock, on the 25th of December, 1620, which was named New Plymouth.

The City of Boston was founded about the year 1727 by colonists from Charlestown. Here originated that resistance to the British authorities which led to American independence.

The Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company was the first organised military body in America, and it may be considered the germ from which all others, both in New England and the United States, have sprung.

As no regular military force accompanied the first settlers or planters, they formed Voluntary Military Associations for defence, which were styled Bands, or Trained Bands, and these constituted the sole military power until they were reorganised in 1644.

In October, 1636, there were seven of these Bands, each with a Captain, Lieutenant, and Ensign, viz.: the Dorchester, Captain E. Stoughton; Charlestown, Captain Robert Sedgwick; Watertown, Captain William Geinson, or Jennison; Newton, Captain G. Cooke; Saugus, Lieutenant D. Howe or Haugh; Ipswich, Captain D. Dennison; and Boston, Captain John Underhill, Lieutenant Edward Gibbons, and Ensign Robert Hardinge.

Several of the first planters had belonged to the Honourable Artillery Company of London, and they probably desired to establish a branch of it there, considering that it would be a benefit to their infant colony, which at that time consisted of only fifteen towns. They therefore, with a number of the leaders and officers of the Voluntary Trained Bands already mentioned, with some of the magistrates and citizens, formed a new Military Association in 1637.

A petition was addressed to Governor Winthrop for a charter of incorporation; but it appears they did not meet with success in their first application.

The Governor says:—"Divers gentlemen and others, being joined in a military company, desired to be made a Corporation; but the Council considering, from the example of the Prætorian

Band among the Romans and Templars in Europe, how dangerous it might be to erect a standing authority of military men, which might easily in time overthrow the civil power, thought fit to stop it betimes; yet they were allowed to be a Company, but subordinate to all authority."

In the records of the Government of the Colony there is the following notice of the Company, dated the 17th of March, 1638 (o.s.):—"The Military Company of Boston may present two or three to the Council, to choose a Captain out of them." Also, "Captain Keayne and the Military Company have power to exercise where they please, and to make use of so many of the common arms as they need; and a warrant from any of the Council is sufficient for the delivery of them unto Captain Keayne, or such as he shall appoint."

By perseverance they obtained a Charter, of which the following is a copy:—

"*Massachusetts, March 17th, 1638.*

"Orders for the Military Company, made by the Governor and Council there, by order of the General Court.

"Whereas divers gentlemen and others, out of their care of the public weal and safety, by the advancement of the military art, and exercise of arms, have desired license of the Court to join themselves in one Company, and to have the liberty to exercise themselves at such times as their occasions will permit; and that such liberties and privileges might be granted them as the Court should think meet for their better encouragement and furtherance in so useful an employment; which request of theirs, being referred by the Court unto us the Standing Council, we have thought fit, upon serious considerations, and conference with divers of the principal of them, to set down an order herein as followeth:

"*Imprimis.* We do order that Robert Keine, Merchant; Nathaniel Duncan, Merchant; Robert Sedgwick, Gentleman; William Spencer, Merchant; and such others as they have already joined with them, and such as they shall from time to time take into their company, shall be called THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS.

"2ndly. They, or the greater number of them, shall have liberty to choose their Captain, Lieutenant, and all other officers. The Captain and Lieutenant to be always such as the Court or Council shall allow of; and no officer to be put upon them but of their own choice.

"3rdly. None of the said Military Company (except such as shall be officers of any other Trained Band in any particular town) shall be bound to give attendance upon their ordinary trainings.

"4thly. The first Monday in every month is appointed for their meeting and exercise; and to the end that they may not be hindered from coming together, we do hereby order that no other trainings in the particular towns, nor other ordinary town meetings, shall be appointed on that day; and if that day prove unseasonable for the use of their arms, then the sixth of the same week is appointed for supply. This not to extend to Salem, or the towns beyond, nor to Hingham, Weymouth, Dedham, nor Concord.

"5thly. They have liberty and power to make orders amongst themselves for the better managing their military affairs; which orders are to be of force when they shall be allowed by the Court or Council; and they may appoint an officer to levy any fines or forfeitures which they shall impose upon any of their own Company for the breach of any such order, so as the same exceed not twenty shillings for any one offence.

"6thly. The said Military Company are to have one thousand acres of land (in some such place as may not be prejudicial to any plantation), to be granted by the Court to some of the said Company, for the use of the present Company, and such as shall join in the same; to be improved by them within a time convenient, for providing necessaries for their military exercise, and defraying of other charges, which may arise by occasion thereof.

"7thly. The said Company shall have liberty, at the time before appointed, to assemble themselves for their military exercises in any town within this jurisdiction at their own pleasure; *provided always*, that this order or grant, or anything therein contained, shall not extend to free the said Company,

or any of them, their persons or estates, from the civil government and jurisdiction here established.

“JOHN WINTHROP, *Governor*.

“THOMAS DUDLEY, *Deputy-Governor*.”

On the first Monday in June, 1639, Captain Robert Keayne was elected Commander; Daniel Haugh, or Howe, Lieutenant; and Joseph Weld, Ensign. Of the two last we have no information but of Captain Keayne, the founder as well as the first Commander, mention is frequently made. He was probably somewhat advanced in life, since his only child, his son Benjamin, is enrolled among the members admitted in 1639. Captain Keayne was by profession a merchant tailor, and had belonged to the Honourable Artillery Company of London, of which body he was admitted a member on the 6th of May, 1623. Some years afterwards he emigrated to Boston, and in all the earliest town meetings in that place he took an active and leading part, and for a number of years in succession was chosen one of their Deputies to the Great and General Court, where his activity and usefulness were equally conspicuous. He was a man of large property, distinguished for his piety and benevolence; and in every plan for improvement or enterprise, in building church or college, his name appears as a patron. So eminently useful were his services, that among the first grants of land made by the Government there is a grant made to him of 400 acres.

Notwithstanding this excellent character, we learn that he did not conform or comply in all things with the rigid morality of his Puritanical brethren. A complaint was made against him in 1639, before the General Court, of which he was a member, for great oppression in the sale of foreign commodities. The principal ground of the charge was the taking more than sixpence in the shilling profit. He was found guilty, and sentenced, by the Deputies, to pay a fine of £200—who styled the offence a corrupt practice,—firstly, “because he was an eminent professor of the Gospel; secondly, a man of eminent parts; thirdly, wealthy, and having but one child; fourthly, having come over for conscience’ sake; and, fifthly, having been dealt with and admonished by friends.” Some



MAJOR-GENERAL SIR JOHN LEVERETT.

Commander, 1652, 1663, 1670.

difference of opinion arose, about the amount of the fine, between the Deputies and the Magistrates, the latter thinking £100 enough, and the affair was finally compromised by Captain Keayne paying the latter sum.

Major-General Robert Sedgewick, the third named in the Charter, and the second on the Roll, was a gentleman of education and distinction. He had been a member of the Honourable Artillery Company of London, and was one of the first who came to settle in the Colony, or, as Johnson * (a contemporary) observes, "was brought up in London's Artillery Garden, and furthered with sixteen years' experience in New England, besides the help of a very good head-piece, being a frequent instructor of our Artillerymen." He was leader of the first Trained Band formed in Charlestown, and was afterwards promoted to the highest military rank in the Colony. It is supposed that he died in England, having returned there on business.

It appears that the Charter was granted to four persons, one in each of the principal towns in the Colony, with their associates, and it is therefore a mistake to suppose that the origin or progress of the Company is to be attributed entirely to Boston. During the first year of its formation fifty-eight members appear to have joined; but when the Militia was first organised in 1644, no less than 245 were enrolled.

Major-General Sir John Leverett, afterwards Governor of Massachusetts (1673-1678) was distinguished for his military exploits abroad. As early as 1642 he was employed on an important mission with Colonel Edward Hutchinson, to one of the Indian tribes, and was afterwards constantly selected for places of trust and honour. At the Restoration he was in England, advocating the interest of the Colony, and on his return to Boston was elected one of their Deputies. He was an active member of the Company for more than thirty-two years, where he successively held the posts of Clerk and Sergeant, Lieutenant in 1648, and Commander in 1652, 1663, and 1670.

* "The Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour in New England." By Edward Johnson. These annals contain much interesting information about this period.

The Militia force, which was organised in 1644, had to do duty for at least eight days in the year, for the neglect of which every man was liable to a fine of five shillings a day, none being exempted but "timorous persons," and it is recorded that they were but few.

The Legislature did their best to avoid high titles ; and appointed one general officer for the Colony, with the title of Major-General, or Sergeant-Major-General as he was commonly called—who was elected annually. The Colony was divided into four counties, Suffolk, Essex, Middlesex, and Norfolk ; and in each there was a regiment commanded by a Sergeant-Major. The Company's officers were elected by the soldiers themselves, and submitted to the Legislature for approval ; the Sergeant-Major being elected by the Captains and subalterns.

The ornaments or badges of the officers were extremely simple, and, as late as the commencement of the Revolutionary War, different coloured ribbons were the distinguishing badges of office. The Militia was reorganised in 1686.

In August, 1653, Captain Keayne made his will, which consisted of about one hundred and fifty folio pages, and contained much relating to the Company in which he was so greatly interested. In giving directions for his funeral, which he desired should be without any great outward show, he says that, "Knowing that extraordinary solemnities can nothing add to the gain or benefit of the deceased, yet having been trained up in military discipline from my youngest years, and having endeavoured to promote it the best I could, and since God hath brought me into this country, and seeing He hath been pleased to raise me as a poor instrument to lay the foundation of that noble Society of the Artillery Company in this place, that hath so far prospered by the blessing of God as to help many with good experience in the use of their arms, and more exact knowledge in the Military Art, and hath become a nursery to raise up many able and well-experienced soldiers, that have done some good service for their country ; therefore, to declare my affections to that exercise and to the society of soldiers, I shall desire to be buried as a soldier in a military way, if the time and place of my decease and other occasions may suit thereunto ; which I leave to the

discretion of my executors and friends." He then provides for his debts, and after dividing the principal part of his estate between his wife and son, left £300 to build an exchange, in which a large room was to be set apart as an Armoury for the use of the Company; remarking that "the place they now use will fit to scour and clean the arms in, and also to lay them up, and keep them in, which will be a comely sight for strangers to see, and a great ornament to the room, and also to the town, where the soldiers may arm themselves when they go to exercise. Such a place being provided, I give and bequeath five pounds for the encouragement of that Company, to be laid out in pikes and bandoliers, for the use of such soldiers of that Company that live in other towns, so far as it cannot be convenient for them to bring their arms with them." He also left them £5 "towards the erecting of a platform, planked underneath, for two mounted pieces of ordnance to stand upon, a greater and a smaller, with a shed of boards raised over it to keep them dry, and preserve them from sun and weather, and this to be raised in the most convenient place in the training place in Boston, where it shall be most fit for that use, and where, at a convenient distance, against some hill or rising ground, there may be a good butt, or kind of bulwark raised of earth, that may receive the shot of great guns, and may be free from endangering any that may unexpectedly pass by or behind the butt, in case they should overshoot, which butt may be cast up or digged at the bottom of a hill, without any charge, by the Company themselves in two or three of their training days; and my end in this is, that the Company may be trained up, or so many of them as desire it, in the use, exercise, and experience of the great ordnance, as they are in their muskets, that they may learn how to exercise, load, mount, level, and fire at a mark, &c., which is as needful a skill for a soldier, as the exercise of their ordinary arms. I suppose the country will willingly lend the Company two such pieces for so good a use as this is, if the town itself have none such to spare, and will give them a barrel of powder or two to encourage them to begin a service that will be so singularly useful for their country. Their bullets will be most of them found and saved again, if the hill or butt against which they shoot be not so low

and narrow that they over-mount and shoot aside at random. Now as many of that Company are officers which desire to learn that art of gunnery, so needful for every captain and officer of a Company to be experienced in, they may enter their names to be scholars of the Great Artillery, and to agree that every one that enters his name may give so much for entry, and so much a year afterwards, as you do at the Artillery, which money will serve to lay in provisions of powder, shot, sponges, budge-barrels,* common baskets, and some allowance to the Master-Gunner, that shall take pains to instruct them, if there cannot be some skilful and sufficient man found, that will think the honour of the place to instruct such a society in so noble a service recompense sufficient, that they have an opportunity not only to exercise their own skill, but to do good to their country and to willing scholars, that so thirst after experience, as the Captain and rest of the officers of the small Artillery † do freely expend their time to instruct others in the best skill themselves have attained, and look at it as reward enough that their pains is accepted and the Company edified by it."

He further directs that the officer chosen to instruct should be styled Captain of the Great Artillery, or Master-Gunner; and that they should assemble once a week, or fortnight, for two or three hours, for drill; and that as all could not expect to shoot (the cost of powder and shot being so great), they were to take it in turns, two or three at each meeting, having one shot apiece. To the Captain and officers he left two heifers or cows, then worth from £25 to £30, to be kept as stock, and the annual increase or profits to be laid out in powder, bullets, &c.; but in the event of these instructions not being carried out within two years after his death, the above-named three legacies were to be void.

Many know, he says, that his earnest endeavour and desire had been to promote and encourage the Company, out of which

* A tin barrel to hold gunpowder, containing about 130 lbs., having a case of leather made fast over the head, to prevent the powder from taking fire: used on board ships.

† In speaking of Artillery and Small Artillery, he probably refers to fire-arms; and of Great Artillery, cannons or heavy ordnance.

"the Lord hath raised up many a well-experienced soldier, that hath done good service, and have been of good esteem, both here, and in our native country; and, therefore, my grief is the more to fear their sometime flourishing and highly-prized Company, than when the country grows more populous, this Company should grow more thin, and ready to dissolve for want of appearance; but some are wary, and they think they have got experience enough, so they must begin to neglect:—but my request is, that the entries, quarterage, and fines, for late and non-appearance (which last hath been too long neglected, and will not be well with the Company till it be taken up again, especially seeing the greatest part of the Company consists now of men in our own town, and we never had better nor more constant appearance than when fines were duly taken), may be preserved and kept in stock to lay out in powder, arms, bandoliers, for the use of the Company. And in canvas to make resemblances of trenches, half-moons, redoubts, forts, &c., common baskets, and such-like necessary implements for some special military service, that might be performed once or twice a-year, which would be a singular help to the ordinary exercise, and would add much not only to the encouragement, but to the experience, both of officers and soldiers, in some military exercises, which, without such helps, cannot be taught nor performed. And these means would be far better employed, and to the greater satisfaction and content of the Company, in such things, than to be wasted and spent in eating and drinking, and needless invitations, as it hath been for a long time, both to my own, and to the grief and offence of several of the Company, which hath occasioned some to leave the Company, and others to be unwilling to pay their quarterage. Seeing the whole stock is still consumed, and the Company rather idle than otherwise, which hath been a chief thing to hinder many other profitable exercises for want of means to bear the charge of them, and will in time be the overthrow and dissolution of the Company, if it be not prevented, which hath made the Artillery Company in London so to flourish for so long a time together; but the stock of the Company is well managed, whereby they have done great things, and have been able to perform many exercises (though

chargeable), both for the delight of all the beholders, and the great benefit and experience of the soldiery, and to the increase of their number. And, indeed, I had in my purpose several other legacies to have bestowed on this Company, for their encouragement, and example of others, and have them in readiness, and of some consequence; but the small appearance of the Company, and the declining of it daily, which cannot be but a great discouragement to the Captain and Officers that command them, as also to the soldiers that do appear, and cause a kind of complaint instead of esteem in them that behold them, made me fear the final dissolution of it; and so all gifts will sink with it, and come to nothing, hath been the cause of altering my resolution; though I know a skilful commander, though he have a body of men but four files, six deep, which is but twenty-four soldiers, that I would add further, if he had but half so many—but two files, six or eight deep—with them he may perform such variety of exercises, not only for the postures, but the several motions, doublings, facings, common marches, wheelings; yea, such variety of forms of battles, and several kinds of firings and charges, as should not only be delightful, but very useful and gainful to those that are exercised; and not only for two or three training days, but have matter enough to exercise them for several years, which I should hardly have believed, did I not know it to be true, and have seen it with my own eyes. Yet, notwithstanding, what comfort or credit can a captain have to go into the field with six or twelve soldiers, and under the name of an Artillery or Military Company? It would be my rejoicing if there could be any means thought on or used to increase and encourage this Company, that is and may be so honourable and advantageous to the whole country. That it may remain and continue still in splendour and esteem, increasing and not declining; but all things have their changes.”

Captain Keayne left also other legacies, such as those to Boston and Harvard College. The time of his death is not known, but it is supposed to have happened about 1656, as his will was proved on the 2nd of May in that year.

About the period when Keayne wrote his will the Company



MAJOR THOMAS SAVAGE,
Commander, 1651, 1659, 1668, 1675, 1680.

began to decline. During the first ten years 278 members were enrolled, but only forty-seven during the next ten years; nor did it materially revive or increase until about 1670, as only seventy-three members were admitted from 1658 to 1669 inclusive; but from that period to the arrival of Andross, in 1686, it appears to have flourished.

Amongst the earliest associates of Keayne was Major Thomas Savage, whose name is the fourth on the Roll, and is the oldest of the Commanders whose portrait the Company possesses—the painting from which the accompanying portrait is taken, having been made in 1660. He had five sons, all of whom were members, and he was elected Commander of the Company five times between the years 1651 and 1680. He held many civic offices of importance, and is believed to have been a member of the Honourable Artillery Company of London, and was one of the trustees to whom Madame Norton gave the “Old South Meeting House” property—the building made historical during the Revolutionary War by being used as a stable and riding-school by the British troops.

The records of the Company previous to this period have been lost, with the exception of an imperfect roll of members and a list of officers, with a few of the clergymen who preached on the anniversary festivals.

The first rules and regulations now existing are those sanctioned by the Governor and Council, or the General Court, in September, 1657, which are as follows:—

“It is ordered by the Artillery Company in Boston, September 7th, 1657,—

“1st. That whereas there is an agreement to order, that every member of the Company is to pay four shillings per year, for their quarterages, into the hand of their Clerk, that whatsoever is due from any of the Company shall be paid within one month into his hands who is the present Clerk.

“2nd. It is further ordered by the Company, that, for the time to come, every one who is a member of the Company shall pay into the hands of the Clerk, upon the election days, or before, his quarterage for the year past.

“3rd. It is further ordered by the Company, that the training

days for this Company be five yearly, and they to be on the first Mondays of April, May, June, September, and October, yearly; and that every officer and soldier is to appear at their colours by eight of the clock in the morning; and if the Monday prove foul, the Friday after is appointed.

"4th. It is further ordered by the Company, that if any shall neglect to appear in arms four training days together, and not give an account of it to the satisfaction of the Company, he shall then pay to the Company what is due, both for fines and quarterages, and have his name put out of the rolls, and no more to be accounted a member of the Company.

"5th. It is further ordered by the Company, that if any be chosen to any office in the Company, and hath not borne an higher office in the Company before, and shall refuse to hold the office he is chosen to, he shall pay what arrears he is yet behind to the Company, and have his name put out of the Company's roll, and no longer be acknowledged a member of the Company.

"6th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk, without any further order, shall have full power to distrain for any fine, or quarterages due to the Company which shall be unpaid one month after they are due.

"7th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk shall every training day bring the book of the Company's orders into the field, that it may be there, not only to call over the Company, but to enter any who is admitted, and enter any orders which shall be made.

"8th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk's accounts yearly, shall, after the day of election, and before the next training day in September, be audited by those who were Commissioned Officers the year past, with the Captain and Clerk new chosen, that the accounts may be delivered into the new Clerk's hands.

"9th. It is further ordered by the Company, that whereas no town training is to be upon Artillery days, yet the Commander of the Artillery may have liberty to *request* so much favour of any Captain, and he not to be a transgressor of the order, to grant it to meet with his company upon such days with the

Artillery, for the better helping forward of discipline in the Company.

"10th. It is further ordered by the Company, that a perfect list shall be taken of Members of the Company, and, being perfected, shall be called over every training day. It is also desired by the Company that these several orders may be presented by Major Atherton to the Council for their approbation of them, that so they may carry more authority with them."

The foregoing rules and orders may be considered as the foundation of many of those customs which have been transmitted to the present day.

In 1674 Sir Edmund Andross arrived at New York with a Commission as Governor of that Colony: in 1686 was made Governor of New England, and arrived in Boston on the 20th of December in that year. He entered upon the discharge of the duties of his office with a strong prejudice against the people of Massachusetts, and exhibited his arbitrary temper by removing from office the magistrates under the old charter, and overturning most of the institutions of the first settlers of New England.

The Company must have held meetings in the beginning of the year under Captain John Phillips, their Commander, as several members appear to have been admitted; but they did not celebrate their anniversary in June by electing new officers, as the meetings were probably suppressed by Andross. Nor was the Company allowed to hold any meetings during his administration, and no members were admitted until its revival in 1691. No regular meeting of the Company was held until the first Monday in April of that year, when (the old officers having died or left the Company), Colonel Elisha Hutchinson was chosen to command, until the succeeding anniversary election, and the celebrated Dr. Cotton Mather was chosen to preach the election sermon. From this time until the commencement of the Revolutionary War, the Company held their regular meetings and performed their field duties with great regularity, excepting in the autumn of the year 1721, when "the meetings of the Company were omitted, in consequence of the General Assembly at their last session having forbid all training

and trooping in Boston, by reason of the vast number of people exercised with the small-pox."

The exertions to revive the Company were attended with great success, and the admission of many distinguished public characters added to the reputation it had already attained.

The first regular record of the Company is dated the 4th of April, 1698, referring to the election of the Rev. Joseph Belcher, of Dedham, to preach the approaching election sermon; all previous to this being lost or destroyed. Among the first subjects recorded is a revision of the rules and orders of the Company, dated the 2nd of September, 1700; but it does not appear that they were ever sanctioned by the General Court, or Council, although the Company made use of them for many years, with but trifling alterations. Most of the orders made in 1657 were retained, the new ones being as follows:—

"Whereas the Ancient and Honourable Company of the Artillery of the Massachusetts have had several powers and privileges for their encouragement granted by several General Courts, under which they continued long a nursery for training up soldiers in military discipline, capable for, and that have been improved in service for the king and country, which Company of later years has been under some decay, which if not timely remedied, may be of ill consequence; we, therefore, the successors of the ancient members and first beginners of the said Company have revised our former grants and orders, and consider what thereof are not at present proper for us, and what may be further done for the encouragement of the said Company, have drawn from the whole what we are of opinion may best suit our present circumstances, and humbly offer the same for further confirmation and allowance.

"Imprimis.—That the successors of Robert Keayne, merchant; Nathaniel Duncan, merchant; Robert Sedgwick, gentleman; and William Spencer, merchant; and such as are by them admitted into the Artillery Company, are declared and allowed to be the present members of the said Company, and such as from time to time they shall admit, shall enjoy the privileges and grants that have been, or that may be given and allowed

to them ; and as they have been, so shall continue to be, called the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

"2. That the greater number of them, upon the usual day of election of officers, shall have liberty to choose their Captain, Lieutenant, and Ensign, and other officers ; the three chief officers, to be allowed by the Governor, or, in his *absence*, Lieutenant-Governor for the time being.

"3. That the said Company, or major part of them, have liberty and power to make orders for the better managing their military affairs, which shall be of force when allowed by the Governor, &c.

"4. That they may appoint an officer to levy any fines they shall impose upon one of their own Company for breach of any such orders, so the same exceed not twenty shillings for one offence.

"5. That the said Company shall have liberty to assemble themselves for their Military exercise in any neighbouring town at their discretion."

[The 6th to the 11th Sections are substantially the same as the 4th to the 8th, and 10th Sections, of the Orders made in September, 1657.]

"12. That hereafter the training day shall be annually the election day, being the first Monday in June, the first Monday in September, the afternoon of the first Monday in October, the afternoon of the first Monday in April, and the whole day on the first Monday in May.

"13. That the drummers beat in season each training day, and be at the place of parade the whole day, at eight of the clock in the morning ; and on the half days, at one, on the penalty of two shillings and sixpence fine, to be paid to the Clerk for the use of the Company ; and the Sergeants to appear at the place of parade before nine of the clock on the whole days, and by two o'clock on the half days, on the penalty of one shilling to be paid as aforesaid ; and every soldier that appears not at the place of parade ready to be drawn up by nine in the morning on the whole days, and by two on the half days, shall pay sixpence, unless his excuse be allowed by the Company.

"14. That every soldier belonging to the Company, not under

obligation to any of the Companies of Militia in Boston, shall, for every day he omits or neglects to appear in arms in the said Company, pay one shilling fine; and the officers of the other Companies in Boston, that do or may belong to this Company shall be liable to the like fine.

"15. It is further agreed, not only by former grants, but with the consent of the several commanders of the Militia of Boston, that, out of the several Companies of the town of Boston, there may be listed forty soldiers, and no more, belonging to the said Companies, which shall be excused from any fine or penalty on common trainings; always provided they appear on each of the Artillery training days, or for default to pay six shillings fine for the use of the Company.

"16. That every one that is admitted into the Company, at his listing, shall not pay less than one shilling entrance-money to the Clerk, towards bearing the charge of the Company.

"17. That if any of the forty persons that shall be accepted by the Company, and are excused from common trainings, be chosen into any place, that excuses them from training in the other Military Companies, they shall then, if they continue in the Artillery Company, be no longer under the penalty of six shillings for non-appearance, but liable to the fine of one shilling, as others under the like circumstances, and that others may be admitted in their room to make up the number of forty as aforesaid.

"18. That upon reasonable request of any member of the Company they may have their dismissal granted.

"19. That such as now, or hereafter, shall be accounted members of the said Company, shall subscribe to these articles; the further to oblige themselves, and especially with respect to their subjecting themselves to the Clerk's power, *ex-officio*, of distraining for fines that any shall neglect or refuse to pay."

By the Charter of the Company they were to be granted 1,000 acres of land, and on the 8th of August, 1641, "a committee of the Great and General Court was appointed to accompany Mr. Oliver, a member, to see the Artillery land laid out, and make return to the next Court;" but nothing more appears to have

been done in the matter until the 6th of May, 1657, when at a meeting of the Court it was stated:—

“In answer to the petition of the Artillery Company of Boston, 500 acres, part of the 1,000 acres formerly granted to them, and laid out by John Sherman, near unto Concord river, where it comes near Shawsheen river, being four hundred rods in length and two hundred in breadth [describing the lines], is allowed and confirmed to them; and it is further ordered that the other 500 acres be laid out next the 500 acres already laid out, at the head line between Concord and Cambridge, if free from other grants.”

The next entry on the subject appears on the 15th of October, 1673, at a session of the General Court held at Boston, stating that their farm, as laid out on the 11th of September, consisted of “one thousand acres of upland and meadow, and is from a red oak tree, marked A, by a gully side on the bank of Merimac river, on a straight line west by south, one mile and three quarters, by marked trees, unto a pine at B, by a meadow called Spectacle Meadow, from B to C, and about the meadow to D, taking in those first patches of meadow, which meadow is estimated at thirty acres; from D to E, by the brook called Spectacle Brook, which brook, running into Nashaway river, from E to F, by Nashaway, or Watananock river, in Merimac river. The Court therefore approve of this return; and do further grant the Artillery Company, as an addition, the quantity of five hundred acres more. The grant being made about thirty years since. Provided that the five hundred acres be laid out in some convenient place next adjoining the plantation now granted them.”

Whether the foregoing may be considered as two distinct and separate grants of one thousand acres, or whether the latter was a grant made by the Court to make good a failure in the title to the former, as having been granted or located to other persons, is rendered doubtful by the imperfect records of the times. It does not appear that the Company received any benefit from the grant, or in any way improved the 1,000 acres last mentioned, until the 8th of March, 1716, when the Company “voted to lease the 1,000 acres in Dunstable for eleven years, on condition that a house and barn should be built thereon, an orchard of one

hundred and twenty apple trees planted, and the lessee to deliver to the Company one barrel of good cider, yearly," &c.

The General Court, at their May session, in 1717, made good the additional grant of the five hundred acres, by granting to the Company one half of a reservation of one thousand acres belonging to the Government in the township of Rutland. The grant was as follows:—"The following Order passed the House of Representatives, read, concurred, viz., Upon the petition of Edward Hutchinson, Habijah Savage, John Ballentine, Jun., Edward Winslow, and Jonathan Pollard, in behalf of the Artillery Company in Boston, praying that five hundred acres of lands, which are reserved to the province in the township of Rutland, may be granted to the said Company to satisfy a grant made to them by the General Court, October 15th, 1673. Ordered, that five hundred acres of the thousand acres, reserved to the Province in the township of Rutland, be granted in answer to this petition; but so that John Burrill, Esq., to whom the other five hundred acres is granted, have the choice at which end to lay out his grant.

"Consented to. SAMUEL SHUTE, *Governor*.

"Examined, per J. WILLARD, *Secretary*."

The division of the land was agreed upon between the Company and the heirs of Burrill, on the 1st of May, 1729, but no sooner had they come into possession than they were taxed. Deriving but little benefit from it, the Company, in April, 1731, appointed a committee, who the following month reported "that it was expedient to sell and dispose of the 1,000 and 500 acre grants." A petition to that effect was accordingly presented the same month, and at the June session the following Order was passed:—

"In the House of Representatives, June 14th, 1731. Read and ordered, that the Prayer of the petition be granted; and that the Artillery Company within mentioned be, and hereby are, fully authorised and empowered, in due form of law, to make and execute a good deed or deeds, of conveyance of the two tracts of land within mentioned; the produce thereof to be vested in such other real estate as may be most for their advan-



DEVICE ON COMPANY COLOUR.

tage, the income thereof to be applied to and for providing necessities for their military exercises, and defraying the other charges that may arise by occasion thereof.

- "Sent up for concurrence. J. QUINCY, *Speaker*.
 "In Council, June 16th, 1731. Read and concurred.
 "J. WILLARD, *Secretary*.
 "June 16th, 1731, consented to.
 "J. BELCHER, *Governor*."

The Company, in 1737, effected a sale of their lands in Rutland; but at what time the Dunstable lands were sold does not appear; they were, however, disposed of to Colonel Blanchard, a mortgage being taken as security, and after his death it long continued in dispute, until, finally, his heirs paid off the incumbrance in 1789.

The Company again found themselves in difficulties, and the assessors of the town of Boston having obliged them to pay taxes for three years, on the funds in the hands of the Treasurer, they petitioned the Legislature to direct that the taxes already paid should be refunded, and that in future their funds and property should not be liable or subject to taxation.

On the 15th of June, 1749, the Council complied with their request, and it was, "Read and ordered, that the prayer of this petition be granted, and that the aforementioned taxes, imposed on the Treasurer of the Artillery Company aforesaid, be remitted; and it is hereby declared that the donations made, or to be made to the said Company, shall be exempt from all taxes whatsoever, until this Court shall order otherwise.

- "Sent down for concurrence.
 "J. WELLARD, *Secretary*.
 "In the House of Representatives read and concurred.
 "J. DWIGHT, *Speaker*.
 "Consented to. S. PHIPS, *Governor*."

In 1743 the Colours were ordered to be hung out on training days at Major Henchman's corner (the corner of State Street and Cornhill), and the place of parade to be at the Town House. It was usual to place the colours there in the morning,

where they remained as a notification or warning for the training, until the Company was formed, when the Lieutenant was detached with an escort to bring them on to the parade. The ceremony was abolished in 1796, when the standard was brought from Henchman's corner, for the last time, by Captain Joseph Eaton, then the Lieutenant of the Company. This officer claimed the honour "of hauling down the first British Colours" at the commencement of the Revolution.

Colonel Benjamin Pollard was a distinguished citizen of Boston, and for several years was High Sheriff of Suffolk. He is said to have been the first American gentleman who made the tour of Europe, and upon his return he introduced many improvements which he had observed abroad. He introduced and organised the first "*Fire Society*" in America; and also the use of the bayonet among the Militia of Boston. The Company of Cadets which he commanded was the first corps in America to appear with this weapon.

The origin of the Cadet Corps is thus related. The Governor of the Massachusetts Colony was about to proceed to the lines to meet the Governor of a neighbouring colony, and there was no escort for him. Colonel Pollard, with some members of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, and others, volunteered, and escorted His Excellency on horseback. During the journey they determined to form a corps especially as an escort or body-guard for the Governor, and in 1754 a petition was presented to the Legislature to incorporate a Company of Cadets.

Captain Thomas Edwards, then commanding the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, fearing that the privileges contemplated to be granted them would interfere with those of his own Company, strongly protested to the Legislature against granting their petition until they could be heard, in order that similar privileges and exemptions might be granted to them. The Cadet Corps, however, was soon after organised, and many members of the "Ancients" joined them; and the fact that Colonel Pollard, who is supposed to be the founder of the corps, was for many years a member of the Ancients, has caused the origin of the Cadets to be traced to the Company. Both the Cadet Corps and the Company discontinued their meetings during



DEVICE ON COMPANY COLOUR.

the Revolution, but they were revived in 1786. About the same time that the Cadet Corps was organised a Military Company was formed by the students in Harvard College. They applied to Governor Hutchinson for arms, but as they were mostly opposed to the Mother country, he reluctantly yielded to their request, and avoided as long as possible to sign an order for their delivery. But they were not discouraged, for they procured wooden guns to exercise with, and were reviewed with them by the Judges of the Supreme Court in session at Cambridge.

The institution of the Cadet Corps probably served to lessen the number of admissions into the Company; and, as it had been declining in numbers for several years, the subject was considered at an evening meeting after the field-day in October, 1760, at the house of Ensign Josiah Waters (afterwards a Commander of the Company), and a Committee was chosen, "to consider of some method for the advantage and unity of the Company."

On the next field day, in April, 1761, the two following resolutions were adopted:—

"1. That when any person offers himself for admission, he shall be publicly proposed, and stand candidate *one* term; that so none may be admitted but persons of good repute, who are able and willing to attend on training days, and bear their part of the expense.

"2. That the members of the Company duly attend their duty on training days, study for peace, unity, and good order among themselves; that so they may encourage the officers of the Militia, and other suitable persons to join them, and support the credit and usefulness of the Company, always keeping to those good and wholesome rules by which the Company has subsisted for one hundred and twenty-three years."

These resolutions appear to have had the desired effect, for in 1770, out of forty-four officers of the Boston Regiment of Militia, including the train of Artillery attached to it, all except one Lieutenant and five Ensigns were members of the Company.

The privileges of the Company were always respected; on one occasion, viz., the 1st of April, 1748, which had been appointed

for a town meeting in Boston, it was found that it was one of the field days appointed by the Charter of the Company; and "the meeting was declared null and void, as being contrary to the Artillery Charter."

On the 3rd of May, 1762, the following report was draw up:—

"Unanimity and harmony, as well as good regularity in the conduct of our military affairs, is a becoming character, and serves to make us respectable in the eyes of men; 'tis a piece of eminent wisdom to appoint seasons and rules for the various affairs relative to the Military Company whereof we are members.

"The dignity of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company has been supported by the members of it in a succession of years, in such a manner as to deserve the title that the legislative body was pleased to confer on it; and it seems to be the concern of the present members, that the dignity and honour of the Company should be supported and kept up in such a manner as to preserve to us that reputation that would be agreeable to all; and at the same time a saving in expense made in such a way and manner as would undoubtedly invite a number to join us. That, unless something of the above sort be done, we should lose the benefit of, and perhaps ourselves dwindle away, so as it would be difficult for us to maintain the reputation we have so long deserved. All seem to agree in this, that a saving in expense would be agreeable, could the dignity and honour of the Company be preserved. In consequence of which your humble servants propose the following scheme:—

"1. That the Company for the future break up at Faneuil Hall, should leave be obtained of the Select-Men for that purpose.

"2. That the Governor, Council, &c., be invited on the Anniversary election of officers, as formerly, to dine at Faneuil Hall. The expense to be paid as usual.

"3. The Governor, Council, &c., after the election of officers, to be invited and entertained as usual (at Faneuil Hall), the expense to be equally paid by the commissioned officers for the year ensuing.

"4. That the eldest Sergeant provide for and entertain the Company at Faneuil Hall on their muster in September as follows: with punch and wine and bread, and nothing more.

No one to be invited unless they belong to the Company. Pipes and tobacco entirely excluded; and it is recommended that the Company dismiss themselves so seasonable as to prevent the unnecessary expense of candles, &c.

"5. That the second Sergeant provide for and entertain the Company on their muster in October, agreeable to Article 4 in every tittle.

"6. That the third Sergeant provide for and entertain the Company on their muster in April next, agreeable to Article 4 in every tittle.

"7. That the fourth Sergeant provide for and entertain the Company on their muster in May, agreeable to Article 4 in every tittle.

"Should the above scheme be approbated by the Company, a considerable saving may be made; at the same time the honour and dignity of the Company be preserved, many inconveniences removed, that have prevented the growth of it, and a prospect of our increasing, arising from the saving in expenses, and in particular the trouble of our families."

The report was adopted and "voted to stand during the pleasure of the Company."

On the 2nd of May, 1763, it was voted that the following alteration and addition should be made to Rule 4, after the word "bread," viz., "and of cheese; and the respective officers to invite their friends as they think fit."

A Committee was appointed in September, 1767, to consider what plan would be most expedient to raise the reputation, secure the interest, and reduce the expenses of the Company. They presented their report on the 8th of April the following year, which was adopted, in which they say:—"It appears to the Committee that the extraordinary expenses attending the officers of the said Company, have been very discouraging to its members, as well as to many who have discovered an inclination to join it. It also appears that a very great saving may be made in the expenses; so great as to take off any objection of this sort for the future, if the interest of the Company be carefully attended to." They then go on to suggest, that inquiry ought to be made to ascertain what the funds were, or should be;



MAJOR-GENERAL JOHN WINSLOW.

Commander, 1765.

Another distinguished member was Major-General William Heath, who joined the Company when twenty-nine years of age, in 1754, and was one of the first five General Officers appointed in the Revolutionary Army by the Provisional Congress, at Cambridge, on the 9th of February, 1775; and on the disbanding of the army he retired as a Major-General.

In 1768, several British regiments were quartered in Boston, and the Company being on duty on one of their field-days under the command of (then) Lieutenant Heath; and it appearing probable that the Company would not leave the Common until after the roll-call of the troops, the officer commanding sent orders to Lieutenant Heath to retire without beat of drum, and that there was to be no firing on returning their colours. The Company were desirous of resisting this order, but Lieutenant Heath considered it his duty to comply with the orders of a superior military officer in His Majesty's service, and marched to Faneuil Hall in silence, and into the Hall without firing. This appeared to some of the members to be an infringement of their privileges; many murmured, and even complained of their commander for his compliance. One of them, Hopestill Capen, then orderly Sergeant, resented it so highly that he went to the top of his house, after the Company was dismissed, and loaded and fired his musket three times; and even many years after would not vote for General Heath, when candidate for Governor, assigning as a reason his having complied with this order. The Company in 1770, elected General Heath their Commander.

In June, 1774, the Company held their election, when Dr. John Lathrop delivered an excellent and patriotic discourse. It is related by some that, while the sermon was being preached, a body of British troops was in the vicinity, and a sentry was placed on the pulpit stairs by the British lest anything rebellious should be expressed. Dr. Lathrop was heard to say, when he was accused of advancing sentiment contrary to the interest of his country, that no one certainly could doubt his patriotic spirit, for he had preached republicanism with a British sentry, armed, on the pulpit stairs to watch what he said.

After the battle of Lexington, the people were all actively

engaged in resisting the arbitrary power of Great Britain, and the Company held no regular meetings during the Revolutionary War. Many of the members served in other regiments as officers, and small squads composed of the few left at home occasionally met; but no record was made of the duties performed.

The first action between the Americans and the British troops was the battle of Lexington, on the 19th of April, 1775; and although peace was concluded in 1783, the Company ceased to assemble, nor did they hold any regular meetings from the 3rd of April, 1775, until the 4th of August, 1786—a period of more than eleven years. In the summer of the latter year, Major William Bell, who had been elected Commander in 1774, convened a meeting of the surviving officers and members, and they began to exert themselves to re-establish the Company, which had so dwindled it is said that not more than fifteen could be obtained for a field day.

The Boston "*Centinel*," of the 6th of September, 1786, states that on the fourth of that month, "for the first time since the commencement of the late revolution, the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, commanded by Major Bell, paraded at the State House, in this town, and, preceded by a band of music, marched to the Common, where they performed a number of military exercises; after which they marched to Faneuil Hall, discharged a volley of small arms, and finished the day much to their honour, and the credit of the town. It was gratifying to the real friends of this country to see our aged citizens, some of whom were nearly seventy years of age, equipped in the accoutrement of soldiers, and setting an example to the younger part of the community, that, should their country require their aid in the field, they might be found ready disciplined, and fit for immediate service."

Many of those who had held high commands in the Revolutionary Army enrolled themselves as members, and the majority of the officers of the Militia also joined the Company. The first member admitted after its revival was His Excellency John Brooks, of Medford, then Major-General of the Middlesex division. He was born in 1752, and commenced practice as a physician at the age of twenty-one; but he relinquished his



MAJOR-GENERAL JOHN BROOKS.

Commander, 1787, 1794.

profession during the war (from 1775 to 1783), when he returned and resumed his professional pursuits, in which he distinguished himself: both Yale College and Harvard University conferring honorary degrees upon him. He began his military career by commanding a company of volunteers, raised in the town of Reading, at the commencement of the Revolution. He marched to Concord, with his company, and took part in the battle of Lexington. He was afterwards appointed a Major in a regiment of "Minute Men," and subsequently became a Lieutenant-Colonel-Commandant in the Revolutionary Army, or, "Continental line," and retired at the end of the war as a Brevet-Colonel. The corps to which he belonged was known as the 8th, or Jackson's Regiment (after a former colonel), and gained the title of "the Bloody Eighth;—the first in and the last out of battle." The regiment took a distinguished part in the battle of Saratoga, and was then, and during most of the war, commanded by Colonel Brooks. After the evacuation of Boston, he marched to New York, and was actively engaged in the battle of White Plains. In the memorable battle of Monmouth he was Adjutant-General of the advanced column of the Army. When Baron Steuben was made Inspector-General of the Army, Lieutenant-Colonel Brooks, on the recommendation of Washington (who had before recommended him to the Provincial Congress for as high a command as they could consistently with his age give him), was appointed one of the Inspectors-General under the Baron.

Upon the first organisation of the Militia after the war, Colonel Brooks was appointed Major-General of the Middlesex division, which office he occupied for ten years. During the war with Great Britain he held the important post of Adjutant-General of the State, until the year 1816, when he was elected Governor of the Commonwealth; the same dignity being conferred upon him for five years in succession. He was the first Marshal of Massachusetts, to which he was appointed by Washington; and when General Washington accepted the office of Lieutenant-General of the American armies, he selected Brooks as his first Brigadier-General. He was twice elected as Commander of the Company, viz., in 1787 and 1794.

The increase of the Company on its revival was rapid, fifty-three members being admitted in the course of one year, amongst whom were many distinguished men.

In consequence of the insurrection under Daniel Shays, the Governor applied to the Company for assistance, and for members to accept commissions in the Boston Militia. In the records of the Company it is stated that on the 27th of October, 1786, "His Excellency the Captain-General, by the gentlemen Select-Men of the town of Boston, applied to the Company for their aid in the present emergency of public affairs. The Company immediately voted their readiness to exert themselves in everything in their power to support the Government of the Commonwealth, and to hold themselves in readiness on the shortest notice to turn out in defence of the same." The Company was inspected at Faneuil Hall the following Saturday, by the Governor, when, in compliance with his request, they appointed a committee, "to find gentlemen, who, upon the present emergency, would accept of the command of the several companies of Militia of the town of Boston." All necessary arrangements were made for active service, Colonel Waters was elected adjutant, and a surgeon was also appointed; but the prompt and energetic measures adopted speedily crushed the insurrection before it had gained strength or unity sufficient to endanger the public welfare.

The Company undoubtedly had field pieces at a very early period, and made use of them on their days of exercise. This is apparent, not only from the extracts of Captain Keayne's will, and the alteration in the name of the Company, but also by the introduction of the word "Artillery," which they assumed, and which was confirmed by the Legislature. There are also several references to the Artillery in the Company's records, such as Isaac Coitmore, a member, being chosen, on the 14th of January, 1654, to look after the carriages and wheels of the great artillery, and to be paid by the Select-Men. At what period they abandoned the use of artillery is not known, but it was probably about the year 1690. In 1810 it was proposed to apply to the Legislature for field-pieces; but as other suggestions of improvement were made which it was supposed would prove expensive,

it was abandoned; but in the year 1817 two brass six-pounders were supplied to them by the Government.

The name of the Company by their Charter was, "The Military Company of Massachusetts," but, like the Hon. Artillery Company of London, their title has varied at different periods. Probably the names of "Artillery Company," and the "Great Artillery," which were applied to it a few years after the Charter was granted, originated on the introduction of field-pieces. The Charter was never revised by the General Court, but as early as 1657, and for a long time afterwards they recognised them in their proceedings by the name of "The Artillery Company." The oldest printed sermon (that of U. Oaks, 3rd June, 1672,) was preached "on the day of the Artillery election," and all the anniversary sermons down to the years 1708 are said to have been delivered before the "Artillery Company," from which time to the year 1738 they were styled in the title-page of the printed sermons the "Hon. Artillery Company," after the later year they were generally called the "Ancient and Hon. Artillery Company."

The Legislature in their grants of land speak of them as the "Artillery Company." Their records do not mention either the words Honourable or Ancient, until long after these titles had been applied to them by the public. The first mention of their using the word Honourable occurs in 1743; but they do not appear to have made use of the words "Ancient and Honourable" (except once, in 1762,) until 1786, when the Company was revived after the Revolution. The Legislature, by the Militia Laws, have since confirmed that title to them.

A custom prevailed in the Company from its first origin, that every member should sign the Company Book, and procure two sureties. In former times these were undoubtedly held responsible, not only for their good conduct, but for the payment of all fines and assessments due. On the 28th of August, 1809, the Clerk was directed to call on the sureties of delinquent members, and demand payment of their arrears, but this order was not enforced, as it was considered that the obligation, from disuse, had become obsolete.

When the Company was first formed a great proportion of the members held no military commission. The number of Trained

Bands or Corps were few ; but as the country increased in population, and New Trained Bands were formed, more officers were required, many of whom were selected from the Company. It was then the only school where the Military Art was to be acquired ; and it has always borne the name of a nursery for training up soldiers and officers—many of the Militia Companies not unfrequently selecting their officers from the private members of the Company.

Honorary Members appear to have been first elected after the revival in 1786, and in 1812 it was decided that those who paid the “ anniversary assessment ” were entitled to vote.

The field days, or training days of the Company, were originally every month, but they were afterwards reduced to five, as described in the Regulations made in 1657.

The first Monday in April being by the Constitution set apart for the annual election of the Governor and Senators, induced the Company afterwards to change the date to the Friday succeeding the first Monday in April, but the anniversary for the election of officers has invariably been the first Monday in June.

In the early days of the Company they were required to perform a whole day's duty on each field day ; in 1700 they performed a whole day's duty in May and September, but only half a day in April and October. The field day in April has always been considered the day of Inspection ; in later years a whole day's duty is seldom required, and then only in cases of emergency.

The mode of notifying to the members the days for field duty was peculiar, being by playing the fifes and drums through the principal streets in Boston. The displaying of the Standard or Colours at the south corner of State Street and Cornhill was for a time one of the ways of giving notices. About the latter part of the last century it was the custom for the drummer belonging to the Company to march down Middle Street to Winnesimet Ferry, between the hours of eleven and one, beating “ the troop ; ” on his arrival at the Ferry he beat a roll three times, shouldered his drum, and went his way ; this was called the “ first drum.”

Formerly the Company mustered on the lower floor of the old State House ; and if the weather was bad on Monday they



"DAN AND SI."

With the Drum beaten at Bunker's Hill.

were discharged until the Friday following, and, if then wet, they went through their exercises there, which was called "training in the town house."

In 1770 the Company used to parade with two drums and two fifes, and the Militia Companies with one each.

All adopted the "quick time," which had never been practised in Boston before the British troops arrived there in 1768; and the slow time was only occasionally used afterwards "for a change, and when on escort duty;" "common time" was not then known.

Espontoons were introduced about this period, previous to which the Captain and Lieutenant carried pikes or half-pikes; the Sergeants always carried halberds, and were not armed with swords until 1790.

Their Charter provided that no other Company should train and exercise within certain limits on any of the field days of the Company. In former times this right was claimed and supported in every case, but in 1657 the Commander for the time being was authorised to grant permission to other Companies to assemble, and exercise with the Artillery Company. As late as the year 1808, when the Company was paraded in Upper Faneuil Hall, the Winslow Blues were found to be assembling for drill, and an order was therefore sent them to disperse, which they complied with; but in later times this rule has not been enforced, the Company waiving their right on the subject.

Whether the Company had any particular uniform when they were first formed, in 1638, is not known, but it is supposed that they wore crimson or scarlet. On the 2nd of September, 1754, it was ordered that the Company should in future appear in "white silk hose" on training days, and two years afterwards members were directed to appear in blue coats and gold laced hats. On the 28th of July, 1772, "the Company met to consider of some method to raise the spirit and reputation of the Company, and keep up the honour they have so long sustained," and they decided to have a uniform consisting of "blue coats and lappels, with yellow buttons, the cock of the hat to be uniform with the Militia officers—wigs and hair

to be clubbed." Soon after the band was ordered to be dressed in white cloth coats, with blue lappels, trimmed with blue, and white linings, white linen waistcoats and breeches, and a cap covered with white cloth and trimmed with gold binding. In January, 1787, the following uniform was adopted, viz., dark blue cloth coats, faced with buff, shoulder straps, plain yellow buttons; buff vest and breeches, with the same buttons as on the coat; plain black hat with black buttons, loop and cockade; white linen spatterdashes to fasten under the foot and come partly up the thigh, with black buttons, and black garters to buckle below the knee; white stocks; the hair to be quod; white ruffled shirts at wrist and bosom.

The ceremonies on the Election day have occasionally varied and been altered. The following description is given of the proceedings about the year 1820, and they remain very similar at the present day.

The Company assemble on the morning of the election day at an early hour at the Armoury in full-dress uniform. They then march to the State House, where the invited guests usually assemble. About twelve o'clock the Company escort His Excellency, the Governor, the Honourable the Lieutenant-Governor, and Council, with both branches of the Legislature (who always adjourn upon these occasions), and the invited guests, to the first church, where divine service is performed, and a sermon preached. The service being ended, they escort His Excellency and other guests to the Faneuil Hall, where the annual dinner is provided. At dinner the Captain presides at the head of the centre table, where the company is seated; on the right of the Captain His Excellency is seated, and on the left the preacher, and next to him the President of Harvard College. The Lieutenant presides at the right centre table, where the military guests are seated; and the Ensign at the left centre table, where the clergy are seated; the Adjutant and Sergeants preside at the foot of each table.

When the weather is bad, some large covered place is selected where the ceremonies of exchanging the badges of office are performed, as well as the space will admit of, but no evolutions are practised. In fine weather the Governor and the guests retire



DRUM-MAJOR DANIEL SIMPSON.

from table about four o'clock, and the Company then marches to their allotted square at the north-western corner of the Common, when they commence the public ceremonies of the day by calling the roll of active and honorary members according to seniority, and then ballot for officers for the ensuing year. The votes are counted on the drum-head, and, when declared, the drummer beats the roll three times for the Captain, twice for the Lieutenant, and once for the Ensign. His Excellency and the Honourable Council are then informed of the election, and their approbation is requested, which is communicated by one of the Aides-de-camp to the Governor.

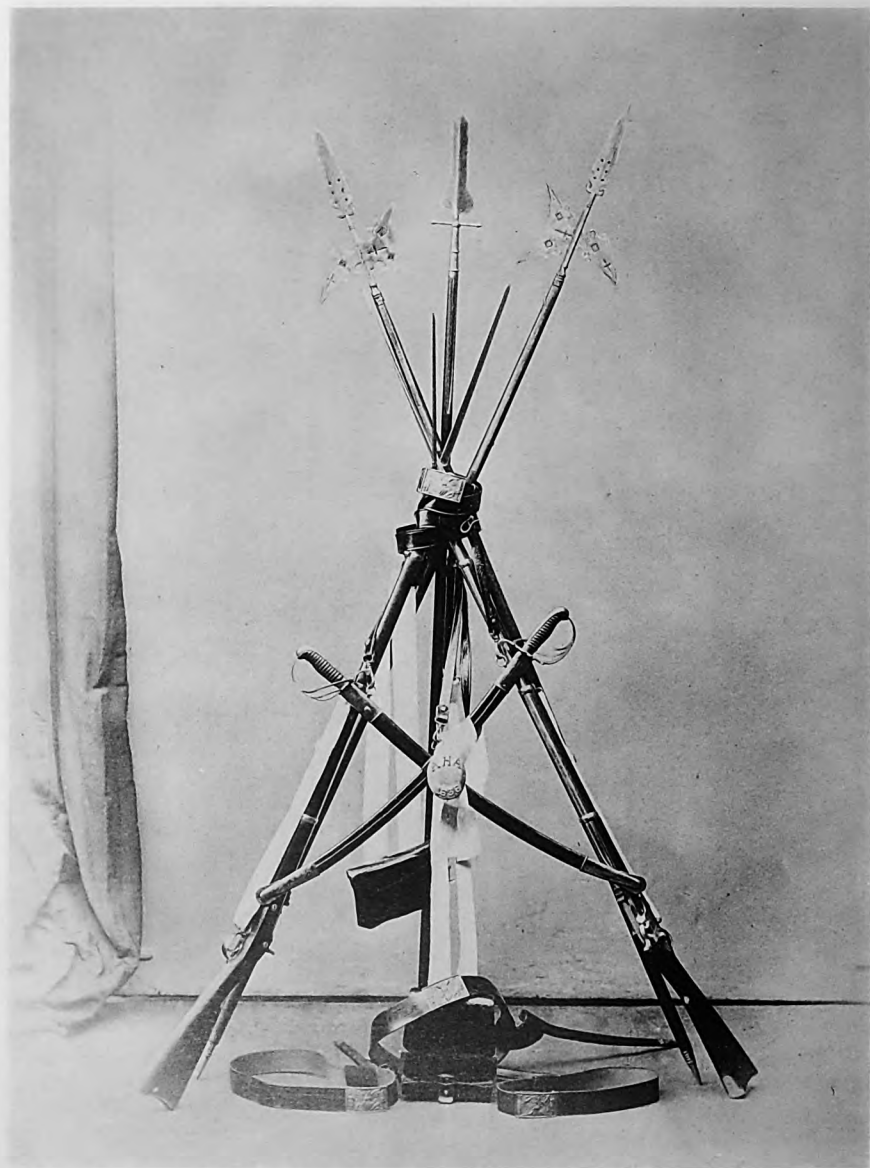
The Company then repair to the State House, and escort His Excellency the Governor, the Hon. the Lieutenant-Governor, the Council, and the invited guests within the square.

On His Excellency entering the square a salute of thirteen guns is fired by the detachment in charge of the field-pieces. His Excellency is then escorted to the chair of state in the centre of the western side, supported by the civil officials on his right, and the military on the left; the Company pay the usual standing and marching salutes, after which they perform such evolutions as the Commander thinks proper, and are then wheeled up so as to form three sides of a square, when the old Commander takes leave of them.

The Company being again formed in line in open order, the band playing "common time," the Captain marches from the right as far as the centre, when he turns to the right, and proceeds on to the Governor to resign the insignia of his office. When the Captain has arrived at the centre, and turned to the right, the Lieutenant commences marching from his post on the left, to the right of the Company to assume the command. The last word of command given by the old Commander is, "Carry arms," at which position they remain until he has saluted His Excellency and resigned his badges; when the Lieutenant may change their position if he thinks proper, bringing them to the shoulder, and support, as the late Captain returns to the ranks. The old Commander having arrived at about eight paces distance from the Governor, halts and pays the standing salute, and, advancing a little, addresses His Excellency, concluding hi

address on resignation by delivering the espoutoon to His Excellency; he then uncovers and listens to what the Governor shall please to say, which being finished, he replaces his hat, turns to the rightabout and marches through the centre to the rear, the band playing in quick time, where he is divested of his sword and ornaments, and putting on the accoutrements of the newly-elected Commander, who by this time has left his post and retired to the rear, takes his place in line as a common soldier. The band again plays in quick time, and the New Commander marches through the centre direct to His Excellency, halts when eight paces distant, and uncovers, when, advancing a little, the Governor addresses him, concluding by placing in his hands the espoutoon, which he receives after replacing his hat, pays the standing salute, and replies to His Excellency's address. He then turns to the rightabout, and, while the band plays "common time," marches to the centre of the Company, and when he has approached within about twenty paces from the Colours, the Lieutenant gives the command to present arms, and when he arrives close in front of them he pays the marching salute, and turns to the left, the Lieutenant at the same time moving back to his post on the left of the Company.

The first word of command given by the new Commander is "shoulder arms," and after a short pause the old Lieutenant marches to the centre and turns to the left, the band playing "common time," and proceeds to his Excellency, to whom he resigns in a similar manner as the old Commander, and returns like him in quick time to the rear. Having exchanged his sword and ornaments for the accoutrements of the newly-elected Lieutenant, he takes his post in the line, and the newly-elected Lieutenant proceeds in quick time to his Excellency, as the new Commander had done, where he is commissioned in a similar manner, and, having received the badge of his office, marches in "common time" to the centre, salutes, and, turning to the right, marches to his post on the left of the Company, who present arms when he is about twenty paces distant from the Colours. The old Ensign then resigns his office in a similar way, by proceeding direct from his post and delivering the Colours to the Governor; and as soon as he has returned to the rear of the



TROPHY OF ARMS AS NOW USED.

Espontoons, Halberds, Muskets, Sabres, Belts, and Cartridge-boxes.

centre, the newly-elected Ensign proceeds to his Excellency, and is commissioned in the same manner as the others. He then faces the Company with the Colours, and marches towards them, and when within twenty paces of his post he waves the Colours, the Company at the same time presenting arms.

All the Commissioned Officers march up in succession in the same manner, and return after resignation in quick time, the newly-elected Officers marching up in turn, and after being commissioned return to their respective posts, the Company remaining at the "carry arms" as they march up, and at the "support arms" as they return, when they present arms. The esponsion is considered the Commission of the Captain and Lieutenant, as the pike and half-pike were formerly, and the Standard or "Colours" represents the Commission of the Ensign.

The old Sergeants then repair through the centre to the new Commander, and resign by delivering their halberds to him, the drummer standing by to receive them; they salute, uncover, and address the Commander, through the Orderly, to which he replies in a manner similar to the ceremony gone through by the Commissioned Officers.

They then return through the centre to the rear, and exchange places and accoutrements with the newly-elected Sergeants, who repair to the new Commander, and he presents them with the halberds, which qualifies them for their office. The new Sergeants having taken post, the first, or Orderly Sergeant, who always acts as Adjutant, delivers his halberd to the Sergeant *pro tem.*, and immediately draws his sword, and proceeds to the Commander for orders. His Excellency is then informed that the Company is duly organised, and the new Commander closes the day by paying the usual standing and marching salutes. His Excellency is then escorted to his residence, and the Company retire with their guests to Faneuil Hall, where a collation is prepared for them.

It will thus be seen that this Company is even more conservative in maintaining their ancient customs and ceremonies than their parent Company in England, where the annual election of officers, the annual sermons, feasts, and many other ancient

customs, have gradually fallen into disuse; the old halberds and pikes of the Company being now only kept as curiosities and ornaments, having been replaced by modern fire-arms.

Only a very brief sketch can here be given of the history of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company since the close of the last century. The Company has always been "A Nursery for training up soldiers in Military discipline," and the names of the most distinguished officers of the Colonial, and, subsequently, the State Militia and Volunteers, are to be found upon its rolls. The Company had its representatives in the old Indian wars, and also in the war waged on the American Continent between Great Britain and France in the conquest of Canada, Cape Breton, and Prince Edward's Island.

The majority of the original members of the Company were Puritans, and some of them returned to England to serve in the armies of the "Godly Parliament."

When, years afterwards, the Protestant sovereigns William and Anne had succeeded to the British throne, loyalty became a virtue in the colony of Massachusetts, and the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company was faithful in its allegiance to the British throne.

The Corps repeatedly manifested its pride at being a part of the Military forces of the British nation, but it was nevertheless jealous of the invasion of its rights, as the English race always are. Great resistance was made to any interference on the part of the Colonial Governors with its privileges, especially that of the annual election of Officers. They cheerfully taxed themselves, and provided men, money, and provisions for the royal expeditions for the conquest of the French colonies in America; but they would not submit to the despotism which Lord Bute prevailed upon George III. to adopt. When the struggle for independence was commenced, a few members of the Corps remained loyal to the Crown; but the greater part zealously advocated the principles of the revolution, and many of them served in the armies commanded by Washington. Amongst these was Henry Knox, a Boston bookseller, who received in the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company the first rudiments of military education, raised a regiment of Artillery for the Revo-



FANEUIL HALL, BOSTON.

Head-quarters of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

lutionary Army, became a General, and was subsequently appointed Secretary for War in the Cabinet of President Washington. Another member and Commander of the Company was William Heath, who was one of the first General Officers appointed in the Revolutionary Army. He served throughout the war, and retired with the rank of Major-General.

In the subsequent war of 1812 with Great Britain; in the wars of 1836 with the Florida Indians; with Mexico in 1846, and in the recent Civil War, the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company has always been well-represented; and it has come to be regarded as a high honour by the principal Citizens, Governors, Senators, and Representatives in Congress, Judges, and the leading citizens of every profession, to be enrolled as members of the Company.

The Head-quarters of the Company were originally in the State House, the upper stories of which were occupied by the Colonial Legislature. They afterwards removed to Faneuil Hall, a building presented to the city of Boston by a wealthy citizen named Peter Faneuil, in 1742, for public purposes; the lower part or ground-floor as a market, the second story as a hall, to be used, free, by the citizens of Boston, under certain restrictions.

In 1762 the building was enlarged to its present size, and the following year James Otis, an early apostle of American freedom, while addressing a large audience in this hall, dedicated it to liberty, and it has since been known as the "Cradle of Liberty." Its walls have echoed to the voices of the greatest men of Massachusetts since its erection, and in every great public emergency the citizens of Boston, or delegates from the entire State, assemble together to take counsel within its hallowed precincts.

The entire upper story is used by the Company, where the Drill Room is situated, and round which portraits of many celebrated Commanders are hung (from which those here given have been taken); there are also numerous small rooms adjoining, for the officers, for meetings, and where the arms and equipments of the Company are stored. The illustration here given of Faneuil Hall is from a photograph taken on the 17th of June, 1875, the Centennial of the battle of Bunker's Hill. The Com-

pany now numbers almost 700 members, who are especially exempted by law, like the Honourable Artillery Company of London, from serving on juries.

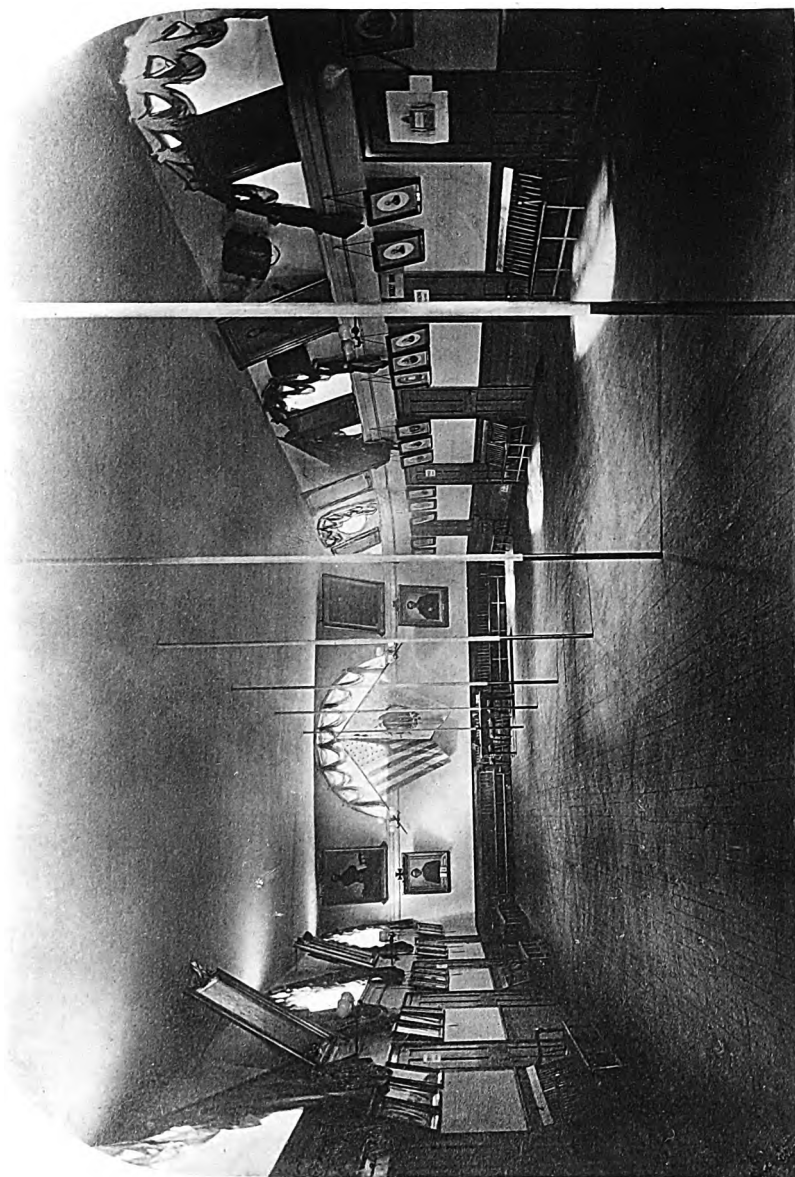
Until within the last fifty years the Colours of the Company were displayed early in the morning on the day of parade, from a house at the corner of King Street (now State Street) and Cornhill (now Washington Street), as has been already described, and a drummer marched through the town beating "the troop." Now the drums and fifes play before the houses of those officers who reside in Boston, and in some of the principal public places.

The Company originally carried the Colonial flag, which was of blue silk, quartered with a white field, on which was the red cross of St. George, with a pine tree in the corner. At the commencement of the Revolution, the red cross was omitted, and a pine tree on a white ground was substituted. When the State Government was adopted, a white flag was used, bearing on one side the armorial bearings of the State, and on the other those of the United States. Later, after the incorporation of Boston as a city, the armorial bearings of the city were substituted for those of the United States, but a silk national flag, the "stars and stripes" was also carried.

The Colours now consist of the American flag, and a Company Colour of white silk, on the obverse of which Washington is represented with the old "Pine Tree" flag of revolutionary fame, and on the reverse the coat of arms of Massachusetts, consisting of a shield, on which is a full-length Indian carrying his bow and arrows, with the motto "*Ense Petit Placidam Sub Libertate Quietem.*"

The portraits of the Drummers of the Company here given are of celebrated characters. Drum-Major Daniel Simpson was born in 1790, and commenced drumming at ten years of age; he has been attached to the Company since the year 1810, and still continues to perform his duties. In the portraits of "Dan and Si" may be seen a drum, now famous for having been used at the Battle of Bunker's Hill on the 17th of June, 1775.

The Commander always carries a halberd, the other officers carrying pikes, and the Sergeants half-pikes; the Commander



INTERIOR OF THE DRILL-HALL.
Head-quarters, Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

also wears a silver gorget of the pattern worn in the British Army at the beginning of the present century, which formerly was worn by all their officers.

The Trophy of Arms here represented are those still used on the anniversary in June, the Officers carrying the espontoons, the Non-commissioned Officers halberds, and the Infantry division of the Company muskets; but they all wear in the ranks the uniform of any other Corps to which they belong, which causes that portion of the Company to present rather a curious appearance on parade to one unacquainted with the peculiarity of the Corps; for example, on the Fall field-day in 1877 the uniform of every grade might be seen in the ranks, from privates up to and including that of Major-General and members of Congress, all carrying muskets and performing all the duties of privates. After the expiration of one year's service all the officers of the Company return to the ranks. The Artillery division is dressed in black, with a chapeau bearing the badge of the Company on a rosette, black sword-belt, white cross-belt, and carry sabres.

The Company retains its old organisation as a Company of Infantry, commanded by a Captain, and First and Second Lieutenants—but really parades as a battalion, having an Adjutant, and sometimes as many as twelve Companies, all commanded by Sergeants.

Some idea may be formed of the large number of officers of other regiments who retain their rank although serving as members of this Company, by the list of the Officers for the years 1870-71; this has not been selected as an example in consequence of an unusual number of Officers holding subordinate posts, but as the list is printed with the Rules and Regulations revised and published in that year.*

* These Rules and Regulations are given in full in Appendix F.

ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

BOSTON, JUNE 6TH, 1870.

Two Hundred and Thirty-third Election.

OFFICERS FOR 1870 AND 1871.

CAPTAIN.

Brigadier-General G. H. Pierson, of Salem.

FIRST LIEUTENANT.

Captain A. A. Folsom, of Boston.

SECOND LIEUTENANT.

Major Charles W. Stevens, of Boston.

ADJUTANT.

Brigadier-General A. D. Wass, of Boston.

FIRST SERGEANT.

Sergeant W. G. McKown, of Boston.

SECOND SERGEANT.

Lieutenant J. Sillaway, Jun., of Canton.

THIRD SERGEANT.

Colonel E. B. Dow, of Boston.

FOURTH SERGEANT.

Sergeant A. S. Haven, of Boston.

FIFTH SERGEANT.

Sergeant J. C. Farnham, of Boston.

SIXTH SERGEANT.

Captain J. M. Cushing, of Boston.

SEVENTH SERGEANT.

Z. H. Thomas, Jun., of Boston.

EIGHTH SERGEANT.

A. H. Caton, of Boston.

NINTH SERGEANT.

Captain A. G. Smith, of Boston.

TENTH SERGEANT.

Lieutenant J. Watts, Jun., of Boston.

TREASURER AND PAYMASTER.

Captain J. G. Roberts, of Boston.

CLERK AND ASSISTANT-PAYMASTER.

Lieutenant G. H. Allen, of Boston.

QUARTERMASTER.

Captain C. S. Lambert, of East Cambridge.

ARMOURER.

Captain R. M. Barker, of Boston.



APPENDICES.

APPENDIX A.

CHARTER OF INCORPORATION AND ROYAL WARRANTS.

| | Reign. | Date. | Subject. |
|--------|-----------------|-------------------|---|
| No. 1. | Henry VIII. | 25th Aug., 1537 | Charter of Incorporation. |
| „ 2. | Charles I. ... | 8th March, 1632 | For Encouragement of the Company. |
| „ 3. | Charles II. ... | 9th Feb., 1681... | Annual Elections at the General Court suspended from year to year. Same Officers and Court to remain in office. |
| „ 4. | „ ... | 16th Feb., 1681 . | |
| „ 5. | „ ... | 11th Feb., 1682 . | |
| „ 6. | „ ... | 28th Feb., 1683 . | |
| „ 7. | „ ... | 27th Feb., 1684 . | |
| „ 8. | James II. ... | 6th June, 1685... | To suspend Annual Elections, &c. |
| „ 9. | William III. . | 22nd May, 1689 . | Restored the Right of Annual Election, &c. |
| „ 10. | „ ... | 3rd June, 1690 . | Appointing himself Captain-General, and in his absence the Duke of Norfolk. |
| „ 11. | „ ... | 21st March, 1697 | To Lieutenancy: Officers of Trained Bands to join the Artillery Company. |
| „ 12. | Aune ... | 26th June, 1702 | Confirms Previous Warrants: Prince George of Denmark Captain-General. |
| „ 13. | George I. ... | 5th May, 1715 | Confirming Previous Warrants: George, Prince of Wales to be Captain-General. |
| „ 14. | George III.... | 4th March, 1766 | Confirms Previous Warrants: George Augustus Frederick, Prince of Wales, Captain-General. |
| „ 15. | George IV. ... | 18th April, 1821 | Granting and Confirming the Ancient Armorial Bearings of the Company. |

| | | | |
|---------|---------------|------------------|---|
| No. 16. | William IV. . | 21st Aug., 1830 | Confirming Privileges and appointing himself Captain-General, and Duke of Sussex Colonel. |
| „ 17. | Victoria ... | 25th July, 1837 | Ditto: Duke of Sussex Captain-General <i>and Colonel</i> . |
| „ 18. | „ ... | 9th April, 1842 | Ditto: but reserving to Crown Appointment of Field Officers and Adjutant. |
| „ 19. | „ ... | 14th Sept., 1843 | Ditto: H.R.H. Prince Consort Captain-General. |
| „ 20. | „ ... | 10th Oct., 1849 | Ditto: but Reserving to Crown Appointment of <i>all</i> Officers, Commissions to endure for five years; Captain-General to appoint Regimental Sergeant-Major, and the Lieutenant-Colonel all other non-commissioned officers. |
| „ 21. | „ ... | 23rd July, 1863 | Ditto: H.R.H. Prince of Wales Captain-General. |

APPENDIX B.

ORDERS IN COUNCIL RELATING TO THE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

| No. | Reign. | Date. | Subject. |
|--------|----------------|------------------------|---|
| No. 1. | Elizabeth ... | 20th Nov., 1591 ... | Training and Exercise to be renewed. |
| „ 2. | James I. ... | 3rd July, 1612 ... | Number not to exceed 250. |
| „ 3. | „ ... | 11th Dec., 1614 ... | Permission to increase the number to 500. |
| „ 4. | Charles I. ... | 2nd March, 1631 [1632] | Election of Captain, and confirming former Orders. |
| „ 5. | „ ... | 18th April, 1632 ... | King to elect Captain; the Company, the Treasurer; the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, all other Officers. |
| „ 6. | „ ... | 4th July, 1634 ... | King to elect Captain; the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, the President; and the Company, all other Officers. |

APPENDIX C.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE MAINTENANCE OF ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.

| | Reign. | Date. | Subject. |
|--------|-----------------|----------------------|---|
| No. 1. | Elizabeth ... | 26th November, 1561. | |
| „ 2. | „ ... | 23rd April, 1570. | |
| „ 3. | „ ... | 25th June, 1571 ... | An Abstract of the Letters Patent to Sir H. Gilbert. |
| „ 4. | „ ... | 20th August, 1596. | |
| „ 5. | James I. ... | 1st February, 1605. | |
| „ 6. | Charles I. ... | 20th December, 1632. | |
| „ 7. | Charles II. ... | 20th April, 1665 ... | Petition of the London Archers for a New Patent, which was granted. |

APPENDIX D.

PETITIONS, &c., OF WILLIAM THOMAS, MASTER-GUNNER, TO THE QUEEN (ELIZABETH) AND PRIVY COUNCIL IN 1581-2, RELATING TO THE GUNNERS OF THE TOWER, &c.

- No. 1. Petition to the Queen; Supply of Gunners to Royal Navy, &c., 1581.
- „ 2. The Gunners of the Tower and the Artillery Garden, 1581.
- „ 3. Certain Reasons showing the Necessity for a “Corporation of Gunners,” 1582.
- „ 4. Draft of the proposed Charter for a Fraternity of Artillery; similar to that of the Artillery Company, 1582.
- „ 5. Suggestions to the Privy Council on the above scheme, 1582.

APPENDIX E.

Verses by the Marshal of the Company on the Completion of the New
Armoury in 1622.

APPENDIX F.

Rules and Regulations of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company
of Boston, Massachusetts.

APPENDIX A.

LETTERS PATENT, AND WARRANTS, GRANTED TO THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

No. 1.

THE CHARTER OF INCORPORATION, 25TH AUGUST, 1537.*

A Grant to **HENRY THE EIGHT &c** To all Judges Justices Maires
the fraternity Sheriffs Bailiffs Constables and other o^r Officers Mi-
or Guild of nistres and Subgiетts aswell w^t in the liberties as
Artillery. w^tout thies our Lres heryng or seyng Gretyng We
late you witt that of o^r grace especial certain science and mere
mocion we Have graunted and licenced And by theis Pnts Doo
graunte and licence for us & o^r heyres asmoche as in us is
unto our trusty and welbiloved S^rvntns & Subgiетts S^r Cristofer
Morres Knight Maister of o^r Ordennes Anthony Knevett and Peter
Mewtes Gentlemen of o^r Preve Chambre Overseers of the Fraternitie
or Guylde of Saint George And that they and every of them shalbe
Ov^rseers of the Science of Artillary that is to witt for Longe Bowes
Crosbowes and Handgonnes &c whiche S^r Christofer Morres Cornelis
Jhonson Anthony Antony and Henry Johnson that they and evry of
them shalbe Maisters and Rulers of the saide Science of Artillary as
afore is rehersed for Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes which
S^r Christofer Cornelis Anthony and Henry We by thies Pnts Doo
ordeigne make and conferme Foure Maisters and Rulers of the said
Felliship of Artillary for and during their lyves and that the said
Maisters and Rulers and their successors Maisters and Rulers alwaies

* Patent Roll, 29 Hen. VIII., Part 5, m. 45.

beinge foure of o^r S^rvnts Englisshemen or Denisens maye begyn founde edifie make ordeigne gadre knytte and establishe a certeyne Ppetuall Fraternitie of Saint George and that they maye have full pouer and auctoritie to chose accepte take and admitte into their said Fraternitie or Guylde all man^r honeste psons what so ev^r they be aswell being o^r S^rvnts and Subgietts as Strangers Denisens or not Denisens at their liberties And that the said Maisters and Rulers and suche brethern as they shall electe admitte take and accepte to them shall in thing and name be Oon Bodye and Cominaltie Corporate having succession Ppetually by the name of Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie of the Fraternitie or Guylde of Artillary of Longbowes Crosbowes and Handegonnes And the same Foure Maisters Rulers and Brethern and their successo^rs we incorporate and make Oon Bodye by theis Pnts and that the saide Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie and they^r successo^rs shall implede and be imploded by the name of Maisters and Rulers of the saide Bretherhed or Guylde And also shall have power and auctoritie to chose and electe among themselves w^t their assistance Foure undre Maisters and Rulers of the same Fraternitie or Guylde to ov^rsee and governe the same Fraternitie from tyme to tyme and to have the gov^rnaunce and custodie of suche Lands Tents Rents Possessions Goodds and Catalls as hereafre shall happen to be purchased bequethed given graunted or assigned by any man^r Pson or Psons to saide Fraternitie or Guylde and they ev^ry yere as it shall best pleas them shall mowe ordeigne and chose successively foure undre Maisters and Rulers Englisshmen Strangers Denisyngs or not Denisens of good name and fame And they or any of them if nede require to amove put out and discharge and an other in his or their name and place as ofte as shall please them to name put in electe and auctoris by the Counsaill of the Foure Maisters and Rulers and their saide Assistance AND FURTHERMORE that the same Maisters and Rulers maye have & use a Comon Seale for all things and necessities belonging to the saide Fraternitie or Guylde And that they maye be of habilitie or capacitie in the Lawe to implede or be imploded aunswer and be aunswered before any Judge or Justice Spuall or temporall what so ev^r they be in any Corte or Courtes of this o^r Realme And in all and singler Accions Demaunds Quarells Pleees Sutes reall or Psonall like as all other o^r Liegemen have habilitie and capacitie AND FURTHERMORE the said Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde amongs them selfs shall or maye have full auctoritie and power to make ordeigne and

establishe Lawes Ordynnes and Statutes for the good State Rule and Govⁿnaunce of the saide Fraternitie or Guilde for thencease and good cotinuance of the same and such Lawes Statuts and Ordynnes so made from tyme to tyme as ofte as by them shalbe thought necessary & convenient to chaunge and to transpose or kepe at their Pleas And to putt in use & execucon w^out hurte chalenge greve or Pturbaunce of us o^r heyres or successo^rs Officers Ministres or subgiетts or their heyres or successo^rs what so ev^r they be AND FURTHERMORE that the said Maister and Rulers and their successo^rs for the tyme beinge have full power and auctoritie to purchase Lands and Tents and other hereditaments what so ev^r they be whiche be not holden of us in Capite TO HAVE AND TO HOLDE to the saide Maisters Rulers and Cominaltie and their successo^rs the Statute of Mortemayne or other Statute or Statuts any other thinge passed to the cotrary notwstanding AND FURTHERMORE of o^r habundaunt grace We have graunted given and licenced and by theis Pnts Doo give graunte and licence unto o^r forsaid welbiloved S^rvntts and to ev^ry of them and to all and ev^ry their successo^rs Maisters Rulers Cominaltie and Brethern of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde that for the tyme shalbe aswell being o^r S^rvntts and Subgiетts as also Strangiers being Denisens or not Denisens being of and in the saide Fraternitie or Guylde for the better encrease of the defence of this o^r Realme and Maynetennce of the Science & Feate of Shoting in Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes that they and ev^ry of their successo^rs honest Psons of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde for their disporte and pastyme from tyme to tyme for ev^r hereafte and Ppetually may use and exercise the shoting in their Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes at all man^r Marks and Butts and at the Game of the Popinjaye and other Game or Games as at Fowle and Fowles as well in o^r Citie of London the suburbs of the same as in all other places whersoev^r it be wthin this o^r Realme of England Ireland Calice and o^r M^rches of Walys and elleswher wthin any of o^r Dominions Our Forrests Chaces and Pks w^out or spiall warraunte and the Game of the Heyron and Fesaunt wthin two miles of any of o^r Mano^rs Castelles or other places where we shall fortune to be or lye for the tyme only excepted and res^{rv}ed And also that the saide Maisters and Rulers and Brethern and their successo^rs and ev^ry Pticuler Pson of them maye reteigne and kepe their saide Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes in their Houses Chambers and other places and their S^rvntts to bere the same Crosbowes and Handegonnes when and as often as it shall like them at their libertie for ev^r w^out any damage daungier penaltie

losse or forfaiture to ensue unto them or any of them for the same But nevertheles the saide S^rvants that so shall cary their Maisters Crosbowes or Handgonnes shall not by vertue of this o^r Licence shote in the saide Crosbowes and Handgonnes at no man^r of Fowle And in case be that any suche S^rvaunt be taken shoting at any Fowle w^t any Crosbowe or Handgonne the said Offender so taken to forfaiture the penaltie acco^rdinge to the Acte (this Fraternitie or Licence notw^tstanding) And also that non other then the Fraternitie or Guyld aforesaide shall wⁱn any Pte of this o^r Realme or Dominion kepe any other Bretherhed or Guyld onles it be by licence of the forsaide Maisters and Rulers of the said Fraternitie or Guyld AND FURTHERMORE of o^r more ample grace by thies Pnts we doo licence the foresaid Maisters and Rulers & Cominaltie of the saide Fraternitie or Guild or any pticuler Pson or Psons & ev^y of them to use and weare any man^r Imbrowdery or any Cognisaunce of Sylv^r at his or their libertie in their Gownes Jacketts Coots and Dubletts and any man^r of Sylks as Velvet Satten and Damaske the colo^rs of Purple and Scarlett only excepted in their Gownes and Jacketts and all and singler Furies in their Gownes or elsewhere not above Furred of Martirnes w^toute ronnyng into any Man^r daungier forfaycture losse or penaltie (any Acte of Apparell or any other Acte Pclamacon thing or matier in any wise hadd made or given or to be hadd made or given to the cotrary notw^tstanding) AND FURTHERMORE of o^r further grace especiall we have licenced And by theis Pnts doo licence the forsaide Maisters and Rulers and their saide successo^rs for the tyme being that they nor any of them shall from hensforthe be empanelled or copelled to be upon any man^r of Queste or Jury upon what matier soev^r it be wⁱn o^r Citie of London or other place wⁱn this o^r Realme And ov^r this we woll and Graunte for us o^r heyres and successo^rs to the saide Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie by theis Pnts that when and as often as the said Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie and their successors or any of them shall use pronounce and openly speke this usuall worde comenly used to be spoken before he or they shote, that is to say this worde Faste and afre this worde spoken if it shall happen any Pson or Prsons by the Ov^rsight of any Pson or Psons ronnyng passing or goyng bitwen any suche Shoter and the Marke or Place wherto any suche Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie or any of them shall hereafre shote to be kyllled or otherwise hurte So the same be a usuall and a knowne Marke sett in a open place accustomed to be shote at that

then any suche Maister Ruler and Brother what so evr shall happen not by that occasion be attached arrested imprisoned sued vexed troubled or otherwise inquieted nor shall not be impeched nor otherwise molested or troubled for the same nor shall not suffre deathe nor lose any membre or forfeite any man^r goods lands tents or hereditaments or any Goodds Cattells or other Proffitts for the same Any Acte Statute Proclamacion Pvision or any other Matier or thing in any wise hadd made given proclamed or provided or hereafre to be hadd given made Pclamed or provided at any tyme to the cotrary notw^tstanding. AND FURTHERMORE we woll and Graunte that thies o^r Lres Patents shall passe undre o^r Great Seale w^tout fyne or fee greate or small in o^r Chauncery to o^r use o^r to thuse of o^r heyres or in the Hanaper of o^r said Chauncery to be cotented or paide for the same. That expresse mention &c In Witnes &c. Witness ourself at Westm^r the XXVth daye of August.

Per Bre de Privato Sigillo &c.

This Charter was not engrossed on the Patent Rolls until the year 1829, for reasons which the following will explain. This Petition is now also endorsed on the Patent Roll of the twenty-ninth year of Henry VIII.

To the Right Honorable the Master of the Rolls.

The humble Petition of the Honorable Artillery Company.

Sheweth,

That the said Company was incorporated by Charter under the Great Seal of England bearing date on or about the twenty-fifth day of August in the twenty-ninth year of the reign of His late Majesty King Henry the Eighth.

That the Original Charter has been lost and upon search in the Patent Rolls in the Chapel of the Rolls the Inrolment thereof appears to have been casually omitted but the Writ of Privy Seal from which the same was passed under the Great Seal bearing date the twenty-ninth day of April in the twenty-ninth year of the reign of His late Majesty King Henry the Eighth is remaining in the Rolls Chapel among the Privy Seals and Signed Bills from which Charters and Grants are inrolled upon the Patent Rolls.

That the said Company has always acted upon the knowledge that

it was incorporated and is in possession of a printed Copy of the said Charter and His present Majesty was graciously pleased to hold the Chief Command in the said Company and still holds the same and your Petitioners are desirous that the said Charter should be inrolled from the said Privy Seal on the Patent Rolls of the twenty-ninth year of the reign of His said Majesty King Henry the Eighth in order that an Exemplification of the said Grant or a Copy thereof may be taken therefrom as occasion shall require.

Your Petitioners therefore most humbly pray that your Honor will be pleased to order the said Charter to be inrolled accordingly.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

26 May 1829.

Be it so.

J. LEACH.

No. 2.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM KING CHARLES I., DATED
8TH MARCH, 1632.*

CHARLES R.

Trustie and wellbeloved we greet you well. Whereas we are informed that the worthie and Comendable institucon of yo^r voluntary Company of the Artillerie garden, hath been soe well pursued by yo^r industrious & forward endeavo^{rs} that you are not only become ready and skilfull in the knowledge and vse of Armes and military discipline but that from thence as from a fruitfull Nursery, all the trayned bands of our Citie of London and divers of the Companies of the Counties adioyning have beene supplied wth fitt and able Leaders and Officers whereby our Service hath received much Advantage and the kingdome in gnrll a very great benefitt. And being vnwilling that a Societie of soe good vse vnto the publique, and of somuch safetie & honor to our renowned Citie of London should be dissolved or discontinued as we are given to vnderstand it is in great danger through some distractions w^{ch} yo^w have lately suffered about the Election of yo^r Captaine: We have thought fitt hereby to will you not to be hastie to disband but if ye find that ye are molested needlesly or vniustly by any then have recourse to vs and you shall find such due encouragem^t as soe comendable a Societie deserves Given att our Court att Newmarkett the Eighth day of March in the Seaventh yeare of our Raigne.

To our trustie and wellbeloved Humfrie Smith, Ald^r

President of the Company excercisinge Armes in
the Artillerie garden London and to the Rest of
the Companie.

* Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXIV., No. 17. A Copy of the Order in Council of the 3rd July, 1612, was annexed, endorsed, "Received March, 1632."

No. 3.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM CHARLES II., DATED 9TH
FEBRUARY, 1681, SUSPENDING THE ELECTION
AT THE GENERAL COURT.*

CHARLES R.

Trusty & Welbeloved, Wee greet you well ; Whereas Wee are well satisfied of ye Loyalty and abilities of ye present officers Employed in ye Artillery Company, and are therefore willing, out of Our concerne, and care, for ye good Governmt thereof, that noe alteracon or change bee made therein, by removing any of them out of there Employmts, or Introducing any others ; Wee have thought fit hereby to Signify ye same to you, as a matter conducing to our Service, wherein accordingly Wee expect your ready compliance, & soe not doubting thereof, Wee bid you farewell.

Given at our Court, at Whitehall, 9th day of February, 1684, in ye three and thirtieth yeare of Our Reigne.

By His Majties Comand,
CONWAY.

* Court Book B, p. 283, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House).

No. 4.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM CHARLES II., DATED 16TH
FEBRUARY, 1681, EXPLAINING PREVIOUS WAR-
RANT OF 9TH OF FEBRUARY.*

CHARLES R.

Trusty & Wellbeloved, Wee greet you well; Whereas we are given to understand that some doubts have arisen concerning ye Explanation of Our Lre, under our Royall Signature, bearing date ye 9th of this Instant February: Wee, therefore, out of our Royall care of ye Welfare & good Governmt of Our Artillery Company, have thought fit hereby to signify to you, that it is Our Will and pleasure that all those who were in any Employmt, Trust, Office, or Comand in that Our Artillery Company the last yeare, shall remayne and continue soe for ye yeare Ensuing; and in Case of ye Death, or other Incapacity of any of them, that ye Court of Assistants proceed to a free Choice for supplying those Vacancies. And wee do further direct, that ye Leadings in ye Artillery Ground shall bee performed as they have been for these two or three yeares last past, and noe otherwise, Wherewith Wee Expect your ready Compliance, and soe not doubting thereof, Wee bid you farewell.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, ye 16th day of February, 168~~1~~², in ye three and thirtieth yeare of Our Reigne.

By His Majties Comand,

CONWAY.

* Court Book B, p. 283, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House).

No. 5.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM CHARLES II., DATED 11TH
FEBRUARY, 1682, SUSPENDING THE ELECTION
AT THE GENERAL COURT.*

CHARLES R.

Trusty & welbeloved, Wee greet you well, We being well satisfied of the Loyalty, good affection & abilities of the present Officers & Commanders of Our Artillery Company, & haveing received good testimony of theire Conduct and Leadinge for these two or three yeares last past, We are Willing to shew not only our Royall favor, but our speciall concerne, for the Welfare of our saide Company & for the preservation of it in its ancient good Order & Discipline, by continuing the same Officers & Comanders in Our saide Company, without removing or changing any of them. Our will & pleasure therefore is, that all those who have bin employed this last yeare in any Trust, Office, or Command, in Our said Company shall remaine & Continue so for the yeare ensuing, unlesse the Court of Assistants see cause to remove or chainge any of them, that the Court of Assistants do forthwith proceed to a free Choice of persons fittly qualified for the supplying of such vacancies. Our farther Will & pleasure is, that the Leadings of our said Company in the Artillery ground, shall be performed & observed as they have been, for these two or three yeares last past & no otherwise. And so expecting yo^r ready Compliance therein We bid you farewell.

Given at Our Court at Whitehall the 11th day of Febr 168 $\frac{1}{2}$ in the foure & Thirtieth yeare of Our Reigne.

By His Maties Command,

L. JENKINS.

* Court Book B, p. 299, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). Also Military Entry Book (Home Office), 1667-1682, p. 407.

No. 6.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM CHARLES II, DATED LAST
DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1683, SUSPENDING THE
ELECTION AT THE GENERAL COURT.*

CHARLES R.

Trusty and well-beloved, wee greet you well. Wee being satisfied of ye Loyalty, good affection, and abilities of the present Officers and Commanders of our Artillery Company; and having received good testimony of their conduct & Leading for these Two or Three years last past, Wee are willing to shew, not onely our Royall favour, But our speciall Concerne for the welfare of our said Company. And for the better preservation of it in its ancient good order & Discipline, by continueing the same Officers and Comanders in our said Company, without removeing or changeing any of them; Oure will and pleasure therefore is, That all those whoe have bin imployed this Last yeare, in any Trust, Office, or Comand in our said Company, shall remaine and continue for the yeare ensueing, unless the Court of Assistance doe see cause to remove or change any of them, which we leave wholly to their discretion. And in case of the Death, Removeall, or any other Incapacity of any of them, That the Court of Assistants doe forthwith proceed to a new Choyce of Persons fitly qualified for the supplying of such vacancies. Our further Will and Pleasure is, That the Leadings of our said Company in the Artillery Ground, shalbe performed and observed, as they have bin for these two or three years Last past, and noe otherwise. And soe expecting your ready Compliance herein, Wee bid you farewell.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, the Last Day of February, 1683,
In the five & Thirtieth yeare of our Reigne.

By His Maj^{ty}s Comand,

L. JENKINS.

To Our Trusty & Wellbeloved The Presidt, Vice-
Presidt, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of our
Artillery Company.

* Court Book B, p. 329, a Head-quarters (the Armoury House).

No. 7.

ROYAL WARRANT, CHARLES II., DATED 27TH FEBRUARY, 1684, SUSPENDING THE ELECTION AT THE GENERAL COURT.*

CHARLES R.

Trusty and well-beloved, wee greet you well. We being well satisfied of ye Loyalty, good affection, and abillities of the present Officers and Comanders of our Artillery Company; and haveing received good testimony of their conduct & Leadings for these Two or Three years last past, Wee are willing to shew, not onely our Royall favour, But our speciall Concerne for the welfare of our said Company. And for the better preservation of it in its ancient good order & Discipline, by continueing the said Officers and Comanders in our said Company, without removeing or changeing any of them; Oure will and pleasure therefore is, That all those whoe have bin employed this Last yeare, in any Trust, Office, or Comand in our said Company, shall remaine and continue so for the yeare ensueing, unless the Court of Assistance doe see cause to remove or change any of them, which we leave wholly to your discretion. And in case of the Death, Removeall, or any other Incapacity of any of them, That the Court of Assistants doe forthwith proceed to a new Choyce of Persons fitly qualified for the supplying of such vacancies. Our further Will and Pleasure is, That the Leadings of our said Company in the Artillery Ground, shalbe performed and observed, as they have bin for these two or three years Last past, and noe otherwise. And soe expecting your ready Compliance herein, Wee bid you farewell.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, the 27th day of February, 168 $\frac{3}{4}$,
In the six & Thirtieth yeare of our Reigne.

By His Maj^{ties} Comand,

L. JENKINS.

To our Trusty & Welbeloved The Presidt, Vice-
Presidt, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of Our
Artillery Company.

* Court Book B, p. 329, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). Also Military Entry Book (Home Office), 1682-1688, p. 98.

No. 8.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM JAMES II., DATED 6TH JUNE,
1685, SUSPENDING THE ELECTIONS AT THE GENERAL
COURT.*

JAMES R.

Trusty & wel-beloved, Wee greet you well. Wee being well satisfied of ye Loyalty, good affection, & abilityes of ye Present Officers & Comanders of our Artillery Company, & having received good testimony of thare Conduct and Leadings for these two or three years last past, We are willing to shew, not onely our Royall favour, but our speciall concerne for ye welfare of our saed Company, & for ye better Preservation of it in its ancient good Order & Discipline, by continuing ye same Officers & Commanders in our saed Company, without removing or changing any of them; Our will and Pleasure therefore is, that all those who have bin employed this last year, in any trust, Office, or Command in our saed Company, shall remaine and Continue soe for ye yeare ensuing, unless ye Court of Assistants doe see cause to change or remove any of them, which we leave fully to y^r discretion; & in case of ye death, removall, or any other incapacete of any of them, yt ye Court of Assistants doe forthwith proceede to a new choyce of persons fitley qualified for ye supplying such vacances. Our further will and pleasure therefore is, yt ye Leadings of our saed Company in ye Artillery Garden, shall be performed and observed, as they have bin for these two or three years last past, and noe otherwise. And soe, expecting your redevy compliance herein, We bid you farewell.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, ye 6th day of June, 1685, in the first yeare of our Reigne.

By His Maj^{ties} Command,

SUNDERLAND.

* Court Book B, p. 362, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House).

No. 9.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM WILLIAM III., DATED 22ND
MAY, 1689, RESTORING THEIR RIGHT OF FREE
ELECTION, AND EMPOWERING THEM TO HOLD
COURTS, &c.*

WILLIAM R.

Trusty and Wellbeloved We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the loyalty and good affection of that Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and Discipline, Have thought fitt to authorize and impower and accordingly do hereby authorize and impower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Armes, as well in the ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moor Fields, as in other places where they have formerly used to exercise. And We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts free and publick for the annuall choice of Officers, and other occasions, as may be necessary and requisite for the better government of the said Company according to the ancient Rules and practice thereof, in such place and places, and at such time and times as hath been usuall. And for so doing this shall be your Warrant. And so We bid you farewell.

Given at Our Court at Hampton Court the 22nd day of May 1689 in the First year of Our Reigne.

By His Maj^{ties} Command,

SHREWSBURY.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistance of
Our Artillery Company of Our City of London.

* Copied from the original Warrant in the Royal Warrants and Letter Book at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). This is the earliest *original* Warrant that the Company now possesses. Also copied in Court Book B, p. 382.

No. 10.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM WILLIAM III., DATED 3RD JUNE, 1690, APPOINTING HIMSELF CAPTAIN-GENERAL; THE DUKE OF NORFOLK TO SUPPLY HIS PLACE DURING HIS ABSENCE.*

WILLIAM R.

Trusty and Wellbeloved, We Greet you well. We having formerly granted you the Injoyment of your ancient Priviledges, in the practise & exercise of Armes, &c., according to your usage & custome, do now for your further Incouragement, acquaint you that We being well satisfied of your Loyalty & dutifull respects both to Our Person and Government do think fit to declare ourselfe to be the Captaine-Generall of your Company, And shall testifie our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to expresse it in, And in Our Absence We do appoint Our Right Trusty and Right Entirely beloved Cousin & Counsellor Henry, Duke of Norfolk, to supply our place untill Our Returne. And so We bid you Farewell.

Given at Our Court at Kensington, the 3^d Day of June, 1690, in the Second Yeare of Our Reigne.

By his Maj^{ty}s Command,

NOTTINGHAM.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved, the President, Vice-President, and Treasurer of Our Artillery Company of Our City of London.

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). See Royal Warrants and Letter Book; also in Court Book B, p. 383.

No. 11.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM WILLIAM III., 21ST MARCH, 1697, TO THE LIEUTENANCY OF THE CITY, DIRECTING THE OFFICERS OF THE TRAINED BANDS TO BECOME MEMBERS OF THE ARTILLERY COMPANY.*

WILLIAM R.

Trusty & well-beloved, we greet you well. Having formerly confirmed The Artillery Company of our City of London according to its ancient priviledges and Customs, and it being our desire that it may be Continued & preserved in such manner as may best answer ye end of its first institution, We Therefore Recommend unto y^r Care, that all the Commission Officers of ye Trained Bands of o^r said City may List Themselves members of The said Society, that so by the frequent practice of arms according to their Rules they may be the Better qualified to perform their trust, in their Respective Commands, and see not doubting of yo^r Ready Compliance with our will & pleasure herein, We bid you Heartily Farewell.

Given at o^r Court at Kensington, ye 21ST day of March, 1694, in the ninth year of our Reign.

By His Majestie's Command,

WILL. TRUMBULL.

To Our Trusty & Well-beloved

The Lieutenancy of our City of London.

* Court Book C, p. 50, at Head-quarters (the Armoury House).

No. 12.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM QUEEN ANNE, DATED 26TH JUNE, 1702, CONFIRMING PREVIOUS WARRANTS, AND APPOINTING PRINCE GEORGE OF DENMARK CAPTAIN-GENERAL.*

ANNE R.

Trusty and Welbeloved, Wee Greet you well ; Wee being well Satisfied of the loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company, And being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of itt in its Ancient good order and Discipline have thought fitt to Authorize and Impower, and accordingly do hereby Authorize and Impower you frequently to Exercise Our said Company in Arms, as well in the Ground Commonly called the Artillery Ground, near Moorfields, as in other places where they have formerly used to Exercise ; and wee do hereby likewise give you full Power and Authority to hold Courts free and Publick for the Anuall Choice of Officers, and other occasions as may be necessary & requisite for the better Government of the Said Company according to the Ancient rules and Practice thereof, in Such place and places, and att such time and times, as hath been usuall ; wee likewise recomend unto your Care that all the Commission Officers of our Traine Bands of the said City may list themselves Members of the said Society that So by the frequent practice of Arms according to their Rules, They may be the better Qualified to perform their trust in their respective Commands, And for so doing this Shall be your Warrant : And for your further Encouragement, Wee do think fitt to declare Our Most dear husband Prince George of Denmark, Captain-Generall of your Company, and Shall testifie Our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for us to Express itt in ; And so We bid you farewell.

Given at Our Court at St. James's, the 26th Day of June, 1702, In the First year of Our Reign.

By Her Majty's Command,

NOTTINGHAM.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistance of Our Artillery Company of Our City of London.

* Copied from the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). Royal Warrants and Letter Book. Also copied in Court Book C, p. 115.

No. 13.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM GEORGE I., DATED 5TH MAY, 1715, CONFIRMING THEIR PRIVILEGES, AND APPOINTING GEORGE, PRINCE OF WALES, CAPTAIN-GENERAL.*

GEORGE R.

Trusty and Welbeloved We Greet you well. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it, in its ancient good Order and Discipline, have thought fit to authorize and empower, and accordingly do hereby authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms, as well in the ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moorfields, as in other places where they have formerly used to exercise, and We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority, to hold Courts free and publick for the annual choice of Officers, and other occasions, as maybe necessary and requisite for the better Government of the said Company, according to the ancient Rules and practice thereof, in such place and places, and at such time and times, as hath been usual, We likewise recommend unto your care, that all the Commission Officers of Our Traine Bands of the said City may list themselves Members of the said Society, that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their Rules, they may be the better qualified to perform their Trust, in their respective Commands, And for so doing this shall be your Warrant; And for your further Encouragement We do think fit to declare our most Dear Son George, Prince of Wales, Captain-General of your Company, and shall testify Our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in. And so We bid you Farewell. Given at Our Court at St. James's, the Fifth Day of May, 1715, In the First Year of Our Reign.

By His Maj^{ties} Command,

TOWNSHEND.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistance of Our Artillery Company of Our City of London.

* Copied from the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House). Royal Warrants and Letter Book. Also copied in Court Book D, p. 8.

No. 14.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM GEORGE III., DATED 4TH MARCH, 1766, CONFIRMING THE PRIVILEGES OF THE COMPANY, AND APPOINTING GEORGE AUGUSTUS FREDERICK, PRINCE OF WALES, CAPTAIN-GENERAL.*

GEORGE R.

Trusty and Welbeloved, We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good Affection of Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the Welfare and Preservation of It in its ancient good Order and Discipline, have thought fit to authorize and empower, and accordingly do, hereby, authorize and empower You frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms, as well in the Ground commonly called the Artillery Ground, near Moorfields, as in other Places where They have formerly exercised : And We do, hereby, likewise give You full Power and Authority to hold Courts, free and publick, for the annual Choice of Officers, and other Occasions, as may be necessary and requisite, for the better Government of the said Company, according to the ancient Rules and Practice thereof in such Place and Places, and at such Time and Times, as hath been usual :

We likewise recommend unto your Care, that all the Commission Officers of Our Trained Bands of the said City may list Themselves Members of the said Society, that so, by the frequent Practice of Arms according to their Rules, They may be the better qualified to perform their Trust in their respective Commands : And for your so doing This shall be your Warrant.

And for your further Encouragement, We do think fit to declare Our Most Dear Son George Augustus Frederick, Prince of Wales, Captain-General of your Company, and shall testify Our Good Will towards You on all Occasions proper for Us to express it in : And so

* Copied from the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House), Royal Warrant and Letter Book. Copied also in Court Book F, p. 94.

We bid you Farewell. Given at Our Court at St. James's, the Fourth Day of March 1766, in the Sixth Year of Our Reign.

By His Majesty's Command,

S. CONWAY.

To Our Trusty and Wellbeloved The President,
Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants
of Our Artillery Company, London.

No. 15.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM GEORGE IV., DATED 18TH APRIL,
1821, GRANTING AND CONFIRMING THE ARMORIAL
BEARINGS OF THE COMPANY WHICH THEY HAD
"FOR CENTURIES BORNE."*

GEORGE R.

George the Fourth, by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., To Our Trusty and well beloved Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Esquire, commonly called Lord Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Deputy to Our Right Trusty and Right Entirely beloved Cousin Bernard Edward, Duke of Norfolk, Earl Marshal, and Our Hereditary Marshal of England, Greeting, Whereas The President, Vice-President, Treasurer and Court of Assistants of Our Artillery Company of London have by their Petition humbly represented unto Us that the said Company is of great Antiquity and existed long previously to the time of Our Royal Predecessor King James the First who in the third Year of his Reign granted His Royal Letters Patent under the Great Seal of England for their Encouragement—That the Privileges thereby granted to the said Company have been confirmed and recognized by succeeding Monarchs, many of whom have been pleased to declare themselves or Illustrious Individuals of the Royal Family Captains-General of the said Company :

* Copied from the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House), Royal Warrant and Letter Book, and the original Grant from the College of Arms. See Court Book Q, pp. 136-142, with a drawing of the Arms in their proper colours.

That Our late Royal Father King George the Third of blessed Memory was graciously pleased by Warrant under his Royal Signet and Sign Manual bearing date the fourth day of March in the Sixth Year of his Reign as an Especial Testimony of his Royal Favour to declare Us (then Prince of Wales) Captain-General of the said Company, and that the Petitioners have ever since that period enjoyed the highly distinguished Honour of Our Most Gracious Favour and Protection: That the said Company have for Centuries borne certain Armorial Ensigns together with Supporters, but the same not having been duly established and recorded in Our College of Arms The Petitioners are desirous that the said Arms and Supporters should be ratified and confirmed to them by the Royal Authority of Us their August Captain-General and therefore Most humbly Pray Our Royal Licence and Permission that the Armorial Ensigns and Supporters so long used as aforesaid may be continued to be borne and used by Our said Artillery Company of London, upon Shields Banners Seals Regimental Colours or otherwise, according to the ancient usage and Laws of Arms and that the same may be duly recorded in Our College of Arms.

Know Ye that We taking the Premises into Our Royal Consideration are graciously pleased to approve thereof and of Our Princely Grace and special Favour have given and granted and by these Presents do give grant and confirm unto Our said Artillery Company of London, Our Royal Licence and Authority to bear the Arms hitherto used by them Viz:

THE CROSS OF SAINT GEORGE *thereon the* LION OF ENGLAND *and on a* CHIEF A PORTCULLIS *between two* OSTRICH FEATHERS, with the Crest following Viz:

AN ARM IN ARMOUR holding a PIKE between two DRAGONS WINGS each charged with the CROSS of SAINT GEORGE together with the Motto ARMA PAUIS FULORA, and although the Privilege of bearing Supporters be limited to the Peers of Our Realm, the Knights of Our Orders and the Proxies of Princes of Our Blood at Installations except in such Cases wherein under particular circumstances We have been pleased to grant Our Especial Licence for the use thereof, Yet as a further mark of Our Royal Favour We do hereby also grant and confirm to Our said Artillery Company of London the Supporters heretofore used by them Viz: On the Dexter side a PIKEMAN armed and accoutred, supporting in his exterior hand a Pike and on the Sinister side a MUSKETEER with his MATCHLOCK

BANDILEERS and REST, the whole as in the Painting hereunto annexed to be borne and used for ever hereafter by Our said Artillery Company of London upon Shields Banners Seals Regimental Colours or otherwise, according to the Laws of Arms, the same being first duly exemplified according to the Laws of Arms and recorded in the Heralds' Office otherwise this Our Concession and Especial Mark of Our Royal Favour to be void and of none-effect. Our Will and Pleasure therefore is that you, Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Esquire, commonly called Lord Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Deputy to Our said Earl Marshal, to whom the Cognizance of matters of this nature doth properly belong do require and command that this Our Concession and Declaration be recorded in our College of Arms to the end that Our Officers of Arms and all others upon occasion may take full notice and have knowledge thereof, And for so doing this shall be your Warrant Given at Our Court at Carlton House this eighteenth day of April 1821 in the second Year of Our Reign.

By His Majesty's Command

SIDMOUTH.

Recorded in the College of Arms, London, together with the Painting hereto annexed, pursuant to a Warrant, from Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Esq.: commonly called Lord Henry Thomas Howard Molyneux-Howard, Deputy (with the Royal Approbation) to his Brother the Most Noble Bernard, Edward, Duke of Norfolk, Earl Marshal and Hereditary Marshal of England, and Examined therewith by me

RALPH BIGLAND, Norroy & Register.

The Artillery Company of London

Licence to bear certain Arms,
together with Supporters.

NOTE.—Here follows a drawing of the Arms, signed by George Naylor, Clarenceux King of Arms.

No. 16.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM WILLIAM IV., DATED 21st AUGUST, 1830, CONFIRMING THEIR PRIVILEGES, AND APPOINTING HIMSELF CAPTAIN-GENERAL, AND H.R.H. THE DUKE OF SUSSEX COLONEL OF THE COMPANY.*

WILLIAM R.

Trusty and Welbeloved We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and Preservation of It in its ancient good Order and Discipline, have thought fit to authorize and empower, and accordingly do, hereby authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms, as well in the Ground commonly called the Artillery Ground, near Moorfields, as in other Places where they have formerly exercised : And We do, hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts, free and Publick for the annual choice of Officers and other occasions as may be necessary and requisite for the better Government of the said Company, according to the ancient Rules and Practice thereof, in such Place or Places, and at such time and times, as hath been usual : And for your so doing this shall be your Warrant ; And for your further Encouragement We do hereby declare Ourself Captain-General of Your Company : And We do also hereby declare Our Most Dearly Beloved Brother Augustus Frederick, Duke of Sussex, Knight of the Most Noble Order of the Garter to be Colonel of your Company, and We shall testify Our Good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it on. And so We bid you Farewell.

Given at Our Court at St. James's the 21st day of August 1830

In the first Year of Our Reign

By His Majesty's Command

Warrant to the Artillery Company.

ROBT. PEEL.

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book, and copied in Court Book R, pp. 526, 527. This is the first occasion on which a Colonel was appointed.

No. 17.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM HER MAJESTY, DATED 25TH JULY, 1837, CONFIRMING THE PRIVILEGES OF THE COMPANY, AND APPOINTING H.R.H. THE DUKE OF SUSSEX, CAPTAIN-GENERAL, *AND COLONEL*.*

VICTORIA R.

Trusty and Welbeloved We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good Affection of Our Artillery Company and being therefore willing to promote the Welfare and Preservation of It in its ancient good Order and Discipline, have thought fit to authorize and empower, and accordingly do hereby authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms, as well in the ground called the Artillery Ground near Moorfields, as in other places where they have formerly exercised : And We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts free and public for the annual choice of Officers and other occasions, as may be necessary and requisite for the better government of the said Company according to the ancient Rules and Practice thereof, in such Place and Places, and at such time and times, as hath been usual. We likewise recommend unto Your Care, that all the Commission Officers of Our Trained Bands of Our said City may list themselves Members of the said Society, that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their Rules They may be the better qualified to perform their Trust in their respective Commands : And for your so doing this shall be your Warrant. And for your further encouragement We do think fit to declare Our dear Uncle Augustus Frederick, Duke of Sussex, Knight of Our Most Noble Order of the Garter, Captain-General and Colonel of your Company, and shall testify Our good

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book ; copied also in Court Book T, pp. 139, 140. Under this Warrant the title of Colonel was first added to that of Captain-General, thus combining the two ranks.

Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in.
And so We bid you Farewell.

Given at Our Court at St. James's the Twenty-fifth day of July
1837. In the First Year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command,

J. RUSSELL.

To our Trusty and Welbeloved The President, Vice-
President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of
Our Artillery Company, London.

No. 18.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM HER MAJESTY, DATED 9TH
APRIL, 1842, CONFIRMING THEIR PRIVILEGES, BUT
RESERVING TO THE CROWN THE APPOINTMENT
OF THE FIELD OFFICERS AND THE ADJUTANT.*

VICTORIA R.

Trusty and Welbeloved We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and Discipline, have thought fit to authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms as well in the Ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moorfields as in other places where they have formerly exercised And We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts free and public for the annual choice of Officers, except as hereinafter mentioned, and such other occasions as may be necessary and requisite for the better government of the said Company according to the ancient Rules and Practice thereof in such Place and Places and at such time and times as hath been usual, But We reserve to

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book; copied also in Court Book U, pp. 246-248.

Ourselves the Appointment from time to time of the Field Officers and the Adjutant of Our said Company.

We likewise recommend unto your care that all the Commission Officers of Our Trained Bands of Our said City may list themselves Members of the said Society that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their Rules they may be the better qualified to perform their Trust in their respective Commands. And for your so doing this shall be your Warrant.

And for your further Encouragement We do think fit to declare Our Dear Uncle Augustus Frederick, Duke of Sussex, Knight of Our Most Noble Order of the Garter, Captain-General and Colonel of your Company and shall testify Our good will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in—And We do hereby revoke and determine the Warrant under Our Royal Sign Manual bearing date the Twenty-fifth day of July 1837 in the first year of Our Reign which We were pleased to issue for the government of Our said Company—And so We bid you Farewell.

Given at Our Court at Saint James's the Ninth Day of April 1842 in the Fifth Year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command

J. GRAHAM.

To our Trusty and Welbeloved The President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of Our Artillery Company, London.

No. 19.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM HER MAJESTY, DATED 14TH SEPTEMBER, 1843, CONFIRMING THE PRIVILEGES OF THE COMPANY, AND APPOINTING H.R.H. THE PRINCE CONSORT CAPTAIN-GENERAL AND COLONEL.*

VICTORIA R.

Trusty and Welbeloved We greet you Well! We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company and being therefore willing to promote the Welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and Discipline have thought fit to authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms as well in the Ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moorfields as in other places where they have formerly exercised. And We do hereby likewise give you full power and Authority to hold Courts free and Public, for the annual choice of Officers except as in hereinafter mentioned and on such other occasions as may be necessary and requisite for the better Government of the said Company according to the ancient Rules and Practice thereof in such place and places and at such time and times as hath been usual.

But We reserve to Ourselves the appointment from time to time of the Field Officers and the Adjutant of Our said Company.

We likewise recommend unto your care that all the Commission Officers of Our Trained Bands of Our said City may list themselves Members of the said Society that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their rules they maybe the better qualified to perform their trust in their respective Commands. And for your so doing this shall be your Warrant.

And for your further encouragement We do think fit to declare Our Most dearly beloved Consort Francis Albert Augustus Charles

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book; copied also in Court Book U, pp. 389, 391.

Emmanuel, Duke of Saxony, Prince of Saxe Coburg and Gotha, Knight of Our Most Noble Order of the Garter and Field Marshal in Our Army, Captain-General and Colonel of your Company in the room of Augustus Frederick, Duke of Sussex, deceased, and shall testify Our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in And so We bid you Farewell.

Given at Our Court at Saint James's the Fourteenth day of September, 1843, in the Seventh Year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command

JNO. GRAHAM.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of Our Artillery Company, London.

No. 20.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM HER MAJESTY, DATED 10TH OCTOBER, 1849, CONFIRMING THE PRIVILEGES OF THE COMPANY, AND RESERVING TO THE CROWN THE APPOINTMENT OF ALL THE OFFICERS: SUCH APPOINTMENTS TO ENDURE FOR FIVE YEARS ONLY (EXCEPT THE FIELD OFFICERS AND ADJUTANT), THE REGIMENTAL SERGEANT-MAJOR TO BE APPOINTED BY THE CAPTAIN-GENERAL AND COLONEL; AND ALL OTHER NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS BY THE LIEUTENANT-COLONEL.*

VICTORIA R.

Trusty and Welbeloved, We Greet you Well! We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and Discipline have thought fit to authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms as well in the Ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moorfields as in other places where they have formerly exercised.

And We do hereby likewise give you full power and Authority to hold Courts free and public for the annual choice of Officers, except as hereinafter mentioned, and on such other occasions as may be necessary and requisite for the better Government of the said Company according to the ancient rules and practice thereof (except in so far as such rules or practice may be inconsistent with this Our Royal Warrant) in such place and places, and at such time and times as hath been usual. But We reserve to Ourselves the Appointment from time to time of the Field Officers and the Adjutant of Our said Company as heretofore.

And as a mark of Our Royal favour and of Our interest and Concern in the welfare of Our said Company We further reserve to Ourselves the appointment from time to time of all other Commissioned Officers of Our said Company.

And We hereby declare it to be Our Royal Will and Pleasure that the appointment of all Commissioned Officers of Our said Company

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book; copied also in Court Book X, pp. 27-29.

(other than Field Officers and the Adjutant) shall endure for the period of five years and no longer, and that the persons appointed shall be selected by Us from the Members of Our said Artillery Company, provided that as often as any Vacancy or Vacancies shall occur amongst the Officers so appointed and selected the same shall be supplied by Us in the manner aforesaid.

And We do hereby will and direct that the Regimental Sergeant-Major of Our said Company shall be appointed from time to time by the Captain-General and Colonel of Our said Company, and that all other Non-commissioned Officers of Our said Company shall be appointed from time to time by the Lieutenant-Colonel and shall be selected by him from the Members of Our said Company, provided that as often as any Vacancy or Vacancies shall occur amongst the said Non-commissioned Officers the same shall be supplied by the said Lieutenant-Colonel of Our said Company.

And We likewise recommend unto your care that all the Commissioned Officers of Our Trained Bands of Our City of London may list themselves Members of the said Society that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their rules they may be the better qualified to perform their Trust in their respective Commands, And for your so doing this shall be your Warrant.

And for your further encouragement We do think fit to confirm and continue Our most dearly beloved Consort Francis Albert Augustus Charles Emmanuel, Duke of Saxony, Prince of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, Knight of Our Most Noble Order of the Garter, and Field Marshal in Our Army, Captain-General and Colonel of your Company; and shall testify Our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in.

And We do hereby annul Our Royal Warrant bearing date the fourteenth day of September in the year of Our Lord One thousand eight hundred and Forty three, and all such rules and practice of Our said Artillery Company as may be inconsistent with this present Warrant. And so We bid you heartily farewell.

Given at Our Court at St. James's the Tenth day of October, 1849, in the Thirteenth year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command

G. GREY.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of Our Artillery Company of London.

No. 21.

ROYAL WARRANT FROM HER MAJESTY, DATED 3RD JULY, 1863, CONFIRMING THEIR PRIVILEGES, AS CONTAINED IN THE PREVIOUS WARRANT, AND APPOINTING H.R.H. ALBERT EDWARD, PRINCE OF WALES, CAPTAIN-GENERAL AND COLONEL.*

VICTORIA R.

V. London Artillery. Trusty and Well beloved, We greet you well !
178. We being well satisfied of the Loyalty and good affection of Our Honourable Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and discipline have thought fit to authorize and empower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Arms as well in the ground commonly called the Artillery ground near Moorfields as in other places where they have formerly exercised.

And We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts free and public for the annual choice of Officers, except as hereinafter mentioned, and on such other occasions as may be necessary and requisite for the better government of the said Company, according to the ancient Rules and practice thereof (except in so far as such Rules or practice may be inconsistent with this Our Royal Warrant) in such place and places, and at such time and times as hath been usual. But We reserve to Ourselves the appointment from time to time of the Field Officers and Adjutant of Our said Company as heretofore. And as a mark of Our Royal favor and of Our interest and concern in the welfare of Our said Company We further reserve to Ourselves the appointment from time to time of all other Commissioned Officers of Our said Company.

And We hereby declare it to be Our Royal Will and Pleasure that the appointment of all Commissioned Officers of Our said Company (other than Field Officers and the Adjutant) shall endure for the period of five years and no longer, and that the persons appointed

* From the original Warrant at Head-quarters (the Armoury House) in the Royal Warrant and Letter Book; copied also in Court Book BB, pp. 447-449.

shall be selected by Us from the Members of Our said Honourable Artillery Company, provided that as often as any vacancy or vacancies shall occur amongst the Officers so appointed and selected the same shall be supplied by Us in the manner aforesaid.

And We do hereby Will and direct that the Regimental Sergeant-Major of Our said Company shall be appointed from time to time by the Captain-General and Colonel of Our said Company, and that all other Non-Commissioned Officers of Our said Company shall be appointed from time to time by the Lieutenant-Colonel and shall be selected by him from the Members of Our said Company, provided that as often as any vacancy or vacancies shall occur amongst the said non-commissioned Officers the same shall be supplied by the said Lieutenant-Colonel of Our said Company.

And We likewise recommend unto your care that all the Commissioned Officers of Our Trained Bands of Our City of London may list themselves Members of the said Society that so by the frequent practice of Arms according to their Rules they may be the better qualified to perform their Trust in their respective Commands And for your so doing, this shall be your Warrant.

And for your further encouragement We do think fit to declare Our Most Dear Son His Royal Highness Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, Duke of Saxony, Prince of Saxe Coburg and Gotha, Duke of Cornwall, Knight of Our Most Noble Order of the Garter, Knight of Our Most Exalted Order of the Star of India, General in Our Army, &c. &c. &c., Captain-General and Colonel of your Company, and shall testify Our good Will towards you on all occasions proper for Us to express it in.

And We do hereby annul Our Royal Warrant bearing date the Tenth day of October in the year of Our Lord One Thousand eight hundred and forty-nine and all such Rules and practice of Our said Honourable Artillery Company as may be inconsistent with this present Warrant.

And so We bid you, Heartily, Farewell.

Given at Our Court at Saint James's the Twenty-third day of July 1863, in the Twenty-seventh year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command

DE GREY & RIPON.

To Our Trusty and Wellbeloved The President,
Treasurer, and Court of Assistants of Our Honourable Artillery Company of London.

APPENDIX B.

ORDERS IN COUNCIL.

No. 1.

THE TRAINING AND EXERCISE TO BE RENEWED.*

At the Court at Whitehall, the 20th of Novemb^r, 1591.

PRESENT :

L. Treasurer
L. Admyrall
L. Chamberlaine
Mr. Treasurer

Mr. Vice Chamberlaine
Sir Robert Cecill
Mr. Wolley
Mr. Fortescue

A lre to the L. Maio^r of London and his Brethren. Requyring them that whereas the Artillery Yarde belonging to the Cittie beinge erected for the trayninge of yonge gent in London firste broughte in by M^r Captⁿ Allen Lewis servante to the L. Chancellor hathe bin of late discontinued : that the same maie forthwith upon the receipte hereof be renewed beinge a matter verie requisite and necessarie for ye benefitte of the comon weale &c.

* Council Registers (Eliz.), Vol. X., p. 59.

No. 2.

THE COMPANY TO EXERCISE AND ELECT OFFICERS
AND MEMBERS, SUBJECT TO APPROVAL OF LORD
MAYOR, BUT NOT TO EXCEED 250 MEN.*

At the Court at Whitehall, Fryday in the after noone the third of
July 1612.

Lo: Archbishopp of Can-
terbury

Lo: Chauncellor

Lo: Privie Seale

Lo: Chamberline

Ea: of Worcester

Lo: Souch

Lo: Knolles

Lo: Wotten

S^r John Harbert

S^r Julius Ceasar

S^r Tho: Parry

An Order
touching the
Millitary Yard
belonging to
the Cittie of
London, 3rd
July, 1612.

Upon a peticon exhibited to this board by diverse
Cittizens of London, declaringe that whereas the exam-
ples of other flourishinge Citties and States in forraigne
parts, together wth a pressident of certaine worthie
Cittizens of London, heretofor excercisinge Armes had
moved the peticoners wth like zeale and affection to enable themselves
to doe his Ma^{ty} Service, and there Contry, and to applie themselves
to some laudable excersise for their better knowledge and experience
in the use of Armes. And to the end this their endeavor might not
drawe upon them any inconvenience or incurr the danger of the lawes,
ordained for restraunte of Assemblies in Armes, they made humble
Instance unto their Lps, that wth Allowance and Approbation of the
board, they might be pmitted to excersise Armes. And be instructed
in Millitary discipline, in the Artillery garden or any other Convenient
place, in or neere the Cittie of London, by the direction of such
Comanders & Officers as they shall make choise of. Their Lps
entringe into consideration of their request, and findinge their peticon
to be grounded upon comendable and worthie respects, and havinge

* Domestic (Jas. I.), Vol. LXX., No. 3. The Council Registers for this year
are wanting.

allsoe, bene enformed from S^r Henry Mountague knight Recorder of the Cittie of London, of the quallitie of the petitioners, to be generallie men of good meanes, and otherwise well affected, and that lo: Mayo^r and the Alldermen his breathren, doe like well of their endeavor, soe it might receave the Assurance of their Lps good approbation, doe see noe inconvenience but that said Companie of Cittizens may trayne and practize Armes, by the instruction of Captaine Edward Panten or such others as shalbe thought fitt, to acquainte them wth the knowledge and use thereof in any place in or neere the Cittie of London, and att such fitt and convenient times as shalbe meete, and that they may admitt any other Cittizens into their Companie and make choise of such Officers as they shall thinke meete, upon the approbacon and allowance from the lord Mayor of the Cittie of London, from the time beinge of every such Officer, or Cittizen soe admitted by them, pvided that the whole number of the Companie doe not exceede two hundredth and fiftie.

No. 3.

PERMISSION TO INCREASE THE NUMBER OF THE
COMPANY TO 500.*

At Whitehall, the 21st December, 1614.

PRESENT :

| | |
|---------------------|---|
| L. Tre ^r | L. Wotton |
| L. Duke Lenox | L. Stanhope |
| E. Worcestor | M ^r Secretary Winwood |
| E. Pembroke | M ^r Chancellor Excheq ^r |
| L. Fenton | L. Cheife Justice |
| L. Knollis | M ^r of Rolles |

S^r Thomas Lake

This Order was agreed on at the Sessions of the 11th of this month, and signed by their Lps, viz : L. Archbishop, L. Chancellor, L. Treasurer, L. Chamberlen, E. of Worcestor, E. of Pembroke, L. Knollis, L. Wotton, Mr. Secr. Winwood, Sir Jul. Cæsar, Sir Tho : Lake.

Wheras upon Petition exhibited to this Boarde in the month of July 1612 by divers Cittizens of London shewing their desire and lawdable inclination to the practise and exercise of Armes thereby the better to enable themselves for the Servyce of His Ma^{ty} and their Countrye upon all occasions: And to the end that their endeavor in that kinde might not drawe upon them any Inconvenyence, nor incurre the daunger of the Lawes, ordeyned for Restraynt of Assemblies in Armes: They made humble instance unto us of His Ma^{ty} Counseil, that wth Allowance and approbation of the Board they might be pmitted to exercise Armes and be instructed in Military Discipline in the Artillery Garden or in some other convenyent place in or neere the City of London by the direcon of such Comaunders and Officers as they should make choice of:

Whereupon wee entring into consideracon of the sayd Request, and withall being informed that the psons of those who were thus to be

* Council Registers (Jas. I.), Vol. I., p. 251.

Trayned and exercised in Armes were of the best sorte and men of good meanes and well affected, thought it then fyttng and so accordingly ordered that the sayd Company of Cittizens might be trayned and practised in Armes by the instruction of Captaine Edward Panton or such others as should be thought fytt to acquaint them with the knowledge and use thereof: wth Proviso that the whole number of ye sayd Company did not excede Two Hundred and Fyfty, as may more at large appear by the said Order: And forasmuch as Sr Henry Montague Kt. Recorder of the Citty of London hath this day informed the Boarde that many other Cittizens of the best sort & quallity having observed by the experience of these Two yeres, the greate good and benefytt w^{ch} ensues by the Trayning and exercising of the sayd Company and being also led wth the same desire of enabling themselves in the practise and use of Armes, make greata instance to be thereunto also admitted, but that the Company being already full and lymitted unto the precise number of Two hundred and fyfty, they can not be receaved w^{thout} manifest breache of the sayd Order Hee therefore made humble suite unto us in the name of the whole Citty that the sayd Company might be increased to the number of Fyve hundred, w^{ch} wee have thought fyttng, and so accordingly ordered wth this caution That none be thereunto admitted or received but such as should be knowne to be of good meanes, well affected in Religion and to the Servyce of His Ma^{ty}, and to be fyrste allowed of by the Court of the L. Maior and Aldermen of the sayd Citty for the tyme being, who are also to establishe such orders for the good government of the sayd Company as shall be thought meete, And that the whole number doe not excede fyve hundred persons.

No. 4.

REGARDING THE ELECTION OF A CAPTAIN, AND
CONFIRMING FORMER ORDERS.*

At Whytehall, ye second of March, 1631.

PRESENT :

Lorde Keeper
Er. Bridgwater
Er. of KelleyLo. Visct. Wentworth
Lo. Bp. of London
Lo. Cottington

Mr Secretary Coke.

March ye 2d
1631
An Order concerning the
Companie of
the Artillerie
Yarde.

This day S^r Hugh Hamersley knight together with Mr. Alderman Ven, Mr. Alderman Clotherow, Mr. Alderman Garroway, and Mr. Alderman Addie informed the Boarde of diverse disorderly and mutinous caryages of sundry persons of the Artillerie Yarde nere the Cittie of London as well in refusing ye Captaine chosen by the Lorde Mayor and Court of Aldermen to succeed Capt. Waller deceased as in assuming to themselves ye power of choosing another of their owne lyking and in the getting of three hundreth and nyne hands in a factious maner to a petition presented to the saide Lorde Mayor, in disobeying warrants sent by the Lorde Mayor and in other acts and courses tending to the disturbance of the peaceable government of the Cittie and to the contempt of lawfull authoritie, whereupon their Lps having taken into serious consideration the dangerous consequence hereof, doe firste thinke fit to confirme and ratifie twoe former Orders of ye Boarde made touching the saide Artillerie Yarde, the one of the thirde of July 1612 the other the 11th of December 1614 adding thereunto that ye choice of the Captaine and other officers and ye whole ordering of that bodie shall rest in the Lorde Mayor and Court of Aldermen wholly and exclusively from anie other, and more

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. VII., pp. 488, 489. (The year according to the new style is 1632.)

particularly that they of the saide Artilerie Yarde shall not presume or undertake to present anie names thereby to restraine the libertie of the election which is to be made of such psones, as the saide Lorde Mayor and Court of Aldermen shall think fit, for the place of Captaine or anie other officer: And forasmuch as it importeth both His Ma^{ties} honor and service, and the good government of the Cittie that the disorders before mentioned should not passe unpunished: Their Lps doe lykewyse thinke fit and order and hereby expressly require the Lorde Mayor to take particular informacon thereof by examinacon, vizt.: who gott ye hands to the peticon, who called Sr Hugh Hammersley base fellow, by whom a Vice-President was made without the Lorde Mayors knowledge, and who accepted that office, who keepes the Register of ye Companie, how ye Vice-President and he have demeaned themselves. And who may they be that took on them to call a Courte and pcede to election of a Captaine, without warrant or consent of the Lorde Mayor and Courte of Aldermen and without ye President: And lastly what other psons have disobeyed the Lorde Mayors warrants or had their hands in those mutinous coursses, and upon full examinacon to inflict such punishmt on every offender by imprisonment and otherwyse as he shall finde ye qualitie of his offence to deserve, and may be exemplarie for ye repressing and beating downe of the lyke insolencies and disorders in tyme to come: And lastly he is required to give particular account to ye Boarde of his pceedings in every point.

No. 5.

THE KING TO ELECT THE CAPTAIN; THE COMPANY
THE TREASURER, AND THE LORD MAYOR AND
ALDERMEN ALL OTHER OFFICERS.*

At Whytehall, the 18th of Aprill, 1632.

PRESENT:

The Kings Mat^ye

| | |
|---------------------|------------------|
| Lo. Keeper | Ea. of Morton |
| Lo. Trear | Lo. V. Wentworth |
| Lo. Privie Seale | Lo. V. Wimbledon |
| Lo. High Chamblaine | Lo. V. Falkland |
| Ea. Marshall | Lo. Bp. of Lond. |
| Lo. Chamblaine | Lo. Cottington |
| Ea. of Bridgwater | Mr V. Chamb |
| Ea. of Holland | Mr Trear |
| Ea. of Carlile | Mr Scr Coke |

An Order His Mat^y did this day declare his resolucon in ye touching ye controversie between ye Lo. Mayor and Aldermen and ye elecon of ye Company of ye Artillery Gardens wch had been formerly officers of ye Company of ye Artillery heard by His Mat^y and ye Lords of his Counsell on ye Company of ye Artillery 11th of this month, and had been heard divers times Gardens. before yt at ye Board: And firste His Mat^y, according to ye same meaning of ye orders for ye firste institucon of ye said Company, and according to ye voluntary submission of both ye pties, did resolve to take ye elecon of ye Capt. of ye sd Company of ye Artillery Gardens of London into his owne hands & did declare with ye advice of the Board yt neither ye sd Lo. Mayor and Aldermen nor ye sd Company ought by ye firste institucon to have ye elecon of ye Capt. : And for yt purpose His Mat^y did declare ye elecons made as well by ye Lo. Mayor and Aldermen as by ye sd Company of ye Capt. and

* Council Registers, Vol. VII., pp. 520, 521.

of all other officers voyd and of none effect : And further His Ma^{ty} did resolve and order with ye advice of ye Board yt as well ye elecon of ye place of President as of all other officers should be in his owne hands : Yet because he will not at all times be putt to ye trouble to choose officers He commands ye Lo. Mayor and Aldermen now and hereafter to choose them saving ye Capt. except when His Ma^{ty} himselfe shall think fitt to take ye paines therein, for wch nomber of officers ye Treasurers place is not understood but yt being a pticular trust is left to ye choyce of ye sd Company : And whereas upon examinacon of ye sd controversie it is found yt orders for ye government of ye sd Company have not yet been made as was firste intended : His Ma^{ty} will be pleased to take order with ye Lords of his Counsell for such orders to be framed and established for their government as shalbe requisite : And lastly as His Ma^{ty} wth the advice of ye Board did hold it iust and reasonable yt ye authority of ye Lo. Mayor and ye Aldermen should bee countenanced and upheld in ye government of ye severall pts of ye Citty under His Ma^{ty} and shall allwaies approove their fitting endeavours to vindicate ye same so he may not approve ye expressions used by word of mouth and in some peticons by ye sd Company intimating as consequence of disbanding if their desires were not yealded unto nor ye disorders and contencons wch did appeare in their pceedings.

No. 6.

THE KING TO ELECT THE CAPTAIN; THE LORD MAYOR
AND ALDERMEN THE PRESIDENT, AND THE COM-
PANY ALL OTHER OFFICERS.*

At Whitehall, the Fourth of July, 1634.

PRESENT :

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| Lorde Keeper | Er. of Dorsett |
| Lo. Archbishop of Yorke | Lo. Cottington |
| Lo. Treasurer | Lo. Newburgh |
| Lo. Privy Seale. | M ^r Secr Coke |

Mr Secretarie Windebanck.

About ye Artillery Garden in London. His-Mat^y having a gracious care that the Companie of the Artilerie Garden in London may be settled that all subject of contention be wholly removed, and from henceforth all things carryed quietly and decently and those of the sayde Companie the more encouraged to continue their laudable militarie exercise hath for ye affecting thereof signified his royal pleasure in maner following, vizt. : That His Maiestie will reserve to his owne choice ye appointing of the Captne, that ye Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen shall have ye election of ye President, and that all other officers who doe and may belong or have relation to the sayde Companie shalbe chosen and appointed by the Companie itself. And lastly that both the Captaine for his paines in the execution of his place (wherein he is to use all care and diligence) shall have an allowance of fifty pounds by the yeare out of ye money quarterly paide by every one of the Companie, and likewise ye officers who formerly received pay have their accustomed salaries : Of wch His Ma^{ty} pleasure and royal direccoon in his behalf, the Lorde Mayor and Court of Aldermen, the President, Captaine and all other whom it may concerne are required and in His Ma^{ty} name expressly charged to take particular notice and to conforme themselves accordingly thereunto : And they of the Companie setting asyde all differences are speedily to returne unto their accustomed exercise of Armes otherwyse they shall be esteemed contemnners of His Ma^{ty} comands and incurre his high displeasure.

* Council Registers (Chas. I.), Vol. X., pp 72, 73.

APPENDIX C.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARCHERY.

No. 1.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.*

(26th of November, 1561.)

Comiss. ELIZABETH by the Grace of God Quene of England
Edwardo Fraunce and Ireland Defend^r of the faith &c To our right
Warner mit trusty and Welbeloved Sir Edward Warner knight
F. at p. Sagittar circa lyvetenaunt of our Tower of London Sir Will^m Garret
Civitat knighte Sir Will^m Huett knight Aldermen of our Citie of
London. London Thomas Seckforde Esquier one of the Masters of our Courte
of Requestes Gilbte Gerrarde Esquier our Attorney Genall and
Thomas Powle Esquier Comptroller of our Hanap in our highe
Courte of Chauncy Greeting—Albeyt sondry very good and laudable
Statutes ordenaunces pvisions and pclamacons heretofore have ben had
and made as well by our most noble pgenitors as by us for the mayn-
tenaunce of Archerie and Artillerie Within this our realme of England
Whereby the same beyng put in due execucon in tymes paste hathe
not only ben bredd and encreased a greate force and strengthe
towards the maintennce and defence and safetie of this our said
Realme agaynste forreyn powers but also a feare and terro^r to all
other Realmes and forreyn enemyes in tyme of Warre and hostilitie

* Patent Roll, 4 Eliz., Part I., Memb (1) 51 dorso.

yet the same good estatutes ordenaunces and pelamacons made as well by us as by our said noble pgenitors cannot nowe as well take place as they oughte and have done in tymes paste, and speciallie aboute our Citie of London by reason that dyvse and sondry psons havynge aboute our said Cytie dyvse lands tenements and heredytaments and seking to enclose the same otherwise then hathe ben Accustomed to th advauncement onelie of their owne singulare benefitt and gayne Without respect of others comodytie have pluckte awaie and yet still do mynde to plucke awaie from our loving Subjects the necessary and pfitable excise of Shoting in suche fieldes and closes as tyme out of mynde have ben Well allowed and accustomed to be Shot in aswell by makynge of Suche bankes and hedges as also by pluckinge up of the olde Marks of Auncyent tyme standinge in the said Closes insomuche that our said Subjectes beyng in the comon fieldes and for dyvsities and chaunge of Markes seking to fynde a marke in the said Closes and sevall Groundes cannot by reason that for the moste parte the bankes and hedges beyng made of suche heichte see the grounde of the close or felde Within the said bankes as also by reason that Wheare the banke and hedge beyng but of an indifferent heichte the diches be made so broade and deape and Wantinge bridges and other convenyent places to passe through and on the same that our said Subjects the Archers using their trade and pastyme be very muche hyndered lett and discouraged therein and oftentymes in very greate pill and daunger for lacke of convenyent Rome and place to shote in And as We be credyblly enformed by reason of the foresaid dyching hedging and enclosures is very lyke there Will growe a verie greate streyte and Wante of rome aboute our said Citie of London as well for suche as done psentlie use the said game of Shoting Whiche We meane shalbe mainteyned as also for those that shall hereafter excise use or occupie the same game and pastyme to the greate hynderaunce and decaye as well of the said use and excise of Shoting as also of the said estatutes ordinaunces prvisions and pelamacons and cont^{ry} to the auncient customes heretofore used aboute our said Cytie of London Whereby might ensue to sondrie of our said Subjectes occasion to haunte and frequent some other kindes of unlawfull games Whereunto there are to many enclyned Which We meane not shalbe in any Wise suffred For Advoydinge Whereof and for reformacon of the foresaid enormyties and of all suche other as mighte hereafter growe by reason of takinge awaye of the scoape of auncyent tyme accustomed to be had

aboute our said Cytie of London for Archers And havyng experience of your Wisedomes and good dexterities We have assigned and appoynted you the said Sir Edwarde Warner Sir Will^m Garrett Sir Will^m Huett Thomas Seckforde Gilbt Gerrard and Thomas Powle to be our Comissioners And by these p^sentes do geve unto you fyve foure or three of you full power and auctorytie not onlie to Survey all suche groundes next adjoynng to our said Cytie of London and the Suburbes of the same and Within two myles compasse on evy parte of our said Citie and Suburbes as heretofore have been accustomed and used to have had markes in theym for Archers to Shote at or in Whiche any of our lovyng Subjectes or of our Auncestors have excised them selves in Shoting and the same to reduce or cause to be reduced to such order and estate for Archers as they Were in the begynnyng of the reigne of our moste deare father kinge Henrie th eighte But also callinge before you fyve foure or any three of you aswell the owner and owners Fermo^r and Fermors and occupiers of suche groundes aboute our said Citie in Whiche sithens the firste yere of the reign of our said father have ben made any broad deape dyches highe bankes or quicksettes or hedges thereupon beyng thought mete by you fyve foure or any three of you to be ovthrowen and made playne or otherwise to be reformed as also suche And as many honest and lawfull men of our said Citie of London and Countie of Midd or either of them Whose disposicon knowledge and experience in the p^rmisses or any parte thereof ye shall thinke good to understande and knowe and them and evy of theym to examyn as well upon their othes as otherwise touchinge the p^rmisses as to the Wisdomes and discrecons of you fyve foure or any three of you shalbe thoughte moste convenyent And upon knowledge of the defaltes and annoyances in the p^rmisses or any parte thereof our pleasure is and we geve unto you fyve foure or any three of you full power and auctoritie by these p^sentes to cause the same to be by the said owner or owners fermo^r or fermors or occupiers at their owne p^per costes and chardges to be amended reformed alt^red or chaunged in suche mann and fourme And Within suche tyme as to the Wisdomes and discrecons of you fyve foure or any three of you shalbe thoughte mete and convenient Wherein our pleasure and comaundement is that Whatsoever shalbe in and aboute the p^rmisses done and executed by you fyve foure or three of you by vertue and auctoritie of this our comission y^e cause the same firmelie to be observed Auctorising you fyve foure or three of you further by these p^sentes that all suche pson and psons beyng

owner or owners fermor or fermors occupier or occupiers of the said groundes or any of theym as y^e fyve foure or three of you shall fynde negligent gaynsaying rebellyng resistinge or by any meane or way in any Wise Withstandinge againste you fyve foure or three of you in the due execucon hereof or not obeyinge your orders and decrees in the p^rmisses to be had and made by v^etue of these p^rsentes that ye fyve foure or three of you cause hym or theym so offendinge to be punysshed or payned eyther by imprisonment or otherwise by fyne and amciament to our use as your Wisdomes shall thinke requysite untill he or they shall conforme him or theym selves to your order in the p^rmisses And for the bett execucon of this our said Comission and auctoritie to you geven We chardge and comaunde all Maiours Sherifes Justices of the Peax Bayleffe Constables and all other our Ministers Officers and Subjectes to be aydinge helpinge and assisting you fyve foure or three of you in the due execucon hereof as they will answer for the cont^arie. In witnes Whereof &c.

Witnes our self at Westm^r the xxvjth day of November:

p ipam Reginam &c.

No. 2.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF
ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.*

(23rd of April, 1570.)

Comiss. p
sagittacoe
infra duo
Miliaria
Civitatis
London.

ELIZABETH by the Grace of God &c. : To our trustye
and right Welbeloved the lorde Maior of our Cytye of
London for the tyme beinge Thomas Sackville knyght
lorde of Buckhurste the Lorde Gyles Paulett And to
our trustye and Welbeloved Counsaillours Sir William
Cecill knight our pryncipall Secretarye Sir Raphe Sadler
knight Chauncello^r of our Duchye of Lancaster Sir Walter
Mildmaye knight Chauncellour of our Exchequyer And to our
trustye and Welbeloved Sir William Cordell knight Maister of the
Rolles in our Courte of Chauncerye John Southcote one of the
Justice of our pleas before us to be holden John Welshe one of
our Justice of the Comon pleas Thomas Sekforde one of the Maisters
of our Courte of requeste Sir Wylliam Garrarde knight Sir John
White knight Rouland Hayward Wylliam Bonde James Bacon
Henry Becher Aldermen of our Cytye of London Nicholas Barham
one of our Sergiants at lawe Roger Manwoode Sergiants at lawe,
Gilbert Gerrard our Attorney genall Richard Onslowe Attourney of
our Courte of Wardes and lyveries Thomas Bromley our Solicitour
Generall Richard Warde Coferer of our household William Pelham
lieutenaunte of our Ordynaunce in our Toure of London Thomas
Powle Clerke of the Crowne Thomas Wilbraham Recorder of our
Cytye of London Benjamyn Gonson Treasurer of our Shippes Wyl-
liam Wynter lieutenaunte of our Ordynaunce of our Shippes Jasper
Fissher one of the Sixe Clerks of our Court of Chauncerie John
Marshe Governour of our Marchante Adventurers Wyllyam Wight-
man Esquyer, Thomas Smyth Thomas Andrewes Esquyers greatinge.
Albeit sundrye and verye good and laudable estatutes ordynaunces

* Patent Roll, 12 Eliz., Part II., Memb (8) 42 in dorso.

provisions and proclamacions heretofore have bene had and made as well by our most noble progenitors as by us for the Mayntenaunce of Archerye and Artillarye Within this our Realme of Englande Whearebye the same beinge putt in due execucion in tymes past hathe not onely bene bred and increased a greate force and strength towarde the mayntenaunce, defence and safetye of this our Sayed Realme Agaynste forrayne powers But also a feare and terrour to all other Realmes and forren enemyes in tyme of Warre and hostilitye yet the same good estatute ordynaunce and proclamacions made as well by us as by our sayed noble progenitors canne nott nowe so Well take place as they ought and have done in tymes paste and specialllye Aboute our Cytie of London. By reason that dyvers and sundrye psons having about our sayed Cytie divers land tenements and hereditaments and seekinge to inclose the same otherwyse then hathe bene accustomed to the Advancements onelye of their owne singular benefitt and gayne Without respect of others comodytie have pluckt awaye and yet styll doe mynde to plucke awaye from our lovinge subject the necessarye and pfitable excise of Shootinge in suche felde and closes as tyme out of mynde have bene Well allowed and accustomed to be Shott in as well by makinge of suche bancks and hedge as also by pluckinge up of the olde markes of Auncyent tyme standinge in the sayed Closes In so muche that our sayd subjects beinge in the comon felde and for diversities and chaunge of marke Seekinge to fynde a marke in the said Closes and sevall grounde canne not by reason that for the mooste parte the bancks and hedge beinge made of such height see the grounde of the Close or felde Wythin the sayed Bancke As also by reason that Wheare the banke or hedgee beinge but of an indifferent height the ditches be made so brode and deepe and Wantinge bridges and other convenyent place to passe through and over the same that our sayed Subjecte the Archers usinge their trade and pastyme be verye much hyndred lett and discouraged therein And oftentimes in verye greate peryll and daunger for lacke of convenyent roome and place to shoote in And as we be crediblye informed by reason of the foresaid ditching hedginge and inclosures is verye like there Will growe a verye greate strait and Wante of roume aboute our sayed Cytie of london as well for suche as done p'sentlye use the sayed game of Shootinge Whiche We meane shall be mayntayned as also for those that shall hereafter excise use or occupye the same game and pastyme to the greate hinderaunce and decaye

as well of the sayed use and excise of Shootinge as also of the sayed estatute ordynance pvisions and pelamacions and contrarye to the Auncient customes heretofore used aboute our sayed Cytye of London Wherebye myght ensue to sondrye of our sayed Subjects occasion to haunte and frequente some other kyndes of unlawfull games Whereunto there are to many enclyned Whiche our meanyng is shalbe in no Wise suffred For advoyding Whereof and for reformation of the foresayed enormyties And of all suche other as myght hereafter growe by reason of takynge awaye of the libtye and Scope of Auncyent tyme accustomed to be had aboute the sayed Cytye of London for Archers and trustinge in your approved Wisdoms fidelities and good discrecions We have Assigned and appoynted you to be our Comysioners and by theis psents doe geve unto you and evye of you to the number of anye three of you full power and Auctoritye not onelye to survey all suche grounde next adjoynnyng to our sayed Citye of London and the Suburbes of the same and Within two myles compas on evye parte of our sayed Cytye and Suburbes as heretofore have bene accustomed and used to have had marks in them for Archers to Shoote at in or Whiche anye of our lovinge subjects or of our Auncestours have excised them selves in Shootinge And the same to reduce or cause to be reduced to suche order and estate for Archers as they Were in the begynnynge of the raygne of our moost deare father kynge Henrye the eight. But also callinge before you or anye three of you as well the Owner and Owners fermour fermours and occupiers of suche grounde about our said City. In Whiche sithence the first yare of the reigne of our sayed Father have bene made anye brode deepe ditches highe bancks or quick sette or hedge there uppon beinge thought meete by you or anye three of you to be ovthrowen and made playne or otherwyse to be reformed As also suche and asmany honest and lawfull men of our sayed Citye of London and Countye of Midd or either of them Whose deposicion knowledge and experience in the p'misses or anye part thereof y^e shall thinke good to understand and knowe them and evye of them to examyne as well upon their othes as other Wise touchinge the p'myssees as to the Wisdomes and discrecions of you or anye three of you shalbe thought most convenyent And uppon knowledge of the defaulte and annoysaunce in the p'misses or anye parte thereof our pleasure is And We geve unto you or three of you full power and Auctoritye by theis p'sents to cause the same to be

by the sayed owner or owners fermour or fermours or occupiers at their owne pper coste and charge to be amended reformed altd or chaunged in suche manner and forme and Within suche tyme as to the Wisdomes and discrecions of you or three of you shall be thought meete and convenient Wherein our pleasure and comaundement is that Whatsoev^r shalbe in and aboute the p^rmisses done and executed by you or three of you by vertue and Auctorytye of this our Comyssion ye cause the same firmlye to be observed Aucthorisinge you or three of you further by theis p^rsents That all suche pson and psons beinge owner or owners fermo^r or fermours occupier or occupiers of the sayed grounde or anye of them as ye or three of you shall fynde negligent gayne sayinge rebellinge resistinge or by anye meane or Waye in anye Wyse Withstandinge agaynst you or three of you in the due execucion hereof or not obeying your orders and decrees in the p^rmisses to be had and made by vertue of theis p^rsents That you or three of you cause hym or them so offendinge to be punysshed or payned either by imprysonement or other wyse by fyne and Ameyment to our use As your Wisdomes shall thinke requysyte untill he or they shall conforme hym or them selves to your order in the p^rmisses And for the better execucion of this our sayed Comyssion and Auctorytye to you geven We charge and comaunde all Maiours Sheriffes Justice of Peax Bailliffe Constables and all other our Officers Mynisters and Subjects to be aydinge helpinge and assis-tinge you and evye of you in the due execucion hereof as they Wyll aunswer to the contrarye. In wytnes Whereof &c.: Wytnes our self at Westm the xxij daye of Aprill.

p ipam Reginam &c.

No. 3.

ABSTRACT OF LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARCHERY GRANTED TO SIR H. GILBERT.*

(25th of June, 1571.)

AN abstracte of the effectuall clawses containyd in her Ma^{ties} lrs Patents dated at Westm to 25 daye of June in the 13 yere of her highness raigne graun . . . for seaven yeres to S^r Humfreye Gylberte knight toochinge the execucion of the Acte made Anno tricesimo tercio henrici octavi intituled an Acte for the maynetennce of Artyllerye debarringe unlawfull games and of the Acte made Annis quarto and quinto Philippi & Marie intituled An Act for the havinge of horse Armor and Weapon &c as followeth :

1. A comaundemente to the l kep and L Chauncellor of England for the time beinge that theye for seaven years nexte insuinge the date of the saide patent at the requeste of the saide S^r Humfreye Gylberte shall make Comissions under the greate seale &c retornable into Th exchequier to be directed to sutch discrete psons as under the handes of Six of the pryvie Counsell shalbe there unto named and appointed To inquier of and uppon the said severall Statuts &c:

2. Aucthoretye given to six of the pryvy Counsell for the time beinge at the suyte of the said S^r Humfreye from time to time duringe seaven yeres to nominate & appointe the saide Comissioners and to authorise them to compounde wth the psons offendinge the saide Statuts accordinge to sutch rates and instruccions as from time to time to be sente to the saide lorde kep or l. Chauncellor beinge subscribed wth the landes of six of the pryvy Counsell and to be annexed to the saide Comissions shalbe limited and appointed So alwayes y^e evye pson so compoundinge paye theire monye to the saide S^r Humfreye or his deputye wthin sutch time as by a bill indented betwene the saide Comissioners And them shalbe limited.

* Patent Roll, 13 Eliz., Part II., Memb. (1) dorso, and Domestic (Eliz.), Vol LXXVIII., No. 45.

3. A Comaundem^t to the saide Comissioners that incase ayne pson shalbe founde offendinge the saide statutes and doe not compounde Then theye to certefye into the Courte of Exchequer his or theire defaultts that shall so refuse to compound To th ende that theye maye suffer th extremetye of the lawes wthowte y^t theye shalbe dischargd by anye seconde composicion to be made in y^t behalf.

4. And for the better answeringe of the monye cominge to her Mat^y by the saide composicions she hathe comaunded the saide S^r Humfreye that he shall cawse the same composicions to be written in bills indented whereof one pte to be signed wth the handes of anye — of the saide Comissioners and of the saide S^r Humfreye or his deputye &c And of the pson compoundinge shalbe certified into Th exchequier And the other pte thereof to be signed by the saide Comissioners and the saide S^r Humfreye or his deputye &c shall remayne wth the pson so compoundinge for a remembraunce of his discharge in y^t behalf.

5. The saide S^r Humfreye Gylberte is appointed generall Receyvo^r of all the somes monye growinge by the saide composicions And he to stand accomptable for the same in the courte of Exchequier.

6. A graunte to the saide S^r Humfreye in consideracion of his fee and travell to be taken in and abowte the Collecion of the monye aforesaide of th one moyetye and one fyvethe pte of thother moyetye of the saide some and somes of monye And that the saide S^r Humfreye shall enter into bonde in the Courte of Exchequier before the receavinge of anye of the Comissions aforesaide for the true accomptinge and answeringe of the saide fowre pts growinge to her highnes by anye the means aforesaide.

7. A comaundemente to the L. Threasourer & Justice of bothe benches &c to awarde Writts and other processe againste sutche as will not compounde To th ende theye maye suffer the extremetye of the lawes And after the recoverye of anye sutche some and somes of monye to deliver unto the saide S^r Humfreye or his deputye &c th one moyetye thereof And the fifte pte of th other moyetye And the fower pts of that other moyetye remayninge to be payde into Th exchequier as aforesaide.

8. A farther comaundem^t to all Judges and Justices that theye after notice given unto them in sutche manner & forme as in the saide lres patente is mencioned shall not award anye processe againste the psons so compounding for anye the offences w^{ch} theye have compounded for before.

9. And for a more surer discharge of the psons so compoundinge a comaundemente to the L. Threasowrer and Barons of Th exchequier that theye uppon requeste of the saide S^r Humfreye or of his deputie &c or of anye the psons so compoundinge shall certefye by one transcrip^t under the seale of the saide Courte of Exchequier to L. Kep or L. Chauncello^r for the time beinge the names of all the psons compoundinge And w^{ch} shalbe contayned in anye one certificat from the Comissioners and a like comaundement to the saide L. kep or L. Chauncello^r that theye uppon requeste as is aforesaide shall pass their pdons in y^t behalf And that there shalbe no more fees payde for the same transcript and pdons then as thoughe theye did contyane but onely one name and pson.

10. A graunte on her Ma^{ty} pte to pdon none after composicion made, or after certificatt or Informacion thereof entered in forme aforesaide, save onely for her fou^r pts reserved as aforesaide.

11. A Proviso y^t y^t be specified in the Comissions and Instruccions aforesaide that the Comissioners have not to doe wth anye of the nobilyt^ye nor sutch other psons as in the saide lres patente are excepted Onles they will of their owne mindes make composicion.

12. A farther Proviso that the saide Comissioners shall not make anye composicion wth anye pson againste whom anye Informacion shalbe then dependinge And if theye shall make anye sutch composicion then the same to be voyde.

13. A Warraunte and discharge to the l. Kep or l. Chauncellor and to the pryvye Counsell and to the l. Threasowrer and Barons of Th exchequier and to all and evy other psons for the doinge of anye thinge contayned in the saide lres Patents.

14. A Warraunte that the Comissions aforesaide shalbe made and passed w^{thowte} payinge anye fee or fees for the same.

15. A Warraunte to all Officers and others to Whom y^t shall appertayne to exonerate the saide S^r Humfreye for the somes of monye given and graunted to him by the lres Patents aforesaid And also to exonerate the saide psons compoundinge as aforesaide.

Endorsed—

25 Jun: 13

The Grant to S^r Hup: Gilbt for

execute of y^c St^{ys} for hors armor &c.

An abstracte of Syr Humfrey Gylbertes
letters Patentes toching the Statutes
for horse armor and weapon &c.

No. 4.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF
ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.*

(20th August, 1596.)

D Com Spal ELIZABETH by the Grace of God &c To our trustye
p Sagittariis and Welbeloved the Maior of . . . Citye of London for
ppe London. the tyme being And to our righte trustye and right
exta hatr. Welbeloved Counsellors Sir Thomas Egerton knighte
 lorde keeper of the Seale of Englande And William
lord Burghley lord high Treasurer of . . . And also to our
deer Cosin George, Earle of Cumberland and to our deer Co . . .
Counsellor Robert Earle of Essex Master of our Horses and likewise
to . . . trusty and righte Welbeloved Counsellors Henry lord of
Hunsdon our lorde . . . Chamberlayne William Lord Cobham
Thomas lord Buckhurste And to . . . right trusty and Welbeloved
Sir John Popham knighte Chief Justice of the . . . Pleas before us
to be houlden And also to our trustye and Welbeloved Counsellors
Sir Robert Cicill knight Sir John Fortescue knight Chaun . . . of
our Exchequer Sir George Carie knight Marshall of our house. Sir
D . . . Drury knight lieutenant of our Tower of London Julius Cæsar
and John . . . Doctors of the civill lawes and Masters of our Court
of Requests Sir Ri . . . Martin knight Sir John Harte knighte
Aldermen of our said Citie of London . . . Edward Stanley knight
Edward Drue our Sergeant at lawe Edward . . . our Attorney gene-
rall Thomas Flemyng our Sollicitor John Croke Recor . . . our said
City of London Thomas Powle Clerke of our Crowne William . . .
Thomas Windebanck Henry Billingesley Stephen Soame Robert Lee
Thomas . . . Thomas Loe Aldermen of our City of London Nichas
Fuller James Al . . . Richard Wilbram Tobie Woode Edmond Bowier
Bartholomewe Scott E . . . Vaughan Arthur Throckmton Thomas
Egerton Hugh Brooker Lewes . . . Ferdinando Clutterbuck Hugh

* Patent Roll, 38 Eliz., Part 13, Memb. 1 (in dorso).

Keale Stephen Powle Rowland Sma . . . Duell Esquiers Henry
Webbe George Thicknes Tobie Midleton Gi . . . Needler William
Moulton Richard Martyn Edward Kempton John Pinder . . . Thom-
linson Philip Grymes William Duncombe Nichas Goughe John Selb
. . . Richard Gymbre Lawrence Rogers William Greneway Mathewe
Archedale James Hodgeson gentlemen greeting—Albeit sundry very
good and laudable estatutes ordinances pvsions and pelamacons
heretofore have bene . . . and made as well by our moste noble Pro-
genitors as by us for the . . . mayntenance of Archery and Artillery
Within this our Realme of Eng . . . Whereby the same being put in
due execucon in tymes paste hath . . . bene bred and increased a
great force and strength towards the . . . defence and safetie of this
our sayd Realme againste forren powers . . . also a feare and terror
to all other Realmes and forreyn Enemyes in . . . Warre and hosti-
letye, yet the same good estatutes ordinances and pc . . . made as
well by us as by our saide noble pgenitors cannot nowe . . . take
place as they oughte and have done in tymes paste and sp . . . about
our Citye of London by reason that dyvers and sundrey psons . . .
having about our sayde Citie of London dyvers landes tenements and
hereditaments and seeking to enclose the same otherwise then hath
be . . . accustomed to the advancement of their owne singuler
benefitt and . . . Without respecte of others comodetye have pluckte
awaye and yet still . . . mynde to pluck away from our loving
Subjects the necessarie and pf . . . excise of Shooting in such
feildes and closes as time out of mynde . . . allowed and accustomed
to be shotte in aswell by making of such b . . . hedges as also by
plucking upp of the oulde Markes of Auncient tymes . . . in the
saide closes. Insomuch that our sayde Subjects being in the . . .
and for dyverseties and change of markes seeking to finde a marke
. . . sayd closes and severall groundes cannot by reason for the most
. . . the bancks and hedges being made of such a heichte see the
grounde . . . saide closes or feildes Within the sayde bancks as also
by reason . . . Where the bancks or hedge being but of indifferent
heichte, the dit . . . made so broad and deepe and Wanting bridges
and other convenient . . . to passe through and over the same that
our saide Subjects the ar . . . usinge their trade and pastime be verye
much hindered lett and discouraged therein and oftentimes in great
perill and daunger for lack of convenient roomes and places to shoote
in And as We be credleble informed by . . . of th aforesayde
ditchinge hedginge and inclosures is verie like ther . . . growe a very

great streighte and Wante of roome about our sayde Cytie of London as well for such as doe p'sentlye use the sayde game of Shootinge and also for those that shall hereafter exercise use or occupie the saide game . . . pastyme to the great hinderance and decay aswell of the sayde use and ex . . . of shooting as also of the saide estatutes ordinaunces p'visions and pelamacons and contrarye to the Auncient customes heretofore used about our sayde Citie of London Whereby mighte ensue to sundrie our said sub . . . occasion to haunte and frequent some other kinde of unlawfull games wh . . . there are too many inolyned Which our meaninge is shalbe in no Wise su . . . For Avoyding Whereof and for reformacon of the aforesayde enormetyes of all such other as mighte hereafter growe by reason of taking away of . . . libertie and scope of auncient tyme accustomed to be had about our said Citie of London for Archers. And trusting in your approved Wisdomes fidelities . . . good discrecons We have Assigned and appointed you to be our Comissioners . . . by these p'sents do give unto you and every of you and to the number of any Sixe of you full power and authoretie not onely to Survey all such groundes nexte adjoyning to our said Citie of London and the Suburbs the same and Within twoe miles compasse on everie parte of our sayde Citye and Suburbs as before have bene accustomed and used to . . . had markes in them for Archers to shoote at or Which any of our loving Subjects or of our Auncestors have exercised themselves in Shootinge and the same to reduce or cause to be reduced such order and estate . . . Archers as they Weare in the begynnyng of the Raigne of our most deare father Kinge Henry the Eighte but also callinge before you or any six . . . you as well the Owner and Owners Farmer and Farmers and occupiers of such groundes about our sayde Citie of London in Which sithence . . . firste yeare of the Raigne of our sayde Father have bene made a . . . broade deepe ditches high bancks and quicksetts or hedges there upon . . . thoughte by you or any sixe of you to be overthrowen and ma . . . playne or otherwise to be reformed And also such and as many . . . and lawfull men of our sayde Citye of London and Countye of Midd . . . of them whose disposicon knowledge and experience in . . . p'misses or any parte thereof you shall thinke good to understande . . . knowe and you and every of you to examyne as well upon the . . . as otherwise touchinge the p'misses as to the Wisdomes of you or any sixe of you shalbe thoughte moste convenient And upon the knowledge of the defaulte and annoyances in the p'misses

or any parte thereof Our pleasure is and We gyve unto you or any sixe of you full power and authoretie by these p^rsents to cause the same to be by the owner and owners farmer and farmers or any occupiers at their own p^per coste and charges to be amended reformed altered or chaunged in such manner and forme and Within such tyme as to the Wisdomes . . . discrecons of you or any sixe of you shalbe thoughte meet and conveniente. Whom our pleasure and comaundement is that Whatsoever shalbe in and about the p^rmisses done and executed by you or any Sixe of you by vertue and authoretie of this our Comission ye cause the same fimelye to be observed Authorisinge you or any Sixe of you further by these p^rsents that all such pson and psons beinge owner or owners farmor or farmers occupier or occupiers of the sayde groundes or any of them as you or any Sixe of you shall fynde negligent gayne sayinge rebellinge resistinge or any meane or Waye in any Wise Withstanding against you or any Sixe of you in the due execucon thereof or not obeyinge your orders or decrees in the p^rmisses to be had or made by vertue of these p^rsents that you or any sixe of you cause him or them so offendinge to be punished or payned by imprisonment or otherwise by . . . and amciament to our use as by your sayde Wisdomes shalbe thoughte requisite untill he or they shall conforme him or themselves to your order in the p^rmisses And for the better execucon of this our sayde Comission and authoretie to you given We charge and comaunde all Maiors Sheriffes Justices of peace Bayliffes Constables and all other our Officers Ministers and Subjects to be Aydinge helpinge and assisting you and everye of you in the due execucon thereof As they Will answer to the contrarie In witnes Whereof &c Witnes our Selfe at Westminster th xxth daye of Auguste.

p bre de privato sigillo.

No. 5.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF
ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.*

(1st February, 1605.)

D Com spial
dir Majori
Civitat
London
F al.

JAMES by the grace of God &c: to our trusty and wel-beloved the lord Maior of our Citty of London for the tyme being And to our righte trusty and righte Wel-beloved Councillors Thomas Lord Ellesmere lord Chauncellor of England And to our righte trusty and righte Welbeloved Cosens And Councillors Thomas Earle of Dorsett our highe Treasurer of England Thomas Earle of Suffolke lord Chamberlaine of our hous hold Charles Earle of Devonshire Maister of our Ordenaunce Roberte Earle of Salisbury our principall Secretary And to our trusty and Welbeloved Cuncellor Sir John Popham knighte Chiefe Justice of the Pleas before us to be holden assigned And also to our trusty and Welbeloved Sir Julius Ceasar Sir Roger Wilbraham knights Maisters of our Courtes of Requestes Sir Edward Coke knighte our Attorney generall Sir Thomas Challener knighte Sir John Egerton the younger knighte Sir Thomas Vavasor knighte Martiall of our household. Sir Willm Waade knighte lieftennte of our tower of London Sir Thomas Knyvett Sir Stephen Soame Sir Walter Cope Sir Edmond Bowyer Sir Thomas Fowler Sir Thomas Lake Sir Henry Mountegue Recorder of London Sir George Coppyn Clerke of our Crowne Sir Thomas Windebancke Sir Thomas Middleton Sir Thomas Bennet Sir Thomas Lowe Sir Thomas Grymes knightes Nicholas Fuller Nicholas Collin Toby Wood Edward Vaughan Hughe Browker Esquiers Thomas Thorney Hughe Middleton John Browne Rowland Smarte William Uxley William Duncombe Nichas Askew Edward Mellowes Edward Harvest Hughe Godderd Michael Crowche George Walker James Trafford Frauncis Moseley Francis Medicote Henry Addis Nicholas Parkes John Redman John Giles Richard Falsham

* Patent Roll, 3 James I., Part 16 (in dorso).

Thomas Wood Michaell Scissen Christopher Potkyn Richard Hill Robte Harland Nicholas Gouge Paule Smithe Roberte Carre Daniell Godfrey John Skeyll Thomas Gardiner William Robinson Thomas Hughes Randolphe Fenton Edward Robertes John Baker John Chambers John Vavator James Hodgesson Valentyne Lowe John Benbowe Christopher Thacker Nicholas Plunkett William Hodges John Reynoldes William Brownlowe Jerrard Pettam Marke White William Smithe John Tutt George Hastings Christopher Allington William Bigges Henry Ratcliffe Roger Aldredge John Granett George Budd James Kenven Christopher Allysone Adam Islipp and John Hollowaye Gentlemen Greeting. Albeit sondry very good and lawdable Statutes Ordinances provisions and proclamacons heretofore have bene had and made as well by us as by our most noble Progenitors and Predecessors* for the Mayntennce of Archery and Artillery Within this our Realme of England Whereby the same being put in due execucon in tymes past hathe not onely bredd and increased a great force and strengthe towards the maintennce defence and Safety of this our Said Realme against forreyne powers but also a feare and terror to all other Realmes and forreyne enemyes in tyme of Warre and hostility yet the same good Statutes Ordynances and pelamacons made by us and our said noble Progenitors cannot now so well take place as they oughte and have done in tymes paste and especially about our Cittye of London by reason that dyvers and sondry psons having about our said Cittye of London dyvers landes tenementes and hereditaments and seeking to enclose the same otherwise then hath bene accustomed to the advancement of their owne singular benefitts and gayne without respecte of others comodyty have pluckte awaye and yett still doe mynde to pluck away from our loving Subjectst the necessary and pftytable exercise in Shooting in suche feildes and closes as tyme out of mynde have been allowed to be Shott in as well by making of suche banckes and hedges as also by plucking up of the olde Markes of Auncient time Standing in the said closes Insomuche that our said Subjects being in the Comon feildes and for dyversyties and chaunge of markes seeking to fynde a marke in the said Closes and Severall groundes cannot by

* In the copies of this Patent given by Blackwell, and Highmore, the words "For the Incouragement of our Ancient Artillery Company of London and" have been here inserted.

† The words "of our Ancient Artillery Company" have been here inserted in the copies given by Blackwell, and Highmore.

reason for the moste parte the banckes & hedges being made of suche height see the ground of the said closes or feildes within the said Banckes as also by reason that Where the Bancke or hedge being but of indifferent heighte the ditches be made so broade and deepe and Wanting bridges and other convenient places to passe throughe and over the same That our Said Subjects the Archers using theire trade and pastyme be very muche hindered let and discouraged therein and often tymes in greate pill and daunger for lacke of convenient Roomes and places to shoote in And as we be credibly informed by reason of the aforesaid ditching hedging and enclosures it is very like there Will growe a very greate straighte and Want of Roome about our said Citty of London As well for suche as doe pssently use the said game of Shooting as also for those that shall hereafter exercise use or occupy the said Game and pastyme to the greate hinderaunce and decaye as well of the said use and exercise of Shooting as also of the said Statutes ordenaunces pvisyons and pclamacons and contrary to the auncient Customes heretofore used about our said Citty of London Whereby mighte ensue to sondry of our said subjectes occasyon to haunt and frequent some other kynde of unlawfull games Whereunto there are to many inclyned. Whiche our meaning is shalbe in no wise suffered for avoyding Whereof and for reformacon of the aforesaid enormytyes and of all suche other as mighte hereafter growe by reason of takeing awaye of the libtye and scope of auncient tyme accustomed to be had about our said Citty of London for Archers and trusting in your approved Wisdomes fydelyties and good discrecons. We have assigned and appointed you to be our Comissioners And by theise psentes doe give unto you and every of you and to the number of any age of you full power and authority not onely to survey all suche groundes next adjoyning to our said Citty of London and the subburbs of the same and within two myles compas on any parte of our said Citty and Suburs as before have bene accustomed and used to have had Markes in them for Archers to shoote at, or Whiche any of our loving Subjects or of our Auncestors have exercised themselves in Shooting and the same to reduce or cause to be reduced to suche order and estate for Archers as they were in the begining of the raigne of the late king of Famous Memory Kinge Henry the eight But also calling before you or any Sixe of you as well the owner and owners Fermor and Fermors and Occupyers of suche groundes aboute our said Citty of London In whiche since the firste yere of kinge Henry the eighte have bene made any broade deepe ditches highe

banckes and quicksetts or Hedges there upon beinge thought by you or any Six of you to be over throwne and made plaine or otherwise to be reformed and also suche and as many Honest and lawfull men of our said Citty of London and County of Middlesex or eyther of them whose disposicon knowledg and experience in the p'misses or any pte thereof you shall thinke good to understand and knowe, and you and every of you to examyne as well upon their othes as otherwise touchinge the p'misses as to the Wisdomes of you or any Sixe of you shalbe thoughte moste convenient and upon the knowledge of the defalties and annoyaunces in the p'misses or any parte thereof Our pleasure is and we give unto you or any sixe of you full power and authority by these p'sentes to be by the said Owner and Owners Fermor and Fermors or any occupyers at their owne pper costes and chardges to be amended Reformed altered and exchanged in suche manner and forme and within suche tyme as to the Wisdomes and discrecons of you or any Sixe of you shalbe thought meete and convenient. Whome our pleasure and comaundement is that Whatsoever shalbe in and about the p'misses done and executed by you or any Six of you by Vtue and Aucthority of this our Comissyon you cause the same firmly to be observed aucthorising you or any Six of you further by these p'sentes that all suche pson and psons being owner or owners Fermor or Fermors Occupyer or Occupyers of the said ground or any of them as you or any Six of you shall fynde negligent gaynesaying, Rebelling, resisting, or any Meane or waie in any Wise Withstanding against you or any Six of you in the due execucon thereof, Or not obeying your Orders or decrees in the p'misses to be had and made by vertue of theis p'sents That you or any Six of you cause hym or them offending to be punished or payned by ymprysonament or otherwise by fyne and amerciament to our use as by your said Wisdomes shall be thought requisit untill he or they shall conforme hym or themselves to your order in the p'misses And for the better execucon of this our said Comissyon & Aucthority to you gyven We chardge and comaunde all Maiors Sheriffes Justices of peace Bayliffs Constables and all other our Officers Ministers and subjects to be aiding helping and assisting you and every of you in the due execucon thereof As they will answere to the contrary In witnes Whereof &c Witnes our selfe at Westm^r the firste daye of February.

p ipm Regem.

No. 6.

LETTERS PATENT FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF
ARCHERY IN THE CITY OF LONDON.*

(20th December, 1632.)

D Comi spial
dir Majori
Civitatis
London
F al.

CHARLES by the grace of God king of England Scotland
Fraunce and Ireland our Defender of the faith &c To
our trustie and Welbeloved the lord maior of our Cittie
of London for the tyme being and to our right trustie
and right Welbeloved Councillors Thomas lord Coventry
lord keeper of our greate Seale of England Richard lord Weston lord
High Treasurer of England and to our right trustie and right Wel
beloved Cozen and Councillor Philippe Earle of Pembroke and Mount
gomery lord Chamblayne of our houshold and to our right trustie
and right Welbeloved Cozen Edward Earle of Norwich and to our
trusty and right Welbeloved Henry lord Leppington George lord
Goring and to our right trustie and Welbeloved Sir John Coke knight
one of our Principall Secreataries of State and to our trusty and
Welbeloved Sir Thomas Richardson knight our Chiefe Justice of the
Pleas before us to be houlden assigned Sir Robert Carre knight gentle
man of our Bedchamber Sir Henry Mildmaie knight Master of our
Jewells. Sir Thomas Aylsbury knight one of the Masters of our
Courte of Requests Sir Robert Rich knight one of the Masters of
our Courte of Chauncery Sir William Balfore knight leivetennt of our
tower of London Sir John Heydon knight leivetennt Generall of our
Ordinance Edward Littleton Esquire Recorder of our Cittie of London
Sir Kenelme Digby Sir Thomas Fowler Sir Henry Spiller Sir Percivall
Harte Sir Henry Harte Sir Leonard Farly Sir Edward Cary Sir John
Ushatt Sir Thomas Jarrett Sir Hugh Hamersley knights Sir Robert
Ducy knight and Baronett Thomas Maulson and Samuell Cranmer
Aldermen of London Thomas Cary Endimyon Porter William Carre

* Patent Roll, 8 Chas. I., Part 8 (in dorso); there is also a draft of this letter in Domestic (Chas. I.), Vol. CCXXVI., No. 49.

George Longe Richard Lowder Richard Gippes John Greene William Wall William Johnson Abraham Dawes John Jacobb George Hooker John Harrison Nathaniel Bacon Bulstrode Whitlocke Andrewe Browne Edward Hubbard John Hartwell John Plumber William Wheeler Raph Wilbraham James Clygorne Thomas Gilburne Samuells Armitage and Roger Robinson Esquires Humfrey Edwards John Wheeler Nicholas Askwith William Hodges Rowland Wilson George Walker Adam Islipp Thomas Taylor John Taylor Roger Hassall Edward Wormall William Bartlett Joseph Bradshawe John Elstone William Katherens Anthony Blades Nicholas Butler William Parker Hugh Edmonds Jeffrey Swalman Robert Budd Thomas Bowen Francis King William Adams Francis Neave John Hallywell Robert Ashwell John Ellis Richard Cawcatt Tobias Richardson Kelway Guidott Richard Draper John Hodges William Lambe Richard Butler Thomas Hughes Humfrey Gulson Richard Giles Thomas Abraham Richard Starre Raph Handson Thomas Redding John Powell Peter Wright Thomas Chapman Thomas Chune Thomas Ferris George Lowe William Williams Alexander Tracy Martyn Grimston John Baker Henry Lee Thomas Buckston Edward Taylor Nicholas Tench George Lull John Slany Samuells Baker William Needes John Powell John Jefferson Thomas Cooke Robert Westbrooke James Mason Francis Gray Arthure Lee John Gover Richard Yeane Henry Shelbury Lancelott Hobson Stephen Estwicke Cornelius Cooke William Crafte John Newgate and Andrew Holdsworth Gentlemen Greeting Albeit sundry good and laudable Statutes Ordinances pvisions and pclamacons heretofore have been had and made as well by us as by our moste noble pgenitors and predecessors * for the mayntennce of Archery and Artillery Within this our Realme of England Whereby the same being put in due execucon in tymes past hath not only bredd and increased a greate force and strength towards the mayntennce defence and safety of this our said Realme against forrayne powers but alsoe a feare and terror to other Realmes and forrayne Enemyes in tymes of Warre and Hostilitie yet the same good Statutes ordinances and pclamacons made by us and our said noble pgenitors cannot nowe soe Well be executed as they ought and have done in tymes past and specially about our Citty of London by reason that divers and sundry psons having about our said

* The following words have been again inserted here by both Blackwell, and Highmore—"For the encouragement of our Ancient Artillery Company of the City of London and," &c.

Cittie of London divers landes tenemts and hereditaments and seeking to inclose the same otherwise then have been accustomed to the advancement of their owne singular pffitt and gayne and Without respectes of others comoditie have plucke awaie and yet still doe mynd to plucke away from our loving Subjects * the necessary and profitable exercise of Shooting in such fieldes and closes as tyme out of mynd have been allowed to be Shott in as well by making of such banckes and hedges as alsoe by plucking upp of the ould markes of Auncyent tyme standing in the said closes Insoemuch that our said Subjects being in the comon feildes and for diversities and chang of markes Seeking to find a marke in the said closes and Severall groundes cannot see the ground of the said closes or fieldes Within the banckes and hedges because they are made of soe greate height and Where the banckes or hedges are but of indifferent height the ditches be made soe broad and deepe and wanting bridges and other convenient places to passe through and over the same our said Subjects the Archers using their commendable exercise and pastime be very much hindered letted and discouraged therein and often tymes in greate perill and danger for lacke of convenyent romes and places to shoote in And as We be crediblie informed by reason of the aforesaid ditching hedging and enclosures it is very like there Will growe a greate straight and Want of roome about our said Cittie of London as well for such as doe presently use the said Exercise of Shooting as alsoe for those that shall hereafter exercise the said game and pastyme to the greate hinderance and decaye of the said use and Exercise of Shooting contrary to the purporte and true meanyng of the said Statutes Ordinaunces pvisions and pclamacons and contrary to the Auncyent Customes heretofore used about our said Cittie of London Whereby might ensue to sundry of our said Subjects occasion to haunt and frequent some other kind of unlawfull games Whereunto there are too many inclyned Which our meanyng is shalbe in noe wise suffred For avoyding Whereof and for reformacon of the aforesaid enormyties and of all such other as might hereafter growe by reason of taking awaie of the libertie and scope of auncyent tyme accustomed to be had about our said Cittie of London for Archers and trusting in your approved Wisedomes fidelities and good discrecons Wee have assigned and appointed you to be our Comissioners and by theis presents doe give

* The words "the members of our Ancient Artillery Company" have been again here inserted in the copies given by Blackwell, and Highmore.

unto you and every or any Sixe or more of you full power and authoritie not only to Survey all such groundes next adjoyning to our said Cittie of London and the Suburbes of the same and Within twoe miles compasse of any parte of our said Cittie and Suburbes as before have been accustomed and used to have had markes in them for Archers to shoote at or in Which any of our loving Subjects or the Subjects of any of our Auncestors have exercised themselves in Shooting and the same to reduce or cause to be reduced to such order and estate for Archers as they Were in the beginyng of the raigne of the late King James our father of blessed memorie but alsoe calling before you or any Sixe or more of you as well the Owner & Owners Farmor and Farmors and Occupiers of such groundes about our said Cittie of London in Which since the firste yeare of the raigne of the late King James have been made any broad deepe ditches high banckes and quicke Setts or Hedges thereupon being thought by you or any Sixe or more of you to be overthrowne and made playne or otherwise be reformed And alsoe such and as many honest and lawfull men of our said Cittie of London and Countie of Midd or either of them Whose Deposicons knowledge and experience in the premisses or any parte thereof you shall thincke good to understand and knowe and them and every of them to examyne as well upon their oathes as otherwise touching the premisses as to the Wisedomes of you or every or any Sixe or more of you shalbe thought moste convenyent and upon the knowledge of the faults and annoyances in the premisses or any parte thereof Our pleasure is and Wee give unto you or any Six or more of you full power and authoritie by theis presents to cause the same by the said Owner and Owners Farmor & Farmors or any Occupiers at their owne pper costes and charges to be amended reformed altered and changed in such manner and forme and Within such tyme as to the Wisedomes and discrecons of you or any Sixe or more of you shalbe thought meete and convenyent Whome our pleasure and comaundement is that whatsoever shalbe in and about the premisses done and executed by you or any Sixe or more of you by vertue authoritie of this our Comission you cause the same firmly to be observed authorizing you or any Sixe or more of you further by theis presents that all such pson and psons being Owner or Owners Farmor or Farmors Occupier or Occupiers of the said grounds or any of them as you or any Sixe or more of you shall find negligent gaynsaying rebelling resisting or any meane or Waie Withstanding against you or any Six or more of you in the due execucon thereof or not

obeying your orders or Decrees in the premisses to be had or made by vertue of theis presents That you or any Sixe or more of you cause him or them offending to be punished as by your said Wisedomes shall be thought requisite untill he or they shall conforme him or themselves to your order in the premisses And for the better execucon of this our Comission and authoritie to you given Wee charge and comaund all Maiors Sheriffs Justices of Peace Bailiffs Constables and all other our Officers Ministers and Subjects to be ayding helping and assisting to you and every of you in the due execucon thereof as they Will aunswere to the contrary In Witnes &c Witnes our selfe at Westm. the twentieth daie of December.

p ipm Regem.

No. 7.

PETITION OF THE ARCHERS IN THE CITY OF LONDON
FOR LETTERS PATENT CONFIRMING THOSE PRE-
VIOUSLY GIVEN, AND ORDERS THEREON.*TO THE KINGES MOST EXCELLENT MA^{TIE}.

The peticon of the Lords knights and gentelmen in and about the City of London delighted in and enjoyned at law the laudable exercise of Archery.

Humbly Sheweth,

That whereas yo^r peticoners have been tolerated about the City of London according to custome and law to shoote at pricked-out marks and to set up divers Stakes at severall distances for marks at rovers at w^{ch} they used dayly and exercised them selves to Shoote freely And whereas in these late and worst of tymes the farmers and feildkeepers made insolent not only have of late but dayly doe pull up the afore-said stakes & marks being none of their proper goodes, and haveing cost much money the planting of them there converted them to their owne uses, farthermore setting their mastif-dogs at yo^r peticoners in and at this Lawfull exercise.

May it please yo^r Ma^{ty} for our redresses to grant us yo^r Ma^{ties} gracious Comission in form as hath been granted by yo^r Ma^{ties} Grandfather King James in the 3^d yeare of his reign and farthermore continuedly by due course of law granted us againe by yo^r Ma^{ties} father King Charles of ever blessed memory in the 8th yeare of his reigne.

And yo^r Peticoners shall pray.

At the Court at Whitehall 20^{mo} April 1665.

His Majesty is graciously pleased to grant the Pet^{rs} request & accordingly his pleasure is that Mr. Attorney or Mr. Sollicitor generall do prepare a Bill fit for his Ma^{ties} royal signature conteyning a grant to the Pet^{rs} of liberty to Shoote wth in their usual bounds according to

* Domestic (Chas. II.), Vol. CXVIII., No. 101.

the ancient liberty formerly granted by King James & his late Ma^y and the same to bee granted and directed to such persons as the Pet^{rs} shall nominate.

T. HOLLES.

Endorsed—

“Peticon of y^e Lords kn^{ts} & gentl delighted in Archery.

“Who have beene tolerated according to y^e Custome of Lawe about y^e Citty of London to set up sevall stakes for Markes at Rovers. W^{ch} Stakes are pulled up by y^e Feild keeps who set their Mastiffe doggs at y^e Pet^{rs}.

“Y^r Ma^y to grant a Comission as formly hath beene granted by yo^r Ma^{ties} royal Grandfather & Father.”

APPENDIX D.

PETITIONS, &c., OF WILLIAM THOMAS,
MASTER-GUNNER, 1581-2.

No. 1.

PETITION OF WILLIAM THOMAS, MASTER-GUNNER TO
QUEEN ELIZABETH, TOUCHING THE SUPPLY OF
GUNNERS TO THE ROYAL NAVY, &c., 1581.*

TO THE QUENYS MOSTE EXCELLENT MAJESTIE.

IN moste humble wise shewen unto yo^r moste excellent Majestie your moste faithfull Subjects and Servants the Gonners aswell belonginge to your Tower of London as to the Navye of this your Realme. That whereas at this present there are verye fewe (other then yo^r Majesties Servaunts) to be had in this your graces Realme w^{ch} are skilfull in the science and knowlledge of Shotinge in greate ordennce As when nede requireth for the provision and defence of your Majesties Navye and other affayres in this yo^r Realme. Experience hath shewed and is daylye to be sene and founde true at everye presse made for the settinge forthe of your graces Navye. For whereas your graces Navye requireth to be furnyshed in tyme of service w^t a supplye of eight hondred gonners. There is not founde when they come to service (besides your graces owne servants) four-skore hable men to supplye the places of gonners So that when any of your graces shippes of yo^r Navye of the burthen of CCCC Tonne beinge appoynted to serve dothe require to be furnyshed

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CXLVII., No. 94.

w^t xxxvj gonners . There is not founde amonge the said number Sixe hable men expert in the saide Science. And notw^t standinge that those men who are pressed for gonners be found altogether Unskilfull in the said Science yet doo they take upon theym to supplye the place of gonners as well in y^{or} graces Navye as in M^cchaunts Shippes to the greate daunger of your graces saide Navye and youre M^cchaunts saide Shippes if oportunitye of s^tvice shoulde so require yet necessytye requireth to presse theym.

For Reformacon whereof, and to th intent that aswell your Majesties Navye, as the M^cchaunts shippes of this yo^r Realme maye be the better furnyshed in tyme of service and otherwise w^t skilfull men in the saide Science, (a thing verye requisite) and also that it maye the better be knowen at the tyme of any presse wheare to have sufficient and hable men to furnyshe your grace Navye. Maye it please yo^r most excellent Ma^{tie} w^t th advice of yo^r lorde spirituall and tempoll and yo^r Comons in this Highe C^{orte} of Parlyam^t assembled andby the aucthorytye of the same: That y^t maye be enacted. That the M^r Gonner of this yo^r Realme or his Depute w^t any other of y^{or} moste expte gonners in Fee in yo^r Tower of London, whome the same M^r Gonner or his Depute shall assigne and thincke mete to associate w^t hym And also suche other psone and persones whome the saide M^r Gonner and the saide Fower other associates w^t hym shall Depute in these haven Townes ensuyng that is to saye in falmowthe in plymowthe in Dartmowthe in lyme in Bristowe in Chichester in Pole in Portismowthe in Barwicke in Newecastell Uppon tyne in Hull in Boston in lynne and in Yarmowthe shall and maye have full power and aucthorytye to prove and trye th experience & skill of evy psone that shall serve or take charge as chief or M^r Gonner in any shippe or shippes or vessells of this yo^r Realme and upon the pfe and fynding of evy or any suche psone or psones skilfull in the saide Science or facultie, first to take his name and dwellinge place and the same to Register in a boke for the saide purpose to be kepte by the said M^r Gonner or his sufficient Depute. And the like boke to be kepte by other his deputies in the haven Townes before expressed. And the names of such 3 psones whome the saide Deputes shall allowe for gonners also to be Regestred in the same and there upon to graunte to evy suche psone so founde skilfull a Lycense to contynue and exercise the saide Science and facultie of a chief or M^r Gonner in any shippe or shippes or vessells of this your Realme. And that no man^r of psone

or psones whatsoev^r shall at any tyme or tymes after the Feaste of the Birthe of oure Lorde god nowe next ensuyng and comynge take charge or enterprize to serve as a chief or M^r Gonner in any englishe shippe or shippes or vessells of what burthen or burthens soev^r the same be passage oute of this yo^r Realme to any parte or place or pties of beyond the Seas oute of yo^r Majesties domynyons other then onelye suche psones and psones as the M^r Gonner of this Realme, for the tyme beinge or his Depute w^t iiij other of the moste expert gonners in yo^r Tower in Fee appoynted by and associate w^t the saide M^r Gonner or his Depute as is aforesaide or the Depute or Deputes of the same M^r Gonner and any other gonners associate w^t hym (to be appoynted in the said Haven Townes) shall have had proufe and experience of his and their skill and knowleedge. And there uppon shall lycense and assigne to and for that purpose accordinge as is above mencioned Uppon payne of evy psones offendinge herein to forfett for evy offence at evy voiage that he or they shall make contrarye to the true meanynge hereof ——— of lawfull money of England and one monethes ymprisonmen^t. And that it maye also be enacted by th aucthoryt^ye aforesaide That no englishe shippe or shippes or vessells whatsoev^r of the burthen of lx Tonne or upward shall at any tyme or tymes after the saide Feaste of the birthe of o^r lorde God nowe next ensuyng passe or sayle oute or frome this yo^r noble Realme or any pte or place thereof to any parte or place of beyond the Seas oute of yo^r Majesties domynyons w^t oute that evy suche shippe and vessell at evy voiage to be made w^t her havinge ordenaunce have and shall have suche convenyent number of Gonners as shalbe mete for a shippe of that or like burthen accordinge to the order hereafter ensuyng that is to saye: That evy shippe or vessell of the burthen of lx Tonne shall have ij gonners at leaste w^{ch} shall exercise that facultie whereof the Chief or M^r Gonner to be suche one w^{ch} hathe bene allowed and lycensed to exercise the Rome of a gonner by suche psones as are for that purpose above appoynted to have aucthoryt^ye as is above mencioned. And evy shippe and vessell of the burthen of c. Tonne shall have iiij gonners at the leaste w^{ch} shall exercise that facultie Whereof the chief or M^r Gonner to be suche one as hathe bene allowed for a gonn as is aforesaide. And so to and for evy encrease of xl Tonne upward of the hole burthen of evy suche shippe and shippes and vessells one gonner more in number to exercise that facultie uppon payne that the owener or own^rs of evy suche shippe and shippes or vessells that shall so passe the Seas havinge ordenaunce for

defence and not havinge the saide number of gonners as is afore-
mencioned (after the burthen of evy such shippe and shippes and
vessells accordinge to the true meanyng hereof) shall forfett and
paye for evry gonner lacking of the due number at evy voiage uppon
due proufe thereof made ——— of lawfull money of England.
The one moytye of all w^{ch} losses and forfeitures to be to the use of
your Majestie yo^r heires and Successoures and th other moytye to be to
the use of the Mr Gonner of England and the rest of the Companie of
gonners in your Tower of London in Fee for the tyme beinge or of
such other psone or psones as they or the greater pte of theym shall
lycense and appoynte to sue for the same in any of yo^r Courts or
Courts of recorde by accon of debtte bill playnte Informacon or
otherwise In w^{ch} sute no essoyne ptecccon or wager of lawe for the
defendaunte shalbe admytted.

Provided alwayes and be it further enacted : That the saide Mr
Gonner w^t the iiij other gonners appoynted and associate w^t hym
for the lycenseng of Mr Gonners of Shippes as is abovemencioned
shall have aucthorytye to make and appoynte under hym and theym
sufficient depute and deutes for theym to examyne prove and trye the
experience and skill of evy psone that shall take charge as Mr Gonner
in any shippe or shippes or vessells at the saide Havens and Townes
of Falmowthe Plymowthe Dartmowthe Lyme Bristowe Chichester
Pole Portismowthe Barwicke Newecastell uppon Tyne Hull Boston
Lynne and Yarmowthe as is above mencioned.

No. 2.

SCHEME FOR TRAINING THE GUNNERS OF THE TOWER
IN THE ARTILLERY GARDEN. BY WILLIAM THOMAS,
MASTER GUNNER, 1581.*

Itm that once in the yere viz at Mighelmas all the Gonners and other servitures apperteyning to that office doe appere wⁱⁿ the Tower of London there to give there names to the Clarke of the said Office of there Apparançe and then to be comaunded to assemble in the Artillerie Garden upon an Appointed daie in the presence of the aforesaide Officers. And by the Instruccion of the M^r Gonner to shewe proof of there knowlege and cunying in the use and practize of the great and small ordinance. W^{ch} shalbe very necessarie as well to cause them to acknowledge there dueties to there soveraine ladie and M^{rs} as also to force them to be redy and serviceable in that exercize: For want of w^{ch} Meting and Assemblie the most part of those Gonners to whom her Ma^{tie} graunteth fee and wages so sone as they be assured of living doe disperse them selfe in severall places utterly ignorant to the said Office's and M^r Gonner, that when time of Service is unskilfull men suche as nev^r knewe what Gonne ment be of necessite interteigned, for want of those that be bounde at suche time to make there present repaire. And so the Quenes Ma^{tie} deceived of an expert Gonner and yet charged w^t fee and wages, and also the service by unskilfull men hyndred and the comendable science in tracte of time decaied and forgotten.

Itm that where the said place comonly called the Artillerie garden was of purpose given by the prince of famous Memorie kinge Henry the eight to th office of Th ordinance for the trayning use and practize of Gonners: a thing very requisite in time of peace and Warre for the defence of the Realme and service of her. Ma^{tie} yt maie be lawfull to the said officers iiij^{or} times of the yere at the least to assemble suche and so many gonnes^{rs} that be in her Ma^{ties} ordinarie fee and wages wⁱⁿ the said garden, as they shall thincke mete: there

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CXLVII., No. 95.

to putt in practize the use of the great and small ordinance, to th intent that the knowlege w^{ch} they have alredie maie be mainteined and increased for her Ma^{ties} better service when they shalbe ymployed in the same and at suche time to allowe shotte and powder w^t other necessaries as to there discrecions shalbe thought mete and requisite Wherof the M^r of Th ordinance in any wise to be made privie. And therein to folowe his onely ordre and appointment.

No. 3.

REASONS SHOWING THE NECESSITY FOR A "CORPORATION OF GUNNERS," BY WILLIAM THOMAS, MASTER-GUNNER, 1582.*

CARTEYNE articles wherein are set downe the necessitie of a Corporacon for the Companie Gonners and the benifyt ensuinge there uppon.

1. Firste the number of skilfull Gonners at this present to be hadd, is soe smale as in tyme of neede there have not ben founde above a hundrethe and Fiftye able men beside hir Majesties owne servaunts.

2. Everye shippe of Fower hundrethe Tonnes will require the number of Sixe and Thirtye Gonners, againste the whiche there are not Syxe expert men at all tymes to be had.

3. The Navye and Service of this Realme by Sea and Lande, yf occacon shoulde happen, cannot require soe Fewe as Seven hundrethe gonners, and then to commit the chardge of greate ordenaunce to ignorant persons is a thinge moste daungerous, beinge for want of governement, more readie to destroye the subjecte then to anoye the ennemye.

4. Itm whereas for want of the said corporacon everye man that will maie pretende the Science though he be never soe unskelfull to the greate daunger as well of hir Majesties shippes, as also of the Merchaunts as some of them have proved to late, to the utter discouraginge of those that for their skill and knowledge as worthy to

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CLVII., No. 40.

be cherished. It is provided by a Clause of the said Corporacon that the Mr Gonner of everye Merchauntes shipp of the burden of ——— Tonnes be placed by the heade Maisters of the saide Corporacon of gonners for the better preferment of suche as deserve, And the incurragement of others in that Facultie.

5. The like also to be done in all the Forts and places of service within the Realme. And Triall to be had of the sufficiencie of those alreadie placed, a thinge moste needefull to be looked unto consideringe the strength of those placs to depende wholye upon the use of greate ordenaunce.

6. By All all which the premisses as the number no doubte shalbe dailye increased and augmented for the better Service of her Ma^{tie} and the strengthe of the Realme. Soe by the keapinge also of a Register of their names and dwellinge placs in the said Corporacon Likewise remembred, thei maye be at anie tyme founde readye for service upon all expedicons.

Endorsed—

“Certayne articles set downe by the Mr Gonner
of England for the service of her Ma^{tye}.”

No. 4.

THE DRAFT OF THE CHARTER PROPOSED TO BE GRANTED TO THE FRATERNITY OF ARTILLERY; SIMILAR TO THAT OF THE ARTILLERY COMPANY. BY WILLIAM THOMAS, MASTER-GUNNER, 1582.*

CAUSES and EFFECTS of a Corporacon For Gunnarye of greate and smale ordenaunce to be graunted From the Queenes Matie.

THE EFFECTES.

To increase good Gonners: to geve credit to the facultie and to holde it in good government.

THAT there be one Bodye and perpetuall Fellowship Incorporated of her Mat^{ies} erection &c that shalbe called the Fraternitie Companye and Fellowship of Artillerye of greate and smale ordenaunce for ever by succession to endure, in that name. And that there be Chiefe Governors appoynted for the Rule thereof. Of which principall Governors, the M^r of her highnes ordenaunce.

The Livetennaunt of the same ordenaunce. And the M^r Gonner of Englande for the tyme beinge shalbe the Chiefe and the same Chiefe governors nowe to be nominated and constituted by her Mat^{ies} Lres Patent.

To be readie to redresse eche suddeyn event and yet to endure no longer then they shall deale well.

THAT the saide heade Governors maye freelye at all tymes hereafter choose and appoynte Foure of the moste expert, sage and skilfull Persons of the saide Fraternitie, to be under Mastes^{rs} which shalbe assistants to the saide heade M^{rs} and shall continewe in their Rowmes and authorityte duringe the pleasure of the heade Mastes^{rs}.

To receave and paye and to have the government and custodie of the Lands goods &c of the saide fraternitie and

THAT the saide heade Masters and under Masters with assent of ten others of the moste auncient persons of the saide Fraternitie maye yearelye uppon the feaste daye of the purificacion of the blessed Virgyn Marye, electe Twoe other Persons of the saide Cominaltye to be Guerdians, w^{ch} wardens are also firste to be nominated in theise Lres Patents and shall onelye

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CLVII., No. 41.

THE EFFECTES.

to yealde accomplisment thereof &c at the yeares ende.

To houlde the number of officers continuallye good order.

To animate the fraternitie through hope of credite safelye, and preferment to be Industrious, and yet to tie them Within Lymite.

To treate and counsell for the State and Wise government of the saide fraternitie and to make and ordeine Lawes for that purpose: and to increase the nombre of skilfull gunners Whereof theare is great want.

To avoide the placinge of unskilfull men which friendship hath hearetofore

THE CAUSES.

continewe for one whole yeare followinge, and gove'n by the consent and advisement of the saide heade Masters and Governours.

THAT when anye Parson beinge under Master or Wardeyn of the saide Fraternitie shall die or be displaced. That then and soe often the heade Master^{rs} &c. (for the tyme beinge) maye Lawfullye electe and appoyncte one or mo other pson or psons of the saide Fraternitie into the rometh of hym or them so put oute, or deceased to execute the same duringe the residue of the tyme then to come, of the officer deceased or put oute.

THAT the saide Fraternitie be forever made a bodie corporate by that name habile and capable by lawe to purchase take and possesse in fee ppetuities Tearme of Lyves or yeares or othe^rweis Manno^{rs} Messuagies, Lands &c. And them to sell Alyen &c. So as (it be not in Mortmayne) without speciall Licence of her Ma^{tie} &c, nor the lands &c purchased excede not the cliere yearlye value of ——— anye Statute &c. to the contrarye. And that the same Fraternitie (by that name) ympleade and be ympleaded &c. in all Courts, and before all Judges for all matters concerninge the saide Fraternitie &c. and the affayres and busines of the same onelye, as largelye as anye other Corporacon of this Realme may doe, and have a comon seale thearefore.

THAT the saide Master^{rs} and Rulers and Cominaltye maye at all tymes at their pleasure (within th Artillerye Yarde, or in anye other convenient place) assemble together, as other Corporacons of the Citye use to doe in their halles. And that the said Masters with their Assistents together wth the Wardeyns and Ten of the moste auneynt of the saide Cominaltye &c. and their Successo^{rs} may make lawes &c. for the good condicon and lawdable rule of the saide Fraternitie from tyme to tyme, And maye admit to be free of the saide Corporacon suche and soe manye as shalbe by them thoughte meete good convenient and necessarye.

THAT no maner of pson from hensforth shalbe placed in anye Gonners Rowme, or take chardge of anye peece of greate ordonaunce, or be admitted into her Ma^{ties} Fee in or about anye of her Ma^{ties} holdes &c. or for the service of the Seas. But onelye by the consent of the M^r of the Ordonaunce, and

THE EFFECTES.

placed to the great danger of her Majesties hold hasarde of the losse of her ordenaunce and greate trouble to the Realme &c if the enemye should attempte.

To avoyde the rashe audacities of unskilfull Novises and the danger depending thereon and to furnishe all shippes with perfecte good Gonners.

To keepe all gonners in obedience. And within government.

To limit the power of the Masters &c.

To encourage the towarde and obedient.

To encrease knowledge.

To avoyde disordre of unrulye People and perill from the Gonner.

THE CAUSES.

upon prooffe made of sche psons habilitie by the under Mr^s and Wardeyns of the said Fraternitie. And also that he be Free of the saide cominaltye and have his Placard for the same under the comon Seale of the said Fraternitie. And that the saide Masters Rulers and Wardens for the tyme beinge shall at their pleasures at all times convenient view searche and trie all the gonners which do or shall serve in her Mat^s Forts &c.—And to signifye to ——— the names of the unskilfull that they maye be removed, and others of more skill placed.

THAT no pson or psons shall at anye tyme heereafter frequent to shoote in anye ordenaunce greate or smale in anye ship of this Realme beinge above the burthen of Fyftie Tonnes excepte he be free of the said Fraternitie, and assigned theareto by the Masters of the same, upon suche payne as the saide Mr^s or their assistants shall asseesse. That the saide Mr^s and Rulers maye make lawes, and also limyt mulctes and penalties upon the offendo^rs in the contrarye: And also forfeitures and ymprisonment or either of them upon anye offendo^r of the saide Fraternitie for anye Fencetouchinge the Fellowshipe: Againste whiche lawes yf anye of the saide Fraternitie be founde contrarious, the Mr^s Rulers and Assistants shall and maye punishe them accordinge to their discrecons as the qualitee of the offence requirethe: and the offendo^r not to declyne from the saide Mr^s &c. So as the saide Lawes onelye concerne the saide Mr^s, Wardeyns, Rulers, Cominaltye, men and matters of the saide Fraternitie. And be not againste the lawes &c., of this Realme, ne contrarye to the severall dueties of her Mat^s subjects towards her highness her heires and Successo^rs. And that the said Mr^s &c. may take the fynes &c. to the use and toward the mayntenaunce of the said Cominaltye.

THAT everye pson of this Fraternitie shall and maye use and exerceyse to shoote in greate and smale ordenaunce in Th'Artillerye Garden or in anie other place meete or convenient for that purpose without Incurring anye penaltye &c. for the same.

THAT yf anye pson throughe his owne negligence or rashe audacitie be slayne or hurte in runninge standinge goinge or beinge betwixte anye knowen marke, or marke in open place shot at by the Mr^s Rulers and cominaltye of the saide Frater-

THE EFFECTES.

THE CAUSES.

nitye, after he that shootethe shall openlye and lowdelye pronounce this usuall worde (Faste) That then suche M^r Ruler or brother whatsoever shall not by that occacon be attached &c. molested &c. or suffer deathe, nor loase anye member, nor forfeicte anye Lands &c.

THAT theise Lres be made Patents with oute fyne or fee greate or smale in the Chauncerye to her Majesties use, or to the use of her highnes heires in the Hanaper of the saide Chauncerye &c. So that expresse mencon &c. In witnes &c.

Endorsed—

“ Causes and Effectes of a Corporacon for
Gunnarye of greate and smale Ordnance, &c.”

No. 5.

SUGGESTIONS MADE BY WILLIAM THOMAS, MASTER-GUNNER, TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL, FOR CARRYING OUT THE PRECEDING SCHEME, 1582.*

A breife contente of suche doubtfull informacion as yo^r humble Oratoure, William Thomas, hathe of long time, soughte opportunitie, to shewe unto yo^r Honnor, by wourde of mouthe.

1. Where it hathe pleased the Almightye of his greate love, towards this Realme of Englande, to blesse the same, not onelie wth a puissaunt Navye of shippes for defence, but also hathe stirred up, the myndes of Princes and Nobillitie, to furnishe them, to their greate charges, with plentie of greate and terrible Ordennce, to be the onelie terrour to the Enemies, as is better knowen Unto yo^r honor, then yo^r Orato^r can sett forth.

2. This realme thus beinge indewed, with twoo so notable blessinge all faithfull subjects are to lament the wante of skilfull men, to supplye the roome of skilfull gonners ptinent to the same, Whiche wante hath ofte beene founde at generall prests And if occasion were, woulde be nowe proved, for it is moste certaine, that there woulde not be founde so many skilfull gonners, as fower of her Highenes shippes shoulde have occasion to occupie.

3. Under yo^r Honnors Correccion yo^r Oratoure hartelie wisheth that by yo^r Honnors meanes, there maie be founde and in time established some good order, that there maie be a full supplie of skilfull gonners to serve in Her Majesties Navie at every prest, if occasion shall serve. Otherwise in respecte of the same wante, there is no other successe to be looked for, but the same Navie to be made prizes, to the Enemies, or to be destroyed, by the unskilfulnes of the gonners thereof. Orelle be forced to runne awaie, to the greate encouragement of the Enemies abroade and at home, Whiche yo^r Orato^r hartelie praieth to Almightye God maie be, by your honnors good discrecion speedilie prevented.

* Domestic (Eliz.), Vol. CLVII., No. 42.

For the remedie of the causes aforesaide, in yo^r Oratoures simple judgemente, (under yo^r Honno^rs correccion) bee, as followeth :

1. Wheare there was a Charter graunted to the fraternitie of Artillery in greate and small Ordennce, by the famous Prince H. 8 and the peice of grounde nowe called th artillery gardein, by his graces meanes appoincted, for the exercize of the same fraternitie as by the leasse thereof graunted, to the same fraternitie, beinge left in the handes of Sir William Pelham maie appeare and the same Charter since by him delyvered to the handes of the right honorable, the Lorde Treasurer, and as it is saide cannot be founde. That it woulde please your Honnor to be the meanes, if so it maie stande wth yo^r Honno^rs pleasure, that the same Charter, maie be confyrmed and newe established, with other nedefull addicions thereunto, as hereafter shalbe shewed.

2. That yo^r Honno^r with some others as yo^r Honno^r shalbe thereunto best advised, wolde be the special cheife maisters or gouernours of the same fraternitye, for the more effectuall and speedie reformation of the foresaide wante, and reducinge the same to good order.

3. That there maie be, by the cheife maisters or gouerno^rs chosen, power of the cheifest of her Majesties gonners, to be under M^rs whoe with the M^r Gonner of Englande maie have the teachinge of all the Schollers, and the proving of all suche men as shall take upon them the charge of a Maister gonner, in any of Mat^{ies} shippes forte or Castells, or shall have of her Majestie any gonners fee, and to make reporte to the cheife Maisters of their knowledge, before they shalbe admytted to any Service.

4. That it woulde please yo^r Hono^r to take suche order, as that, noe shippe or vessell, having Ordennce in her, shall crosse the Seas withoute that the same have in her suche number of gonners, as hereafter is lymyted, videlt, every Shippe of the burthen of lx tonnes, to have three gonners, whereof the cheife or M^r gonner, to be suche a one, as shalbe tryed allowed and lysenced by suche as shalbe for that purpose appoincted, and everye shippe of iiij score tonnes, to have fower gonners, to be tried as aforesaide, and so for every xx tonne, one gonner more to number.

5. That the cheife Officers in every the Havens townes ports and places, where shipping is used, shall take the names of all psones in the same townes ports and places, whiche doe take charge, or serve as a gonner in any shippe or vessell, and the same register in a booke for that purpose, and in every Easter terme, sende up the same

names, and their dwelling places, to the Mr Gonner and his fower Associats for the time beinge, by whiche it maie be knowen, where to have skilfull gonners, to serve her Ma^{tie} when oportunitie requireth.

6. That all suche shippes, as shalbe freighted wthin the ryver of thamis, with merchaundize or gooddes, shall for the safegarde thereof, have for everie two peices one suche sea-faring man as shalbe a scholler, to be taughte and instructed in the science of Shootinge in greate and small ordennce accordinge to the intent of her Majesties allowance, for the same purpose.

7. That there maie be, by the cheife M^{rs} suche streight com-
aundem^t given to the fower under Maisters and the Mr Gonner, that, that poulder, and other her Majesties allowaunce, for the teaching and instructing of Schollers in the Scyence or Misterie of Shootinge in greate and small Ordennce, be by them justlie and truelie expendyd, aboute the same purpose that it is allowed for, and not otherwise, uppon some paine and perrill to fall thereon.

8. Also that the fower Associate or Undermaisters, wth the M^r gonner, for the better service of her Majestie, maie have the prooffe of all suche salt peter, cole, sulphure, powder matche ordennce cariages wheelles, stocks and iron worke, as shalbe for Her Majesties service and store and that none shalbe received but that, that they shall finde to be good and fitt for her Highenes service, uppon some penaltie to fall thereon by yo^r Honno^{rs}.

9. Then that there maie be sett downe suche a perfect government in everye one of Her Majesties shippes by yo^r Honno^{rs}, bothe for their owne safe gardes, and a terror to the Enemiye, as heretofore was never put in practize by any.

Endorsed—

“WILLIAM THOMAS,

“Notes touching the increace of gonners.”

APPENDIX E.

THE following lines, composed by the Marshal of the Company, on the completion of the Armoury in 1622, were published on the occasion.*

LONDON'S HONOUR, AND HER CITIZENS' APPROVED
LOVE, EXERCISING ARMS IN THE ARTILLERY
GARDEN, LONDON.

- The Fabrick. This Architecture, Phoenix of our Age,
 (All Europe cannot shew her Equipage)
 Is Mars his Mistress, which retains the Store
 Of Mars his Arms, being Mars his Paramore.
 This Fabrick was by Mars his Soldiers fram'd,
 And Mars his Armouries this Building named.
- The Soldiers' It holds five hundred Arms, to furnish those
Honour. That love their Sovereign, and will daunt his Foes,
 They spend their time, and do not care for Cost ;
 To learn the use of Arms, there's nothing lost.
 Both Time and Coin, to do their Country good,
 They'll spend it freely, and will lose their Blood.
- The Alder- Our City London is a Royal Thing ;
men's Love For it is call'd the Chamber of our King,
 Whose worthy Senate we must not forget,
 Their Grant and our Request together met.
 They cherish us, and we do honour them ;
 Where Soldiers find true Love, they'll love again.

* Maitland, Vol. 2, Book II. p. 799, 3rd ed. 1760 ; Highmore, pp. 57, 58.

- The Ground.** The Ground whereon this Building now doth stand,
The Teasel Ground hath heretofore been nam'd.
- The Donor of
the Ground.** And William Prior of the Hospital
Then of our blessed Lady, which we call
Saint Mary Spittle without Bishopgate,
Did pass it by Indenture, bearing date
January's third day in Henry's Time
Th' Eighth of that name; the Convent did conjoin
- The Use.** Unto the Guild of all Artillery
Cross-Bows, Hand-Guns, and of Archery.
- The Term of
Years.** For full three hundred years, excepting three;
The Time remaining we shall never see.
- The Council's
Confirmation.** Now have the noble Council of the King
Confirm'd the same, and under Charles his Wing
We now do exercise, and of that little
Teasel of Ground, we inlarge St. Mary Spittle.
Trees we cut down, and Gardens added to it;
Thanks to the Lords, that gave us leave to do it.
- A Loyal Sub-
ject's Desire.** Long may this Work endure, and ne'er decay,
But be supported till the latest Day,
All loyal subjects to the King and State,
Will say Amen, maugre all Spleen and Hate.

MARISCHALLUS PETOWE, Composuit

APPENDIX F.

RULES AND REGULATIONS

OF THE

ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

ARTICLE I.

CANDIDATES FOR MEMBERSHIP.

Section 1.—Any citizen of the United States, of lawful age, desiring to become a Member of the Company, may be proposed at any of its meetings by a Member; providing, however, that said proposition shall in all cases be accompanied with the amount of the entrance-fee (twenty-five dollars) and the names of not less than three Members for reference as to character and fitness.

Section 2.—Every Candidate shall stand proposed over one meeting, and be reported on by the Canvassing Committee before being balloted for, and shall not then be admitted if five negative ballots are cast.

Section 3.—No person, after being notified by the Clerk of his admission, shall be regarded as a Member who does not sign the Company Book within three months therefrom.

ARTICLE II.

HONORARY MEMBERS.

Section 1.—His Excellency the Governor and Commander-in-Chief shall be a Member *ex officio*.

Section 2.—Every Active Member who shall have performed duty, and complied with the rules and regulations of the Company for

twenty years, may become an Honorary Member by a vote of the Company.

Section 3.—Honorary Members are excused from all assessments, except to defray Anniversary expenses; provided, however, that all Members, active or honorary, parading with the Company on any other occasion, shall be subject to and held liable for the assessments levied for such parade.

ARTICLE III.

ARMS AND UNIFORM.

Section 1.—Commissioned Officers shall carry espontoons, and Sergeants shall carry halberds, on the Anniversary parade, to be furnished by the Company. Privates shall be furnished with arms and equipments, according to law, from the Armoury.

Section 2.—No arms or equipments belonging to the Company shall be loaned except by vote of the Company, at a meeting especially notified for the purpose.

Section 3.—Members who are, or have been, connected with other military organizations may at all parades wear the respective uniforms in that portion of the Company designated as Infantry.

Section 4.—The uniform of that portion of the Company designated as Artillery shall be black pantaloons, black frockcoat, white gloves, and chapeaux bearing the insignia of the Company.

Section 5.—Any Member removing arms or equipments of any description shall receipt on the books of the Armourer for the same; said receipt to hold good against the signer for the full value of the arms so removed.

For any arms or equipments not returned to the Armoury within two days after the close of any parade, the Armourer shall demand payment of the Member receipting therefor.

Any Member neglecting or refusing to satisfy the just demands of the Armourer shall by him be reported to the Standing Committee.

ARTICLE IV.

OFFICERS.

Section 1.—The number of Non-commissioned Officers of the Company shall be proportioned to the number of its Active Members, and shall be fixed annually, previous to the election of Officers; provided

that in no case shall the number be less than is required by law for a Company of Infantry.

Section 2.—The Commanding Officer shall give all his orders to the Clerk in writing, who shall cause the same to be seasonably distributed, excepting those given in the presence of the Company.

Section 3.—The Commanding Officer shall have power to grant a furlough to any Member for a limited time, and shall make known every furlough thus granted to the Clerk. Members receiving furloughs shall be exempted from assessments during their continuance.

Section 4.—In the month of April, the Commander shall nominate a Chaplain, which nomination shall be submitted to the Company for their approbation.

Section 5.—There shall be chosen, at the annual election of Officers, by ballot, a Treasurer or Paymaster; also a Clerk and Assistant-Paymaster of the Company, and an Armourer or Quartermaster.

Section 6.—At all parades the First Lieutenant shall have command of that portion of the Company known as the Infantry, and the Second Lieutenant shall have command of that portion known as the Artillery.

ARTICLE V.

MEETINGS.

There shall be a stated Meeting of the Corps on the first Monday of April for business; and two Field Days yearly—one on the Anniversary, being invariably the first Monday in June, the other on the first Monday in October; on both which occasions the Corps shall parade in uniform, unless it shall previously be otherwise voted. The Drills shall be on the three Mondays preceding the Anniversary, and three Mondays preceding the October Field Day. All other Field Days and Drills shall be called by special vote, but the Commander may order a meeting whenever he shall deem it expedient.

ARTICLE VI.

DUTY OF THE CLERK.

Section 1.—The Clerk so chosen shall give bonds to the amount of 1,000 dollars, satisfactory to the Finance Committee, for the faithful performance of the duties required of him as hereinafter named.

Section 2.—He shall attend all meetings of the Company, and record all the proceedings of each meeting, all reports of committees,

admissions and discharges of Members, the names of candidates for membership in the order in which they are proposed, and furnish a correct list thereof to the Canvassing Committee; and shall perform, under the direction of the Commanding Officer, all duties, other than those specified, which are by law required of the Clerks of other Companies.

Section 3.—He shall, on an assessment being laid, prepare and exhibit to every Member liable to pay the same a bill specifying the amount thereof; and if any Member shall neglect or refuse to pay said bill within the space of sixty days from the time the assessment was laid, he may report the name or names of every such delinquent Member at the next meeting of the Company.

Section 4.—He shall keep an exact and regular account of all money by him received, and shall immediately pay the same to the Treasurer, taking his receipt therefor.

Section 5.—It shall be his duty, on receiving orders from the Commander for any meeting, forthwith to notify all Members to attend the same, by written or printed notifications, excepting those Members who reside in the country, who will be warned, by a notice to be given in not less than two newspapers printed in Boston, at least four days, when practicable, prior to the intended meeting.

ARTICLE VII.

DUTY OF THE TREASURER.

Section 1.—The Treasurer so chosen shall give bonds to the amount of 5,000 dollars, satisfactory to the Finance Committee, for the faithful performance of the duties required of him, as hereinafter named.

Section 2.—The Treasurer shall have charge of the funds of the Company, and receive all moneys from the Clerk, giving him a receipt therefor; he shall pay all bills against the Company which may have been approved by a majority of the Committee of Finance.

ARTICLE VIII.

DUTY OF THE ARMOURER.

The Armourer shall take charge of and be responsible for the military property of the Company; he shall see that the same is kept in good order, and only distributed for the parades of the Company upon receiving the written receipt of the Member to whom

the same is delivered, and returned to the Armoury after being used, agreeably to Section 5 of Article III. ; and in the month of May he shall make a report to the Committee of Finance, stating the amount of property under his charge, which shall be recorded by the Clerk, on receipt thereof.

ARTICLE IX.

MEMBERS.

Section 1.—Any Member neglecting to comply with the Company's rules for one year shall be notified thereof by the Clerk, and reported to the Standing Committee ; and if no excuse satisfactory to them shall be rendered within thirty days therefrom he may be disenrolled.

Section 2.—Any Member who shall divulge the names, or give any intimation, of the Candidates selected for Officers, previous to the Anniversary, or who shall repeat any observation made, respecting the character of any Candidate for admission, to any person not a Member, shall be liable to be dismissed from the Company, by a majority of the votes of the Members present, at any regular meeting.

Section 3.—Every Member of the Company shall be required to pay the Anniversary assessment, and those participating in the celebration of the Fall Field Day shall be required to pay their proportion of the cost of such parade, as levied by recommendation of the Finance Committee.

Section 4.—Members permanently residing out of the State, and not applying for furlough may be honourably disenrolled.

ARTICLE X.

OF COMMITTEES.

Section 1.—At the stated business meeting of the Company, provided by Article V., to be held on the first Monday of April, there shall be chosen by the Company present a Committee, whose duty it shall be to make arrangements for the celebration of the Anniversary of the Company on the first Monday in June. The Captain of the Company shall be, *ex officio*, a Member of this Committee.

At the Drill Meeting of the Company, provided by Article V., to be held on the third Monday prior to the first Monday in October, there shall be chosen by the Company present a Committee, whose

duty it shall be to make arrangements for the celebration of the Fall Field Day. The Captain of the Company shall be, *ex officio*, a Member of this Committee.

Section 2.—Every Member appointed on a Committee, if he accepts, shall attend to the duty assigned him, at the time and place appointed by the Chairman, who shall be the Member first chosen; and every Committee, as soon as may be, shall make report of its doings, in writing.

Section 3.—There shall be chosen annually, at the first regular meeting in May, a Committee of five, which shall be styled a Committee of Finance; and it shall be the duty of said Committee to take charge of the Bonds of the Company, examine the state of the Company's finances, accounts, and funds, from time to time; to make report thereon as often as is expedient, and *particularly* to examine and approve such bills against the Company as are just and reasonable; to report what assessment is necessary to defray the expenses of the current year; to guard against the Company contracting debts beyond the amount of the assessments laid; to specify the amount requisite for the Anniversary and Fall expenses separately. There shall be no other assessment, unless recommended by the Committee of Finance, and voted by the Company at a special meeting, notified for that purpose; and if any Member is admitted after the assessment is laid, he shall pay his proportion of the same; also, on the last regular meeting in May, to make an annual report on the Treasurer's and Clerk's accounts; to return an inventory of the funds and property of the Company; and shall report to the Standing Committee the names of such Members as ought to be disenrolled.

Section 4.—The Commissioned Officers, Finance Committee, Treasurer, and Clerk, shall be a Standing Committee for the year, to adjudge who have forfeited membership by delinquency or misconduct; and to remit such assessments as may be just and for the benefit of the Company; and generally superintend the Company's affairs.

Section 5.—There shall also be chosen, at the meeting aforesaid, a Committee, to consist of five Members, which shall be called the Canvassing Committee. It shall be the duty of this Committee to investigate the character and fitness of each Candidate proposed for membership, and report to the Company before he is balloted for.

Section 6.—All Officers and Committees shall continue in office until their successors are duly elected and qualified.

ARTICLE XI.

ALTERATION OF BY-LAWS.

Section 1.—No revision or alteration of the Rules and Regulations of the Company shall be made at the same meeting it is proposed ; nor unless notice thereof has been inserted in the Notifications for the Meeting when the same is intended to be acted upon ; which Notifications shall be sent to every Member.

Section 2.—No vote shall be reconsidered by a less number than was present at the time of its passage.

Adopted April 3rd, 1871.

True Copy.

GEO. H. ALLEN, *Clerk.*

INDEX TO VOL. I.

THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

(The Index to the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company will be found at the end of this Volume.)

- ABBOTT, Alderman, 94.
Abbott, Alderman Sir Maurice, 85, 91.
Abdie *alias* Abdy, Alderman, 71, 74, 85.
Aburne Chase, Skirmish at, 112 *note*, 122, 131.
Accidents, 164, 188, 195, 320; indemnification against, 5, 19.
Accounts, Audit of the, 292, 296.
Accountrements, List of, 316.
Adams, Alderman Thomas, Colonel, 97, 99, 111 *note*, 137.
Adams, Major Seth, 282 *note*.
Adams, Mr., Sheriff, 96.
Addison, Mr., 272.
Admiralty, the, marks of, 7.
Adjutant appointed, 263, 270; Assistant, 277; of City Trained Bands appointed, 142; one sufficient, 315; second, appointed, 271; to prepare the exercise, 317.
Admissions, 33, 40, 43, 44, 101, 170, 312; certificates of, 20, 21, 303; fees on—*see* Entrance money; first mention of candidates for, 168; free, 233, 287, 294, 295, 315; of foreigners, 17, 18; qualifications for, 43-45, 157 *note*, 162, 170; re-, 191, 265; rules for, 40, 168, 188, 305, 307; suspended, 101, 152.
Albemarle, Duke of, 167, 170, 171, 183, 210.
Aldermen, appointment of, 212; expenses of, at leads, 320; honorary members of the Court of, 225; names of, in Armoury, 296; order of, concerning leads, 250; refuse to lead, 235, 236, 250; stewards, 192; summoned to the Court, 309; to inspect City forces, 28; to lead, 233, 235, 236, 293.
Aldermen, Court of, 221, 231, 243, 244, 271, 272, 280; controls the Company, 71, 74, 75; votes by, 37, 42-44, 47, 48, 55, 57, 58, 60, 62, 255; votes by, for feasts, 56, 60, 62, 64, 69, 94, 95, 167-171, 189.
Ale, The marking of, 7.
Alexander, William, Plan of, 313.
Alfrey, Robert, Lease to, 312.
Allington, Lord, 206.
Almanrinets, 103.
Alton, Skirmish at, 140 and *note*.
Anbury, Capt. Robert, 276.
Andrews, Alderman, 91; elected President, 92.
Andrews, Captain, 105.
Andrews, John, gunner, 81.
Andrews, Sir Matthew, 203, 220, 228; elected Treasurer, 202; vote of thanks to, 223; President, 232.
Angell, Robert, expelled, 163.
Anglesea, Earl of, 171.
Anne, Address to, 237, 238, 242; warrants of, 237, 239.
Anthony, Anthony, Master of Company, 17, 20.
"Antients," for the City Archers, 107.
Antigallicans, Association of, 321.
Apprentices, Disturbances by, 58.
Apsley, Sir Allan, Lieutenant of the Tower, 57 *note*, 60.

- Arbalest—see Crossbow.
- Archer, Capt. William, 140 *note*.
- Archer, Lieut. Elias, 140 *note*.
- Archers, as infantry, 5; at Cressy, 5; companies of, formed in the City, 106; allowance to officers of, 107; "antients" of, 107; practice of, 107; English, dexterity of, 5, 6; first muster in Finsbury, 24; found by City, 6, 10; in the Lord Mayor's show, 194, 195; dress of, 195; licenses to form guilds of, 19; Norman, 4; of the City, 147; charter to, 17; pay of, 12; the principal, of the City, 106.
- Archers, Company of, an unknown Society, 153; at Mile-end, 19.
- Archers, Royal Company of, the Queen's Body-Guard for Scotland, instituted, 195; weapons of, 195; history of, 195 *note*.
- Archers, Society of, of Finsbury—see Finsbury.
- Archery, Accidents at, 5; antiquity of, 4; books on, 155 *note*; companies relating to, 15, 38, 39; decay of, 6, 7, 12, 14-16, 82; in the City, 6, 7, 12-15, 23, 65, 106, 107; in great estimation, 5, 23, 29; instruction in, 10; practice ground for, 23; destruction of practice grounds, 29, 30, 80; practice of, about London, 22-27, 29-31, 39; abroad, 82; costs of, 25, 107; prize meetings for, 25-27, 107, 154; prizes for, 26, 27, 107, 154; signifying artillery, 1, 2.
- Archery, Commissions relating to, 13, 14; Letters, 6, 14, 15; Patents, 13, 29, 30, 39; Proclamations, 12, 13, 26, 65, 81; Statutes, 5, 8 and *note*, 9-11, 14; Warrant, 10.
- Archery, Band of, 69.
- Archery, Commissioners for, petition of, 80.
- Argyll, Duke of, Letter of, 258.
- Armada, The, 36.
- Armed men, unauthorised, 312.
- Armorial bearings, The, 69 and *note*; for the gates, 308; painting of, 300.
- Armour, leather, 4; of City forces, 28, 104; of Company, 49, 306; list of, 301; of Saxons, 4.
- Armourer, The, a charge by, 266; duties of, 306; elected, 79, 293; salary of, 224, 306; security given by, 293.
- Armourers, "Allemaigne," 13.
- Armourers, Company of, 106 *note*; Braziers incorporated with, 41 *note*; charters of, 41 *note*; Hall of, 40, 41.
- Armouries of other Companies, 89, 90; temporary, 42, 159.
- Armoury Mills, 12, 13; the king's, clerk of, 12.
- Armoury, The New, additions to, 294, 314; assemblies at, 202; care of, 307; completed, 295, 299; contracts for, 293; cost of, 193, 290, 293, 294, 296, 299, 314; disturbances in, 298; entertainments in, 296, 321; foundations of, 294; furniture of, 299, 306, 307; gifts and legacies for, 206, 262, 288, 292; goods stored in, 186; illuminated, 304, 314; insured, 294, 314; keys for, 302; panels of names for, 287, 296, 297, 299, 302, 312; plans for, 199, 286, 290, 291; regulations for use, 297, 298; repair of, 227, 240; right of entry, 316; right to build, 289; strangers in, 297, 313, 323; subscriptions for, 286-288, 294-296, 303, 307, 312; times of admission, 302, 320; to be built, 146, 193, 271, 286; Trained Bands to use, 289-291, 297.
- Armoury, The Old, erected, 39, 59-61, 63, 66, 67, 159; inspected, 290; position of, 294; removal from, 146, 157, 159; repaired, 153; sold, 156, 159, 160.
- Arms, Manufacturers of, 106 *note*.
- Arms of Ancient Britons, 4.
- Arms of City forces 6, 28, 47, 48, 83, 103, 106, 108, 135; marked, 108; overseer of, 47-49; of English, 4; of London Volunteers, 142; of Saxons, 4.
- Arms, of Company, 17, 39, 46, 49, 60, 180, 222; care of, 306; fine for use of, 170; for general days, 189, 193, 229, 265, 295, 314; for ornaments, 303; guards for, 163, 197; list of, 301, 306, 316; private use of, 229; removals of, 195, 212, 231, 232, 313; surveyors of, 79, 171; to be viewed, 171; used by Trained Bands, 259.
- Armstrong, Richard, drummer, 79.
- Army, The standing, 208.
- Arran, Earl of, admitted, 209.
- Arrows, materials of, 4; price of, 69, 142; provided, 5.
- Arsenal, An, founded, 12.

Arthois, Samuel, 39.

Artillery, Derivation of word, 4; early uses of, 2, 3; encouragement of, 62; in Old Testament, 1, 2; lent to Company, 210; of City, 3, 28, 29, 112, 124; practice ground for, 31; significations of, 1, 2; Statutes, &c., concerning, 11-14, 29, 30.

Artillery of the Company, Care of, 306; for General Days, 189, 190, 193, 210; list of, 301; sent to the Tower, 313; train of, first used, 214.

Artillery Company, The Honourable—*see* St. George, Fraternity of, and Artillery Garden, Society in; charter, a new, 168; charters and warrants, search for, 316, 319; command of, 101; committee for settlement of, 85, 88; composition of, 277; controlled by king, 205; debts of, 225, 227, 233, 234, 239, 244, 245, 247, 248, 250, 263, 265, 271, 272, 289, 292, 294; decline of, 87, 152, 169, 205, 231, 234-236; discontent in, 156; flourishing, 95, 166, 279; history of, 273; "Honourable" used in title, 215; influenced by Court, 209; names of members, 157; number of members, 86, 145, 150 and *note*, 180, 187, 198, 220, 249; precedence of members, 228; privileges of, 87, 201, 210, 211, 222; recruiting for, 168; revival of, 157 and *note*; "the Military Glory of the Nation," 162, 192, 213; "the warlike honour of this nation," 195; unpopular at Court, 201; votes by City to, 57, 58, 60, 62; work done for, 227.

Artillery Company, of Trained Bands, 153; Fraternity of—*see* Tower, Gunners of.

Artillery Garden, The New, 145, 164; admission of, public, 320; annual closing of, 247, 261, 310; annual opening of, 228, 231, 233, 235, 236, 239, 240, 247, 249, 251, 256, 273, 281, 292, 294, 321; application for, 91, 93-99; archery in, 154, 155, 194; building on, 212, 227, 231-234, 240, 262, 271-273, 278, 280, 282, 308; leases for building on, 240, 241, 243, 244, 257, 260, 262, 263, 286, 299, 302, 304, 305, 307-309, 311, 312; burial ground in, 180; enclosure of, 146-149, 163; engines tried in, 228, 322; exercise of Company in, 198, 222, 271—*see* General days in City; exercise of horses in, 205, 272; exer-

cise of non-members in, 229, 259; exercise of other Companies in, 154, 155, 194, 313, 323; exercise of soldiers in, 218, 281, 316; exercise of Trained Bands in, 91, 93, 96-99, 167; extent of, 149, 150; grant of, 95, 99-101, 145, 146; leadings in, 205; renewal of lease of, 101, 278, 280-282, 286; leases of, 223, 227; leases of houses and ground in, 212, 259-262, 309, 320; musters in, 134, 135, 153, 162, 214, 282, 318; part of freehold of Finesbury Manor, 150; private use of, 229; proposal to close, 236; rent of, 99, 100, 169, 244; repair of, 294, 302, 308; repair of pavement next, 169, 189, 197, 212, 226, 233-235, 240, 241, 243, 244, 299; resumption of title to, 244; right to exercise in, 251, 259; the ditch near, 257; the highway next, 147; trust deeds of, 224, 244; trustees for, 281, 294; value of, 286.

Artillery Garden, The Old, a school for gunners, 81; ancient uses of, 30, 31; built upon, 278; called the King's, 146; command of, 66; days for practice in, 66-69, 83; description of, 83; dispute concerning, 94; disturbances in, 71, 72, 74; exercise in, 36, 40, 44, 45, 83, 156; right of Company to exercise in, 45-47, 49, 50, 56, 57, 59-63, 66-69, 159; grant of, 45, 62, 94; intrusion upon, 85; lease of, 31, 45, 46, 49, 57, 61, 62, 164; objects of, 65, 66; proof of ordnance in, 196; removal from, 146, 149, 156, 159; use of butts in, 59, 66-69, 84; use of butts in ordnance way in, 63, 67, 68.

Artillery Garden, Captains of the, origin of, 33, 34; discipline of, 33, 34; number of, 33; soldiers trained by, 33.

Artillery Garden, Society Practising Arms in the—*see* Artillery Company, the Honourable; control of, 71, 74, 75; discipline of, 39, 53; exercise grounds of, 35, 40, 42; suspended, 45, 52; expenses of, 57; names of members, 39, 45; number of members, 36, 40, 43, 44, 47, 48, 57, 74; Order in Council relating to, 34; patents for encouraging, 30 *note*; prosperity of, 36, 44; rewards to officers of, 42-44; rules and orders of, 45, 65, 70, 75, 77; services of Capt. Panton to, 47, 48, 50, 51; threatened dissolution of, 51-53, 74, 77.

- Artillery Ground, in Tothill Fields, 143.
 Artillery Ground, the Old, Liberty of the, 278.
 Artillery, Guilds of, Licenses to, 19.
 Artillery, of London, The Colonel of, 90.
 Artillery Yard, "near the Minorytes," 35, 57.
 Artillery Yards, established, 58, 89.
 Artillerymen, Want of, 32, 33.
 Arundel, Earl of, 56, 60, 210.
 Ascough, Nicholas, Captain of Archers, 106.
 Ashurst, Sir William, 249; elected President, 248; Vice-President, 228, 233.
 Assistants, Court of, days, private days called, 256.
 Assistants, Court of, 210, 234, 274; a quorum of, 241, 288, 291; Aldermen and Sheriffs members, 309; commissions accepted by members, 256; days of meetings, 168, 304; dine with a Sheriff, 194; dress of 158; entertainments by, at leads, 319; by new members, 231, 261; expenses of meetings, 311; fees on admission, 315; fines for being late, 170; first elected, 79; record of admissions, 304; held in absence of chiefs, 291; honorary members, 225, 282, 287, 294, 295, 303, 307; number of, 322; members become burgesses, 256; expelled, 209, 290; of, number of, 322; rank of, 230, 239, 252, 256, 287; subscriptions of, 286, 288; to attend general days, 252, 264, 309; to lead, 164, 197, 205, 219, 222, 250, 252, 256, 292; neglect to, 263; officers of Trained Bands, admitted, 190, 191; orders of, 264, 265; precedence of members, 227, 230; rules for calling, 291; Stewards admitted, 191; suspended, 179, 220: to grant leases, 244; wine for, 312, 320.
 Assistants, Court of, Annual Committee of, a quorum, 291; chosen, 261, 291; discontinued, 292; number of members, 288, 291.
 Assistants, Court of, General Committee of, a quorum, 292, 304; business of, 304; discontinued, 317; expenses of meetings, 311; powers of, 304, 307; times of meeting, 304.
 Association, an, conspiracy called, 207-209.
 Atfield, Dr., Sermon by, 194.
 Atkins, Alderman Thos., Colonel, 111 *note*, 136.
 Auditors, time for meeting, 261.
 Auxiliaries—*see* London, Southwark, and Tower Hamlets.
 Ayres, Mr.—*see* Eager.
 Bacon, Friar, 2.
 Bacon, Mr., City Remembrancer, 71.
 Bacon, Sir Francis, 49.
 Bagshaw, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 190.
 Baker, Capt., 197, 218.
 Baker, John, 293.
 Baker, Mr., surgeon, 267.
 Baldock, Robert de, 23.
 Baldrie, Lieut., 197.
 Balmes, Marches to—*see* General days.
 Bandoliers, Repair of, 241; value of, 141.
 Bank of England, 260, 288.
 Barbers and surgeons, Company of, muster of, 6.
 Bardi, The, cannon importers, 3.
 Bariffe, Lieut.-Col. William, 69 *note*.
 Barkham, Sir Edward, Lord Mayor, 62.
 Barkstead, Sir John, 155.
 Barne, Alderman Sir George, 150.
 Barrett, Mr., 309.
 Barrett, Samuel, Leases to, 304, 307, 309, 312.
 Basing House, Skirmish at, 140 and *note*.
 Bassindine, Capt. John, 277, 301.
 Bateman, Sir James, to lead, 249.
 Bathurst, Sir B., 215.
 Battle-axes, 4, 274.
 Bavaria, Charles Count Palatine of, admitted, 101.
 Bayonets, 292, 303, 316; provided, 243; the number of, 301.
 Beadle, The, 195, 257, 296; assistance for, 170, 192; duty of, 155, 264, 291, 295, 298, 306, 307; election of, 79, 155, 192, 305; fees of, 260, 263-265, 307; salary of, 215, 224, 295, 307; scarf for, 194; suspended, 236.
 Beaker, Lieut.-Col., 197.
 Bedloe, William, 40 *note*.
 Beeby, John, drummer, 79.

- Bell, Capt., elected Captain of the Grenadiers, 270.
 Bell, Capt. William, 275.
 Bell, Dr., Sermon by, 193.
 Bell, Major, 280.
 Bell, Major Joseph, Captain of the Grenadiers, 274, 275.
 Bellamy, Captain Edward, 137.
 Bellasis, Lord, 191.
 Bellers, Colonel Sir Wm., to lead, 292.
 Belts, The number of, 301; for auxiliaries, price of, 141.
 Beun, Alderman, Escort for, 317.
 Bennett, Benjamin, Widow of, 320.
 Berisford, Captain, 197.
 Berkeley, Lord, 200.
 Berkford, Sir Thomas, Funeral of, 218.
 Berkstead, Colonel, 143.
 Bethlehem, The churchyard in, 179.
 Bicester, Capture of, 114.
 Bide, Sir Thomas, 193.
 Billers, Sir William, Alderman, 275.
 Bills, 28.
 Bingham, Captain, 47, 53, 82; elected Captain, 50, 54, 55; made a freeman, 54, 55; sent to Ireland, 65; suspension of, 52; work on tactics by, 69.
 Black Prince, The, 2.
 Blackwell, Capt., 111.
 Blackwell, Ebenezer, 307.
 Blackwell, John, Clerk and Adjutant, 277, 279, 281, 289; appointed Adjutant, 271; history by, 273, 319; trustee of the ground, 281; vote to, 296.
 Blagrove, Capt., 215.
 Blakeney, Lord, 321.
 Bloodworth, *alias* Bludworth, Alderman Sir Thomas, 169, 197; funeral of, 210.
 Blue Anchor Alley, Inhabitants of, 261.
 Blue Regiment, of City Auxiliaries, 112 *note*, 116, 119, 121, 122, 127, 128, 131, 133, 136, 141; Train'd Bands, 111-116, 119, 121, 122, 124-128, 131, 133, 136, 137, 302.
 Boddington, Lieut.-Col., 230.
 "Boloons" provided, 267.
 Bond, Capt., 74, 104.
 Booker, Capt. John, 187.
 Boswell, Capt., 188.
 Bow and pike, combined, invented, 81; used by Company, 81, 82; Proclamation concerning, 82, 83.
 Bower, Capt. Thomas, 138.
 Bowmen of City Companies, Muster of, 6; number of, 6.
 Bow-staves, Importation of, 8.
 Bows, exchanged for fire-arms, 12, 16; for servants, 13; length of, 8, 11; price of, 8, 11, 69, 142; range of, 11; still used, 195; white, provided, 5; wood of, 10, 11.
 Bowyers, appointed, 10; complaint of, 11; emigrate, 11.
 Bowyers, Company of, 15, 106 *note*.
 Bowyers and Fletchers, Company of, 38, 69, 94, 148.
 Box-money, 190.
 Bradley, John, 149.
 Brass ordnance, 3, 83.
 Braziers, incorporated with Armourers, 41 *note*.
 Brett, Captain John, 137.
 Brett, Captain Thomas, 54.
 Brickmakers, dispute of, with Commissioners for Archery, 80.
 Bridges, boards for, 210.
 Bridgman, Mr., 218.
 Briggs, Ebenezer, 249.
 Brind, Captain William, 268, 277.
 Brind, Lieutenant, 275.
 Brind, Major-General, 282 *note*.
 Bristed, Mr., 267.
 Bristol, 37; Artillery Yard at, 37.
 Britons, Ancient, Arms of, 4; exercise ground of, 31.
 Brivates, 276, 277.
 Broad Street Church, Company at, 188.
 Broad-arrow mark, 7.
 Broomfield, Alderman, 85.
 Broomfield, Captain Lawrence, 136.
 Bronze, Arms of, 4.
 Broomer, Captain, 197.
 Broomfield, Alderman, 91.
 Brown, Lieutenant, 276.
 Bruce, Lord, 215.
 Buckingham, Duke of, 167, 168, 188.
 Buckingham, Sir Owen, 230; elected Vice-President, 248.
 "Budge Batchellors," 161.

- Bunce, Alderman, elected President, 151.
- Bunhill, A fort at, 91.
- Bunhill Fields, Burial ground in, 180; petition of inhabitants of, 146-149; the new ground made in, 91, 93, 94, 96-101; to be viewed, 91, 93, 94.
- Bunhill Row, Ground next to, built upon, 271, 272; pavement in, 299; proceedings against inhabitants of, 260.
- Burdon, Mr., 173.
- Burghley, Lord, 31.
- Bury St. Edmunds, Artillery Yard at, 58.
- Burying Ground, complaint of tenant, 296.
- Butt, A, at Vauxhall, 91.
- Buttler, John, 245.
- Butts and Marks, for hand-guns, 12; erected in the Ground, 234, 302; use of, in the Ground, 59, 66-69, 84; length of range at, 11; maps of positions of, 303 *note*; near Finsbury, 302; removal of, 29, 30; repair and use of, 10; use of all, allowed Company, 18, 21.
- Buxton, Major, 111.
- Byley, John, drummer, 156.
- Byng, Admiral, Sir George, 242.
- Calais, siege of, 2; Spanish defeat at, 35, 36.
- Calendar, The, altered, 317.
- Calivers for Trained Bands, 16.
- Caluammy, Dr., Sermon by, 215.
- Cambuch, Game of, 7.
- Camfield, Serjeant-Major Nathaniel, 188.
- Cammock, Captain Thomas, Grant to, 93 *note*.
- Campbell, Alderman Sir James, 25; elected president, 78.
- Cannon-balls, of lead, 3; of stone, 28.
- "Cannoneers," training of, 62, 63, 66.
- Cannon-founders, Names of, 3; number limited, 4.
- Cannons, carried on carts, 28; discharge of, 29; exported, 4; first cast in England, 3; first used in England, 3; imported, 3; noise of discharge, 2.
- Cannons of Company, firing of, discontinued, 321; gift of, 304; occasions of firing, 321; removed to Tower, 313.
- Canterbury, Archbishop of, 188.
- "Captaines of London," Petition of, 148.
- Captain-General, The, 224, 287; a deputy for, 224; appointed, 157 *note*, 233, 239, 258, 259; mode of appointing, 258; the title of, 101.
- Captains, arms of, 268, 289; dress of, 268; duty of, 314; election of, 40, 42, 47, 50, 53-55, 65, 70, 77-80, 96, 290, 309; expenses of, 290, 317, 319; length of service, 290; names of, 69, 78, 245, 268, 275, 282 *note*; positions of, at marches, 252; right to elect, 50-52, 70-77, 86-88; salary of, 87, 88.
- Carellis, Captain Robert, 245.
- Carew, Lord, 60.
- Carlos, Don, at feast, 191.
- Carnarvon, Earl of, Death of, 132.
- Carrington, Major, Services of, 315.
- Carrington, Rev. James, appointed chaplain, 315.
- Carter, Lieutenant, 275.
- Carterett, Lord, Vote of thanks to, 270.
- Cartridges, making of, 306; size and number of, 266.
- Cartwright, Captain Thomas, 276.
- Cartwright, Mr., 193.
- Case, Sir J., Dispute with, 261.
- Cass, John, 249.
- Casswell, Sir George, Sheriff, 266.
- Cavalry, Archers as, 4, 5.
- Cavendish, Sir William, 12.
- Cecil, Sir William, 91.
- Ceremonials, public, Right to take part in, 254, 255.
- Certificates of efficiency, 313.
- Certificates of membership, 20, 21, 103, 265, 303.
- Chairman, Duty of, 290; election of, 239.
- "Chamade," The, 285, 286.
- Chamberlain, The Lord, 56, 60.
- Chamberlaine, Sergeant-Major, Thomas, 137.
- Chamberlyn, Richard, Master of City Ordnance, 107 *note*.
- Chambers, Mr. Sheriff, 151.
- Chaplain appointed, 315.

- Charles I., Captains elected by, 78-80 ; engaged in dispute about election of captain, 72-77 ; warrant of, 7.
- Charles II., Addresses to, 206-209, 213 ; at the Great Fire, 182, 185 ; gift by, to City, 166 ; leads, 214 ; letter of, concerning elections, 203, 204, 207 ; pardons the City, 212 ; restoration of, 166 ; suspends City charters, 210, 211 ; visits City, 166, 167 ; warrants of, concerning elections, 201, 205, 209, 211, 214.
- Charters, Corporate, taken away, 210, 211 ; restored, 221 ; forfeiture of, 221.
- Cheltenham, Capture of, 118.
- Chesney, Colonel, 2.
- Chester, Artillery Yard at, 89.
- Cheyney, Mr., 113.
- Child, Sir Francis, Lord Mayor, 233.
- Chinerton, Lord Mayor, 158.
- Chiswell Street, building in—*see* Artillery Garden ; pavement of, 233-235, 272.
- Cholmondeley, Viscount, admitted, 209.
- Cirencester, Capture of, 121, 130 ; the "word" at, 130.
- City Lands, Committee of, 232, 273, 280 ; vote of thanks to, 233.
- Civil War, The—*see* London, forces of ; arms lost in, 60 ; Company during, 101, 102, 152.
- Clarendon, Earl of, admitted, 209.
- Clarke, Alderman, Sir S., refuses to lead, 250.
- Clayton, Sir Robert, President, 233, 234.
- Clegatt, Captain Edward, 137.
- Clerk, The, 193, 228, 262, 271-274, 288-290, 293, 303, 307, 314, 319 ; accounts of, 258, 278 ; appointed Adjutant, 263 ; duty of, 171, 244, 259, 264, 265, 267, 271, 286, 291, 294, 305, 306, 312, 317 ; election of, 79, 155, 305 ; fees to, 260, 263-265, 306 ; loans by, 267, 278, 294, 310 ; salary of, 224, 239, 247, 251, 306 ; sale of liquors by, 295, 298, 300 ; scarf for, 194 ; security for, 306 ; to lead, 263 ; votes to, 179, 215, 258, 282.
- Clitheroe, Alderman, 71, 74, 85.
- Cloak keeper elected, 156.
- Cloth, Importation of, 8.
- Clothworkers, use of tassel by, 31 ; Company of, 45 ; Hall, feast at, 188.
- Cockayne, Sir William, Lord Mayor, 62.
- Cohorns, gift of, 304 ; removed to Tower, 313.
- Coke, Secretary, 69, 76 ; Sir Edward, 56, 57, 60, 61, 74.
- Colchester, Artillery Yard at, 58.
- Colchester, Capt., 173.
- Coleson, Capt. William, 137.
- Collier, John, 90.
- Collins, Mr., Servant of, compensated, 164.
- Colman, Lieut. Francis, expelled, 189.
- Colonels of Trained Bands, report on leaders, 236 ; to lead, 250, 281, 292 ; to raise money, 234.
- Colonels, Lieut., of Trained Bands, Courts, called by, 291.
- Colours, of City Auxiliaries, 134, 136, 14 *note* ; of City Trained Bands, 111 *note*, 134, 136, 139, 140 and *note* ; of Company, 162, 189, 215 ; bearers of, 206, 210, 223, 252, 256 ; care of, 307 ; number of, 301 ; presented, 213 ; "sheets" of, 280, 301 ; of Dragoons, 139 ; of Southwark Trained Bands, 136 ; of Tower Hamlets Trained Bands, 136, 138 ; of Westminster Trained Bands, 136.
- Colts' Feast, 261—*see* Feasts.
- Command, words of, 313.
- Commander-in-Chief, first elected, 166.
- Commanders, choose their own officers, 198, 206, 223, 265, 271, 286 ; dress of, 273 ; duty of, 294, 313 ; expenses of, 242, 245, 247, 286 ; officers of, 206, 223, 230 ; titles of, 215.
- Committee Book to be kept, 261.
- Committees, Summoning of, 306.
- Common Fields, Enclosure of, 29.
- Common Council, Court of, 140-142, 232, 272, 273, 280 ; "value of one meal in the week," 141.
- Companies, City, Arms of, 6, 103, 108 ; bowmen of, 6 ; charters forfeited, 211 ; musters of, 6, 103, 166 ; strength of, 6, 108.
- Constable, Captain Robert, 103.
- Conway, Sir Edward, 52, 54.
- Conyers, Hon. Sir Gerard, Treasurer, 288.
- Cooper, Lieut., 197.

- Cordova, Siege of, 2.
 Cornwallis, Lord, 318.
 Cornwallis, Mr., "Trompeur" of the King's Household, 38.
 Corslets, Sale of, 15.
 Coston, Capt., 197.
 Cotchford, Ralph, Sergeant, 79.
 Cottington, Lord, 76, 94.
 Courant, The Daily, 240, 282.
 Court Book, Index to, 261; of Assistant—see Assistants.
 Courts, a hall for, 40; the calling of, 306; General, held, 193, 195, 201-205, 237, 248, 249, 292; numerous attended, 248; poll first taken, 249; right to hold, 72, 75, 222; vote at, 167, 231, 256, 264, 273; the ballot used, 305.
 Cox, Capt. James, apothecary, 267.
 Coxeter, Mr., 173; Nicholas, 180.
 "Crakes of War," 2.
 Cranmer, Alderman, 94.
 Craven, Lord, 56, 170, 190, 191.
 Cressy, Archers at, 5; artillery at, 2.
 Cricket in the Ground, 272.
 Cripplegate Churchyard, Society exercising in, 188, 232; Grenadiers, 318.
 Crispe, Adam, brickmaker, 80; Capt., 74; Nicholas, Assistant, 79.
 Cromwell, Oliver, Lord Protector, 153, 156, 157 and *note*; funeral of, 161, 162.
 Crossbow-makers, practice ground of, 31.
 Cross-bowmen, as cavalry, 5.
 Crossbows, deer destroyed by, 8, 9; general adoption of, 5; introduced, 4; licenses to use, 8, 9; provided with sights, 5; Statutes, &c., relating to, 8-10; used by Company, 19, 21; use in chase, 5; use of, forbidden, 5, 8.
 Crosslets, 269, 314.
 Crowther, William, armourer, 79.
 Crusoe, Colonel, 164.
 Crusoe, Timothy, Assistant, 79.
 Cullogen, Battle of, 314.
 Culverins first cast, 3.
 Cure, William, Lease to, 23.
 Curry, John, expelled, 190.
 Curtails provided, 270, 289.
 Daggers, 4, 28.
 "Daily Advertiser," The, 293, 308.
 Danby, Earl of, 69.
 Dance, Gules, Lease to, 261.
 Dance, Mr., 286.
 Dartmouth, Lord, 217, 219, 232.
 Darts, Accidents with, 5.
 Dash, Mr., 97, 98.
 Davidson, Mr., Lease to, 320.
 Davies, Lieut.-Col., Robert, 137.
 Davis, Capt.-Lieut. Lewis, 303, 304.
 Davys, Robert, Assistant, 79.
 Dean, Capt., 196.
 Deer, Destruction of, 8, 9.
 Delafountain, Major Noah, Captain of Grenadiers, 268, 270.
 Demy-hakes, Length of, 9.
 Denbigh, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Denmark, George, Prince of, Captain-General, 239, 243.
 Denton, Sergt., expelled, 249.
 Desmaret, Capt., Staff for, 191.
 Dettingen, battle of, 310.
 Dike, Capt., 105.
 Dipford, Capt. George, 137.
 Ditchfield, Capt. Edward, Assistant, 74, 79.
 Dobinson, William, 295, 304.
 Dobson, Mr., 163.
 Dodson, Capt., 197.
 Donors of valuable objects, 312.
 Dorchester, Viscount, 69.
 "Double-armed man," The, 82 *note*.
 Dorset, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Dove, Dr., Sermon by, 197.
 Dragoons, Capt. Waller's regiment of, 139; colours of, 139; muster of, 139; strength of, 139.
 "Drakes," 116, 127, 128.
 Draper's Hall, Feasts at, 191, 192.
 "Drawings up," Precedence at, 228.
 Dress, edicts concerning, 22; of the Company, 19, 158, 193, 213, 219, 251-254, 257, 268-271, 273, 275, 295, 311, 313-315.
 Drill-master, appointed, 321.
 Drumbeaters, Box-money for, 190; salary of, 197, 224; title of, 226; to belong to Trained Bands, 194.

- Drum-Major, pay of, 318; title of, 226; to provide drumbeaters, 319.
- Drummers, a march for all, 85; dress of, 251; elected, 79, 156; for general days, 161, 193, 199, 200, 210, 215, 219, 220, 224, 242, 245, 268, 300, 319.
- Drums, 162, 301.
- Dugdale, the informer, 40 *note*.
- Dun, George, Assistant, 79.
- Duncombe, Sir Charles, elected Treasurer, 248.
- Dunn, Thomas, 293.
- Durham, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 190.
- Dutton, William, Captain of Chester Artillery Yard, 89.
- Eager, *alias* Ayres, John, of Farnham, 162, 163.
- East Company of City Archers, 106; Regiment of City Trained Bands, 104.
- Ecclesiastical estates, Survey of, 150.
- Edgehill, Battle of, 114, 132.
- Edney, Capt., 104.
- Edward III., 2.
- Edwards, Sir James, Alderman, 204, 206.
- Edwin, Sir Humphrey, Lord Mayor, 232.
- Effingham, Lord, admitted, 209.
- Elections, Annual, suspended, 201—*see* Courts, General, and Warrants.
- Elector, the Lord, Admission of, 169.
- Elkin, Mr., Ground-keeper, 167.
- Ellef, William, a gunner, Certificate to, 65.
- Ellis, Mr., 154.
- Embrey, Ensign, 276.
- Engineers, appointed, 267, 295; duty of, 309; positions at marches, 318; salary of, 321.
- Ensigns, elected, 79; of the Ground, honorary members of Court, 226, 237; styled Major-Generals, 314; to attend marches, 310: to lead, 205, 222, 281, 292.
- Entrance money, 162, 224, 227, 230, 239, 251, 260, 263-265, 306, 307, 315; remitted, 169, 236.
- Entrances—*see* Admissions; from political motives, 252.
- Escande, Isaac, appointed Sergt.-Major, 315.
- Essex, Defence of, 35, 36.
- Essex, Earl of, rebellion of, 37; Lord General, forces of London serve under, 112-132, 141.
- Evolutions, The printed, 316.
- Exchequer, Chancellor of, 56, 60.
- Exelbee, Major Thomas, 268.
- Exercises of the Company—*see* General days; account of attendances at, 306; grounds for—*see* Artillery Gardens; regulations for, 313; semi-theatrical, 95; suspended, 179, 181; the old English, 322; the Prussian, 321, 322; times of, in winter, 315; to be weekly, 39.
- Expulsions, 163, 189, 190, 249, 290, 292, 308, 316, 317.
- Eyles, Alderman, elected Lieut.-General, 249; to lead, 250; Sir Joseph, leases to, 286, 301, 302, 309.
- Falkland, Lord, 69, 76, 210; death of, 132.
- Farnham, Skirmish at, 140 and *note*.
- "Fast," use of word, 19.
- Faulcon, Capt. Nicholas, 276.
- Faversham, Earl of, Steward, 198.
- Feasts, Annual, 56, 59, 60, 62, 64, 69, 94, 95, 157, 158, 163, 167-171, 188-198, 200, 206, 209, 210, 214, 215, 218; a hall for, 40; account of, 198, 199; Assistants' table at, 214; members obtained at, 210, 215; procession before, 158; regulations for, 157, 163, 209; vote for, by Corporation first made, 56; vote for, discontinued, 189.
- Feasts, The Colts', 261, 311, 312, 317; rules for, 319.
- Feathers, worn, 162, 198, 211, 218, 214, 227, 228, 252, 254, 269, 278.
- "Feats of shooting," 25.
- Fen, *alias* Ven, Alderman, 71, 80, 85, 91; elected President, 78, 79; resigns, 84, 85.
- Fen, Capt. John, Assistant, 70, 79.
- Ferdinand IV., 2.
- Ferrers, Lord, 215.
- Ferris, Capt. Paul, 277, 282 *note* Lieut.-Col. Paul, 295.

- Field, John, Lease to, 223.
- Fifers, Box-money for, 190; elected, 79; for general days, 161, 193, 199, 200, 210, 215, 219.
- Fifes provided, 162.
- File-money, 199, 210, 259, 265, 268, 274, 313, 318, 320-322.
- Fines for disorderly conduct, 315.
- Finsbury, Burial ground in, 179; gardens about, 23; grant of, 22; moor of, leased to City, 24; petition of inhabitants, 169: survey of manor of, 150.
- Finsbury Archers, Society of, 91 *note*; butts for, 302; maps of, 303 *note*; established, 154; incorporated with Company, 154, 194; manuscripts concerning, 154 *note*, 155 *note*; musters of, 154, 194; suspended, 154; officers of, 154, 155; prize-meetings of, 154, 155; rules for, 154, 155; Stewards of, 154, 155; strength of, 154; use of Ground by, 154, 194.
- Finsbury Fields, Archery in, 22-27; butts of Company in, 302; concealed money in, 153; musters in, 24, 25, 58, 134-139, 140 *note*; proclamations for shooting in, 25-27; windmills in, 145, 147, 150.
- Finsbury, Prebendary of, Lease by, 24, 97, 98.
- Finsbury, Uppermost Field, near, 42; granted to Company, 145.
- Fire, The Great, 181-187, 211.
- Fire-arms, Bows exchanged for, 12, 16; introduction of, 5.
- Firelock drill, 251.
- Firelocks, 189, 292, 316; number of, 301.
- "Fireworks," Maker of, appointed, 267.
- Fisher, Capt., Muster-Master of City, 92, 93, 107-109.
- Flag, on the Armoury, hoisting of, 295, 307.
- Flanders, 105.
- Flankers, 198, 230, 231, 254; arms of, 229, 269, 275, 280, 289; choice of, 313; dress of, 251, 266, 269, 271, 275, 314; positions of, 269, 275, 276, 280, 289; rank of, 231.
- Fleet, Sir John, Lord Mayor, 225, 230; President, 226, 243; elected Vice-President, 248.
- Fletchers, Company of, 106 *note*—*see* Bowyers.
- Florence, Defence of, 3.
- Flye, William, Assistant, 79.
- Fort, The, in Old Ground, 66.
- Fortification of the coast, 27.
- Foster, Capt. Edmund, 70.
- Foster, Lieut.-Col., 111.
- Foster, Lieut.-Col. Matthew, 111, 138.
- Foster, Sergt., Henry, Diary of, 112-128.
- Foster, Sir Reginald, 154.
- Fowls, Right to shoot, 18, 19, 21.
- Fox, William, Fife, 79.
- Foxhall, Butt at, 91.
- "Foynes Batchellors," 161.
- France, War against, 5.
- French, invasion by, 3, 242; men-at-arms, 6.
- Friend, Lieut.-Col., 214, 215, 219.
- Frind, Capt. J., 197.
- Frind, Lieut.-Col., 206.
- Fryer, Sir J., Lord Mayor, declines to receive Company, 266.
- Fulker, Capt. Thomas, 276.
- Fuller's earth, Exportation of, 31.
- Furs, Right to wear, 19; edicts against, 22.
- "Fusades," to be provided, 255.
- Fusiliers, The, 249; cartridges of, 266; dress of, 254, 268, 270, 271, 273, 275, 276; numbers of, 254; officers of, 254, 275, 276; Royal Blue, exercise of, 313.
- Fusils, 295.
- Gabions, Gift of, 304.
- Games, Unlawful, 7, 10-12, 14, 15, 30, 38, 39, 107.
- Garrisons, dispersed, 25.
- Garraway, Captain, 105.
- Garroway, Alderman, 71, 85, 94.
- Gate-keeper, appointed, 156, 278.
- Gates for the Armoury, 313.
- Gates of the Ground, 219, 223, 247.
- Gates of the Ground, Iron, blinds for, 320; erection of, 308, 309; passage to, 309; repair of, 219, 223, 278, 301; stone piers for, 308; to be locked, 320.
- Gateway for the Ground, 303.
- Gauthorne, Jonathan, 79.

Gayer, Alderman John, 94, 97, 99.

Geere, Sergeant-Major, 111.

General, of the City forces, The, 104.

General, Major-, or Sergeant-Major of City forces, 112, 143, 166.

General days—*see* Leads and Mayor; allowance by Lieutenantcy for, 266; allowance by Lord Mayor for, 317; attendance on, 229, 292; "bringers up" on, rank of, 227, 256; date of fixing, 281; dress on, 271; entertainments on, 247, 259, 261, 264-266, 290, 311-313, 315, 319, 320; allowance for entertainments on, stopped, 264, 271, 273; precedence at entertainments on, 264; expenses of, 189, 190, 193, 205, 245, 247, 264, 320, 322; fixed, 150, 164, 169, 205, 209, 222, 225, 227, 228; held in Garden, 180, 198, 218, 219, 222, 271—*see* General days to march through City; names of members at, 244, 264; number of members for, 187, 264; dress of officers on, 213, 271; election of officers on, 304; expenses of officers on, 188; names of officers on, 173, 196, 197, 200, 206, 215, 230, 231, 245, 249, 261, 262, 266, 268, 275-277, 282 *note*; posts of officers on, 252; postponed, 211, 250; programmes of exercises for, 179, 187, 197, 206, 271, 285, 286, 294, 317; printing of programmes of exercises for, 274, 303; sham fights on, 168, 187, 196, 198; descriptions of sham fights on, 171-179, 245-247, 282-285; strangers on, 261, 274; substitutes on, 242, 256; suspended, 212, 232; to march through the City, 156, 167, 169, 171, 187-190, 192, 193, 196, 198, 205, 210, 211, 214, 215, 217, 218, 220, 222, 224, 226-231, 236, 240, 242, 244, 245, 247, 250, 255, 259, 261, 265-267, 271, 273, 282, 286, 294, 299, 311, 321; to march to Balmes, 170, 181, 187, 188, 190, 193, 210, 213, 215, 218, 223, 224, 226-231, 236, 240, 242, 247, 250, 253, 255, 259, 265, 266, 271, 273, 282, 290, 298.

General nights, Strangers on, 264.

General quarter day, 163.

Generals—*see* Leaders; Arms of, 275; commanders called, 215; fees of, 317; march without, 280; rank of, 259.

Generals, Lieutenant-, Arms of, 275; election of, 231, 219, 202, 266; fees

of, 317; Lieutenants of the Ground styled, 314; rank of, 227, 259, 262.

Generals, Major-, Arms of, 275; duty of, 322; Ensigns of the Ground styled, 314; fees of, 317; to be mounted, 319.

George, Lieutenant, William, 276.

George I., 296; addresses to, 257-259, 268-270, 273, 277; admitted, 257; dines at Guildhall, 281; entry of, into London, 253-255; gift by, 270, 271, 286, 294; grand march to, 273-277; review by, 267-270.

George II., Accession of, celebrated, 305, 321; addresses to, 279, 280, 292, 310; Captain-General, 287; death of, 323; dines at Guildhall, 280; grand march to, 274; receives Company, 280, 292.

Georges, Sir F., Grant to, 93 *note*.

Gerard, Lord, admitted, 209.

Gerrard, Captain, George, 276.

Gibraltar, Siege of, 2.

Gilbert, Lieutenant, 275.

Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, 13.

Gittins, Captain John, Book by, 295.

Gloucester, Duke of, 167, 168.

Gloucester, Siege of, 112 and *note*, 117-119, 129.

Glover, Edward, Beadle, 79.

Glover, Mr. Thomas, The journeyman of, 132.

Godard, Lieut., 197.

"Gonnes," 3, 5.

Goodcheap, Thomas, Engineer, 267.

Goodson, William, Lease to, 240, 241, 260, 262.

Goodwin, Col., 119.

Gosling, Sir W., Steward, 215.

Grafton, Duke of, admitted, 209.

"Grandoes," 119.

"Granodeeres," Exercise as, 219.

Great Book, The—*see* Vellum Book.

Greeks—*see* Romans.

Green, Col., to lead the Fusiliers, 249.

Green Regiment of City Auxiliaries, 136, 139, 140 and *note*.

Green Regiment of City Trained Bands, 111 and *note*, 134-137, 251, 302.

Greenhurst, Robert, 39.

- Greenwich, Arsenal at, 12; muster at, 103.
- Gregory, Lieut., 275.
- Gregory, Mr., Armourer, 293.
- Gregory, Mrs., applies for post of Armourer, 293.
- Gregory, Thomas, appointed Adjutant, 270; Lieut. of the Grenadiers, 275; trustee of Ground, 281.
- Grenades, 190, 249; invented, 15; use of, discontinued, 15.
- Grenadiers, origin of, 15; of the Company, 251, 254; caps of, 252, 268; motto on caps of, 251; cartridges of, 266; dress of, 219, 275; expenses of, 249, 251; first mentioned, 220; height of, 318; music of, 270, 289; names of officers of, 275; number fixed, 318; positions of, on marches, 275, 310, 318; raised, 219; title for summoning, 315.
- Grenadiers, The, Captains of, 245, 268, 274, 282 *note*; allowance to, 290; election of, 220, 223, 270, 290; payment by, 322.
- Grenadiers, The Lieutenants of, payment by, 322; dress of, 252.
- Gresham College, an armoury, 42.
- Gresham House, 186.
- Grevill, Isaac, admitted, 233.
- Greyhurst, Capt. William, 245.
- Griffith, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 158, 159.
- Grocers, Company of, muster of, 6.
- Grocers' Hall, armoury in, 159; feasts at, 190, 227, 228; Parliamentary Committee at, 110.
- Ground-keeper, The, 167; duty of, 164.
- Grove, Capt. Francis, 89.
- Guard, King's Yeomen of the, 81.
- Guards, The Foot, 254, 321; use of Ground by, 281, 316.
- Guidott, Kielway, 153.
- Guildhall, The, arms removed to, 195, 212; feasts at, 154, 167, 280, 281; military stores at, 3; musters at, 191, 211, 227, 274; officers tried at, 300; used by Court, 228.
- Gun Makers, Company of, 106 *note*.
- Gunner in the Ground, post of, 81.
- Gunners, Artillery Garden, a school for, 81; training of, 65, 67; trial of, 65.
- Gunners, a Company of, proposal to form, 33.
- Gunners of the Navy, certificates to, 32, 81; incompetency of, 32; number to a ship, 82; register of, 32; skill tested, 32, 33; supply of, 32.
- Gunners of the Tower—*see* Tower.
- Gunners, Master-, of England, 32, 46, 62, 81, 94; Old Ground left to, 159.
- Gunpowder, Early uses of, 2, 3; expensive, 321; first known, 2, 82; for Trained Bands, 142; keeper of the, 307; storehouse for, 189, 314.
- Guns, The, kept at the Tower, 189—*see* Hand-guns.
- Gunsmith, The, elected, 79, 155; salary of, 224.
- Gurney, Alderman Richard, 94, 97, 99.
- Haberdashers, Company of, Muster of men of, 6.
- Hacker, Captain, 130.
- Hacklewit, Colonel, Captain of Company, 78.
- Hackshaw, Robert, Lease to, 262.
- Hagbushes, License to use, 11.
- Hagbuttes, length of, 9; permission to use, 9, 12.
- Halberds, 4, 28, 316; manufacture of, 13; number of, 301.
- Halford, Captain, 197.
- Halifax, Lord, admitted, 209.
- Haliwell and Finsbury, Prebendaries of, leases by, 23, 24.
- Halsey, Captain, 105.
- Halywell Moor, leased to City, 24.
- Hamersley, Alderman Sir Hugh, 55, 56, 60, 64, 70-72, 74, 78, 85, 91; resigns the Presidentship, 78.
- Hamersley, Captain, 105.
- Hamilton, Duke of, admitted, 209.
- Hammond, William, Master-Gunner of England, claims the Garden, 46, 49, 57, 59, 61.
- Hand-guns, in request, 82; introduced, 5; length of, 9, 10; practice with, 11, 12; Statutes, &c., concerning, 9-11; used by City for, 28, 29, 103; used by Company, 17-19, 21.
- Hand-in-Hand Insurance Office, 294, 314.
- Hankey, Ensign, 197.
- Hannum, Mr., Gates made by, 308.

"Hanover Grenadiers, The," 315.
 Hanover, House of, Company in favour of, 251, 257, 311.
 Harbutt, Captain A., 215.
 Harness of City forces, 28.
 Harnessmen, Muster of, 24.
 Harold II., 4.
 Harrington, Colonel Sir James, 138.
 Harrington, Sir Edward, 138.
 Harris, Mr., 293, 296.
 Harris, William, Gift by, 300; trustee of Ground, 281, 294.
 Harrison, Alderman, 94.
 Harrison, Lieut.-Colonel Ralph, 137.
 Harrison, Major-General, 142.
 Harvey, Captain, 111, 197.
 Harvey, Major, 206.
 Harvie, Colonel, 122.
 Hastings, Battle of, 4.
 Hautboys, 219, 220, 224, 242, 245, 270, 289.
 Hawkins, Capt. John, 304.
 Hawkins, John, gunsmith, 295.
 Heath, Sir Robert, Attorney-General, 83.
 Heathcote, Sir Gilbert, elected Lord Mayor, 250; Treasurer, 248; Vice-President, 258.
 Helke, Lieut., 197.
 Henrietta Maria, Review by, 103.
 Henry VIII. reviews City forces, 27.
 Henshawe, Capt., 104.
 Herbage, The, of the Ground, damage to, 219, 272; leases of, 167, 180, 205, 271, 278, 281, 286, 301, 309, 320; mortgages of, 235, 239, 248, 250, 252, 265.
 Hescott, Dr., Sermon by, 214.
 Hewitt, Mr., 3.
 Heydon, Sir John, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, 91; claims the Ground, 66, 94.
 Heydon, Sir William, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, 65 and *note*.
 Hicks, Dr., Sermon by, 210.
 Hieron, Sir N., Sheriff, 194.
 Hillman, Lieut., 197.
 Hillyard, Mr., becomes a burgess, 256.
 Hingist, Lieut., 276.
 Hitchcock, Capt. William, 137.

VOL. I.

Hoar *alias* Hoare, Sir Richard, Lord Mayor, 249, 250; gift by, 313.
 Hodder, Mr., 187.
 Hodges, Alderman, Colonel of Archers, 106.
 Hodges, William, Captain of Archers, 106.
 Hogsden, Pathway to, 147.
 Holland, Earl of, 110.
 Holland, Lord of, 117.
 Holman, F., Vote to, 321.
 Holt, Lord Chief Justice, 221.
 Hooker, Capt., 111.
 Hooker, Capt. Edward, 136.
 Hook-morton, Skirmish near, 114.
 Hopson, Charles, Sheriff, a Lieut.-General, 245.
 Horne, Capt., 197.
 Horse, Regiment of, sent to Gloucester, 133; cowardice of, 127, 132; troops of, raised in City, 143, 166.
 Horselydown, Description of, 89.
 Horsnaill, C., Contract of, 308.
 "Horssey down," Exercise ground made at, 89.
 Hour-glass, An, bought, 169.
 Hows, Capt. William, Gift by, 315.
 Hoxton, Archery at, 29.
 Hudson, Capt., 206.
 Hudson, Colonel, 138.
 Hudson, Lieut. Peter, 42.
 Hudson, Philip, 39, 42-44; elected Lieutenant, 42.
 Hudson, Henry, Lord, 91 *note*.
 Hughes, Robert, 39.
 Hungerford, Skirmish at, 123.
 Hunt, Capt. Richard, Death of, 126, 131, 134, 136.
 Hunt, Capt.-Lieut., Apology of, 316.
 Hunt, the common, Dog house for, 23.
 Huntingdon, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Hurdles, Gift of, 304.
 Hurry, Colonel, 132.
 Huts for a General day, 196.
 Hyde, Lord, admitted, 209.
 Hyde Park, Review in, 225; training in, 142.
 India, Artillery in, 2.
 Invasion, of England, 3, 4, 27, 310; of Ireland, 37.

2 I

- Ipswich, Artillery Yard at, 89.
 Ireland, Conquest of, 5; invasion of, 37.
 Ireton, Sir John, Lord Mayor and Deputy President, 158, 161.
 Irish, The, not archers, 5.
 Iron ordnance, 4.
 Ironmongers, Company of, an admission to, 55.
 Ironside, Sir E., Lord Mayor, 317, 318.
 Ishmael, an archer, 4.
 Islington, Archery at, 29.
 Ixem, Capt. F., Trophy given by, 191.
 Ixem, Mr., 173.

 James I., Grants by, 46, 62, 69; reorganises Trained Bands, 102.
 James II.—see York, Duke of; accession of, 216; address to, 217; officers wait upon, 218, 220; warrant of, 201, 218.
 Jeffreys, Jeffery, Vice-President, 226, 243.
 Jefford, Capt. Philip, nominated Captain, 65.
 Johnson, Capt. John, 276.
 Johnson, Cornelius, Master of Company, 17, 20.
 Johnson, Henry, Master of Company, 17, 20.
 Jonathan, Artillery of, 1 note.
 Jones, Lord Justice, 211.
 Jones, Sam, admitted to Court, 219.
 Juries, Exemption from, 19.
 Juxon, Capt. Thomas, 137.

 Kaye, Col. Sir John, Surveyor of Ordnance, 57 note, 60.
 Keeling, Lord Chief Justice, 183.
 Keeper, The Lord, 76.
 Kelk, Capt., 219.
 Kelk, Major, Leader of Grenadiers, 223.
 Kellie, Earl of, 76.
 Kensea, Major, 206.
 Kent, Defence of, 85, 86.
 Kildare, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Kilmore Castle, Charge of, 65.
 Kimbolton, Lord, 110.
 King, Capt., 304.
 King, Sir Andrew, 169.
 Kingsland, Tents pitched at, 213.
 Kinsale, Lord, admitted, 209.

 Knevett, Anthony, Overseer of Company, 17, 20.
 Knights, to be members of Court, 230.

 Ladd, Mr., Machine of, 322.
 Ladyman, Lieut., Sergeant of Ground, 293.
 Ladyman, Mr., Sutler, 300.
 Lambe, Capt. Joseph, 276.
 Lamb, George, becomes a burgess, 256.
 Lamb, John, Lieut. of Grenadiers, 275.
 Lamb, Major Joseph, 295; action against, 298-300.
 Lances, 4, 35, 301.
 Langham, Capt., 74.
 Langham, George, Assistant, 79.
 Lansdowne, Lord, admitted, 209.
 Lasher, Capt., 104.
 Latone, or latten, 3.
 Laurence, Ensign, 276.
 Laverock, Thomas, 39.
 Layfield, William, elected Surgeon, 170.
 "Laystall," 23.
 Leaders on General days, 156, 167, 169, 187, 190, 192, 196, 197, 200, 219, 231, 249, 250, 261, 266, 268, 270, 275, 282 note, 292, 293; difficulty in obtaining, 188, 227, 231, 235, 250, 259, 263, 280, 282, 293; dress of, 273, 315; drill for, 321; duty of, 313; election of, discontinued, 195; election of, prohibited, 202-204; expenses of, 188, 199, 205, 222, 229, 244; for private practice, 315; members to act as, 150, 156, 164, 187, 199, 205, 219, 222, 233, 235, 236, 250, 252, 263, 270, 280, 281, 292, 314, 315; notices to, 306; orders to ensure, 252, 264, 292, 309; rank of, 256, 259; tested, 314—see Captains and Generals.
 Leads, Private, discontinued, 243, 261, 280, 289; refreshment on, 228, 244, 264, 289, 315—see General days.
 Leads, Public, discontinued, 243, 261, 280, 289; entertainment on, 264, 289, 315; names of members at, 264; number of members at, 264; summons for, 306—see General days.
 Leak, Capt., 275.
 Leate, Capt. Nicholas, 105, 145.
 Leather, Armour of, 4.
 Leathersellers, Company of, Accounts of, 163.

Leathersellers' Hall, Society exercising in, 313.

Leddingham, Warwick, 154.

Lee, Capt., 74.

Lee, Capt. Walter, 137.

Lee, Henry, Clerk of King's Armoury, 12.

Legg, Col., Master of the Ordnance, 210.

Leicester, Earl of, 15.

Leigh, Sir Richard, 12.

Lekeux, Colonel, 258.

Lewen—*see* Lewin.

Lewes, Robert, Surveyor of the Arms, 79.

Lewin, *alias* Lewen, Alderman Sir William, 249, 250.

Libri, M., 8.

Lichfield, Earl of, admitted, 209.

Lieutenancy, Court of, 110 *note*, 254, 265, 288, 290, 292, 303, 312, 317, 319; admitted to Armoury, 297; in elections (1702-1711), 248; names of, 296; votes by, 263, 266, 267, 290, 291, 303, 304; warrants to, 230, 231, 233, 234, 239, 263.

Lieutenants, Arms of, 158, 268, 289; dress of, 158, 251, 268; elected, 42, 79; Sub-, appointed, 254.

Lieutenants of the Ground, Duties of, 187, 206, 294; honorary members of Court, 226; styled Lieut.-Generals, 314; to lead, 199, 205, 222, 249.

Lieutenants to Field Officers, dress of, 252.

Lions, A present of, 301.

Liquors, Sale of—*see* Sutlers.

Lisbon, 35.

Little, James, 304.

Livery bows, 11.

Lolesworth, 31.

Lombe, Sir Thomas, Alderman, 282 *note*.

London, Bishop of, 76, 168.

London, City of, Boundaries of, 36; Charter, 161, 211, 222; Committee for martial business, 41, 42; conduits run with wine, 254; defence of, 34, 36, 111, 112; discontent in, 35, 212; dispute about Artillery Garden, 45-47, 49, 50, 56, 57, 59-63, 85; dispute about election of Captain, 70-

77, 86-88; dispute about pavements, 197, 212, 226, 234, 241, 244; dispute with Capt. Panton, 47-56; disturbances near, 29, 109; elections in, 200, 212; military exercises in, 95; registration of citizens, 34; royal visits, 166, 253-255; right to be present at royal visits, 254; votes for royal visits, 206, 255, 280, 281; sheds erected after Fire, 186, 187; shops closed in, 112; soldiers, raised in, 6, 10, 15, 35, 36, 47, 48, 104, 105; supply of water, 70; threatened attack on, 25.

London, City of, Auxiliaries of, Arms and accoutrements of, 139, 141, 142; completed, 142; colours of, 136, 140 *note*; in the Civil War, 140 and *note*, 141—*see* London, forces of; list of regiments, 136; muster of, 134, 135, 139, 140 and *note*; officers of, 36, 110, 139, 141, 169, 230; raised, 110 *note*, 166; admission of sergeants of, 169, 239; strength of, 136, 139, 140 *note*; trophies of, 142.

London, City of, Forces of—*see* Auxiliaries, Trained Bands and Militia; arms of, 28, 47, 48; certificate of numbers, 28; contributions in aid of, 142; discipline of, 135; dress of, 23, 135, 166; drill-book for, 111 *note*; exercise in Ground, 167; musters of, 33, 103; officers of, 36, 105, 110, 142, 265; officers of, found by Company, 57, 92; review of, 27-29; training of, 34, 92, 105.

London, City of, Forces of, in the Civil War; at relief of Gloucester, 112, 117-119, 129; Cavaliers attack, 116, 117, 124-126, 131, 133, 134; Clarendon's opinion of, 133; command of, 110, 112; diaries, &c., concerning, 112-132, 140 *note*; in battle of Newbury, 123-127, 131-134; in skirmish at Aberne Chase, 122, 131; in skirmish at Stow, 115-117, 129; march to Gloucester, 112-118; officers killed, 125, 130, 131; regiments engaged, 112 *note*, 133, 136; return to London, 128, 133, 134; volunteer for service, 111; serve again, 140, 141.

London, City of, Trained Bands of, 161, 162, 213; armour of, 104; arms of, 35, 83, 104, 136; arms of, marked, 109; number of Captains of, 145; colours of, 111 *note*, 136, 139-140 *note*; fees of members, 109; four regiments formed, 104; command of the same,

- 104; officers, wards, and rendezvous of the same, 104, 105; exercise of, in Ground, 91, 93, 96-99, 153, 271; increased, 110; list of, 136; march for drummers of, 85; musters of, 58, 59, 90, 91, 134-138, 140 *note*, 142, 146, 166, 225, 254, 312; musters of, spectators of, 312; officered by Company, 50, 51, 73; officers of, allowance for, 263, 266; officers of, days of exercise for, 219, 302; officers of, expelled, 317; officers of, members of Company, 36, 103, 169, 194, 230, 234, 239, 259, 263-265; officers of, members of Court, 190, 191, 230, 239, 252, 256; officers of, promotion of, 103; officers of, to attend General Marches, 263, 264; officers of, to use arms, armoury, and ground, 251, 259, 289, 290, 291, 297; officers of, to wear buff, 264; reorganised as Militia, 143; salutes to, 296, 302, 309, 312; sergeants of, admission of, 103, 169, 223, 224, 227, 230, 236, 239, 263, 265; sergeants of, allowance for quarterage for, 267; sergeants of, arms of, 223, 292; sergeants of, attendance of, at marches, 292; sergeants of, expulsion of, 292; sergeants of, obtaining commissions, 229, 239, 264; sergeants of, promotion of, 103; sergeants of, to wear buff, 264, 292; services of, 37, 109—*see* London, Forces of; strength of, 136, 140 *note*; styled Militia, 303.
- Long, Captain Richard, Leases to, 305, 308.
- Long-bow Makers, Petition of, 106.
- Long-bows, Accuracy of, 12; disuse of, 7; for City forces, 106, 142; price of, 8, 142; Statutes relating to, 8-10; used by Company, 17-19, 21.
- Lords, House of, Petition to, 148, 149.
- Lowe, Sir, Thomas, 41, 104.
- Lucas, Lord, 167.
- Luck, Captain, 304.
- Lumley, Lord, at feast, 206.
- Mabb, Ralph, Sergeant, 79.
- Maces, 4.
- Mainwaring, Captain Robert, 138.
- Mainwaring, or Manwaring, Lieutenant-Colonel Randall, 114, 133, 136, 149.
- Mainwaring, Sergeant-Major, 111.
- Mainwaring, Thomas, Lease to, 223.
- Major, William, Prior of St. Mary Spittle, 31.
- Major, Title Sergt.-Major used for, 140.
- Majors, Commanders called, 206, 215.
- Majors of Trained Bands, honorary members of Court, 281.
- Manby, or Manbye, Captain William, 137, 149.
- Manby, William, elected Assistant, 79.
- Manby, Lieut.-Colonel William, Treasurer, 153 *note*, 156, 159, 163, 164-167.
- Manchester, Lord, 188, 215.
- Mansion House, Company at the, 318.
- Manual Exercise, The, printed, 316.
- Manwaring, Colonel, 114.
- "March of the English Nation, The," 85.
- March, Grand, in 1727, 273; regulations for, 273, 274; order of, 274-277.
- Marches, General—*see* General days; occasions of, 227, 310, 317.
- Marks for Crown property, 7; stakes for, 27—*see* Butts.
- Marlows, Captain John, elected Lieut.-General, 231.
- "Mars, His Triumph," Exercise called, 95 *note*.
- Marshal, the, Arms of, 158, 193, 265, 314; dress of, 158, 193, 314; duties of, 164, 187, 188; man's head broken by, 164, 188; salary of, 224; suspended, 235; truncheons of, 229; of City Militia, dress of, 303.
- Martial Yard, in Southwark, 89.
- Martin, Captain W., Action against, 298-300.
- Mary, Queen, Address to, 215; review by, 225.
- Mason, Captain, Engineer, 295, 296.
- Mason, Mr., 130.
- Massey, Mr., Lease to, 260.
- Masters, The first, 17; privileges of, 18, 19.
- Masters, Under-, Election of, 18.
- Matrosses, 189.
- Matthewes, Edward, Clerk, 79.
- Maurice, Colonel, 139.
- Maurice, Prince, 130, 131.

- Mayor, the Lord, Body-guard of, 308; control of Company by, 71, 75; Company dine with, 211, 217, 227; elect, waited upon, 160, 171, 192, 241; election of, 200, 212, 250; escort for, 321; General of Trained Bands, 104; marches to—see General days to march through City; marches to, allowances for, 317; marches to, occasions of, 317; presented to the King, 161; procession to dine with, 228; purses for, 217, 227; refuses to receive Company, 266, 311; tickets for march to, 220; tickets to dine with, 228; to serve as General, 317.
- Mayor's, The Lord, "pageants," 161 and *note*.
- Mayor's, the Lord, Show, Allowances for, 241, 251, 281, 317; Archers in, 194, 195; Company present at, 160, 161, 167, 191, 192, 194, 195, 199, 200, 206, 210, 213, 218-220, 230, 241, 250, 260, 280, 308, 317, 318; entertainments after, 199, 206, 210, 218, 260, 318, 322; origin of, 161; place of assembly for, 218; tickets for, 220.
- Meauties, Peter, 20.
- Meggott, Dr., Sermon by, 195.
- Meldram, Colonel, 122.
- Men-at-arms, found by City, 6.
- Merchant Taylors' Hall, Exercise at, 95; feasts at, 56, 60, 94, 157, 158, 163, 168, 170, 193-198, 200, 209, 210.
- Merry, John, Sutler, 298, 300.
- Mews, Colonel, Treasurer, 197.
- Mews, Lieutenant, 173.
- Mewtes, *alias* Meauties, Peter, Overseer, 17, 20.
- Middlesex Militia—see Militia.
- Middleton, Henry, Surgeon, 267, 276.
- Middleton, Sir Thomas, 70, 104.
- Mile-end, Company of Archers at, 19; musters at, 103.
- "Military Associations," 58.
- "Military Bands" of London, 90.
- "Military Company" of London, 58, 86—see Artillery Company, the Honourable, of London, 90.
- "Military Discipline, a Compendium of," 273, 319.
- "Military Discipline, A Complete System of," 295.
- "Military Discipline, or, the Young Artilleryman," 69 *note*.
- Military Garden of London, 164.
- "Military Glory of this Nation," 161, 192, 213.
- Military Societies, formed, 89.
- Military Yard, in London, 90.
- Militia, The, 106; Trained Bands called, 110 *note*.
- Militia, The City, payments to officers of, 303, 304; Trained Bands called, 110, 303; Commanders for the, 110 and *note*; Committee of, 110-112, 135 *note*, 141-143, 153, 156, 157 *note*, 161, 162, 166.
- Militia, London, organised, 143; to be disbanded, 143.
- Militia, Middlesex, Eastern Regiment of, use the Ground, 323; exercise ground of, 90; muster of, 225; Sergeants of, members, 227, 229, 230, 239.
- Militia, Westminster, assembly of, 254.
- Mill, Peter, 149.
- Mills, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 171.
- Milward, Capt., 105.
- Milward, John, Capt., Assistant, 79.
- Minstrels of City, 28.
- Minute Books, The first, 155.
- Minutes, a draft of, for next Court, 290.
- Mitchell, Mr., House built by, 305, 307.
- Models, a present of, 301.
- Monk, General George, inspects Company, 164; Sergeant-Major-General of City forces, 166.
- Monmouth, Duke of, at feasts, 171, 190-194, 197.
- Montague, H., Lord Justice, 52, 55.
- Monument, Inscription on the, 181.
- Moor, Sir John, Lord Mayor, 200.
- "Moor, The," 22.
- Moorditch, Sheds and Tents in, 186.
- Moorfields, a source of infection, 22; archery in, 22, 23; gardens in, destroyed, 22, 23; grant of, 22; improvements in, 144, 145; lease of, 23; loppings of trees in, 196; musters in, 24, 139, 154, 194; railed in, 144; reclaimed, 144; refuse deposited in, 22, 23; sheds and tents in, 185, 186; to be levelled, 23; to be viewed, 23; trees and gravel for, 145 and *note*; walls for, 145; Windmill Hill in, 23.

- Moorfields, Little, Sham fight in, 174; soil of, carried away, 45; walls for, 145.
- Moorfields, Upper, origin of name, 23; the Tainters in, 45.
- Moors, The artillery of, 2.
- Mores, Sir Christopher, 20.
- Morocco, Ambassador of, 90.
- Morris, Capt. Richard, Captain of Company, 42, 43.
- Morris, Lieut., 44.
- Morris, Sir Christopher, Master of the Ordnance, Overseer and Master, 17, 19, 20.
- Morrison, Sir Richard, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, 45, 57 *note*, 62.
- Morriton, Dr., Sermon by, 191.
- Mortar, The, of Company, 301, 313.
- "Moryse pykes," 28.
- Mosse, Capt. George, 112 *note*, 125, 136.
- Moulson, Thomas, Beadle, 155, 192.
- Moyle, Edward, Prebendary of Finsbury, 24.
- Mulgrave, Earl of, at feast, 200.
- Muskets, Charge of powder for, 92; for Auxiliaries, cost of, 141; Trained Bands, 16; in request, 82; instruction in use of, 187; Sergeants of Trained Bands to bear, 223.
- Musketeers, the, Dress of, 193, 213; quarterage of, 162.
- Music, for marches, expense of, 288; of the Grenadiers, 270, 289.
- Musicians, the, Entertainment of, 311, 312.
- Muster-Master, Office of, 16; of City, appointment of, 92, 93, 107, 108; fees of, 108, 109; relation of, to Captain of Company, 92.
- Musters of Company, 52, 56, 58, 82, 146, 156, 158, 162, 167, 187, 191, 211, 227—*see* General days; discontinued, 45, 179, 181.
- Naunton, Secretary, 56, 60.
- Naval stores, 183, 184.
- Navy, The, prepared for sea, 27; gunners of—*see* Gunners.
- Naylor, Thomas, 153.
- Nead, William, invention of, 81-83.
- Neale, Capt. Walter, applies for post of Muster-Master, 92; applies for posts in Colonies, 93; elected Captain, 79, 80; his plantations in New England, 93 *note*.
- Needle, Rôbert, a brickmaker, 80.
- Nevell, Henry, Sergeant, 79.
- New England, The Governorship of, 93; plantations in, 93 *note*; services of Capt. Neale in, 93.
- Newbury, Battle of, 112 *note*, 123-127, 131-134; "words" at, 126.
- Newport, Earl of, 92.
- Newport, Viscount, at feast, 196.
- Nicholas, Sir Edward, Letter of, 81.
- Niebla, Siege of, 2.
- Norcott, John, Gunsmith, 79.
- Norfolk, Duke of, temporarily Captain-General, 224.
- Norman Archers, 4.
- Norman, William, Leases to, 309, 311, 312.
- North Company of City Archers, 106.
- North, Ensign, elected Armourer, 293.
- North Regiment of City Trained Bands, 105.
- Nottingham, Artillery Yard at, 89.
- Nowth, A., Drummer, Salary of, 197.
- Oates, Titus, 40 *note*.
- Oath of Allegiance, taken by members, 167.
- Officers, Action against, for assault, 298-300; deaths of, during Plague, 180; discharged, 234; dress of, 268, 269; lists of, 157, 322; precedence of, 227; right to appoint, 71, 75, 77; 79, 86-88, 222; salaries of, 86, 88; to go on foot, 269; wine for, 312.
- Officers of the Ground, Election of, 220; list of, 323.
- Offices in the Company, Admission to, 305; borne in turn by members, 33.
- Ogle, Sir John, 57 *note*, 60.
- Old Jewry Church, The Court at, 194.
- Oldfield, Joseph, a brickmaker, 80.
- Orange, Prince of, Company wait upon, 190; marriage of, 293.
- Orange Regiment of City Auxiliaries, 112 *note*, 113-116, 119, 121, 122, 127, 128, 131, 133, 136.
- Orange Regiment of City Trained Bands, 111 and *note*, 134-136, 138, 302.
- Orders, The, 45, 65, 70, 75-77, 264, 265; revision of, 309.

- Ordnance, Lieutenants of the, 31, 45, 65, 66.
 Ordnance, Master of the, of the City, 107 *note*.
 Ordnance, Masters of the, 17, 81, 210.
 Ordnance Office, Account of, 32 *note*; gift by, 223.
 Ordnance, Proof of, 196.
 Ordnance, Surveyor of the, 57 *note*.
 Orford, Earl of, at feast, 210.
 Ormond, Duke of, at feasts, 168, 171, 194.
 Osgood, Capt. Benjamin, 276, 282 *note*.
 Osgood, Major B., 293, 295; action against, 298-300.
 Ossory, Earl of, at feast, 198.
 Overseers of Company, 17.
 Owen, Ensign, 276.
 Owen, John, cannon-founder, 3.
 Oxford, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Pall-mall, Game of, in the Ground, 223.
 Panton, Capt. Edward, Leader, 45; a common adventurer, 40 *note*; dispute of, with City, 47-56; discharged, 50; freeman of City, 47; recompensed, 55, 56; suspended, 50-52; to train Company, 40; votes to, 42, 44.
 Panton Square, 40 *note*.
 Panton Street, 40 *note*.
 Parades—*see* General days.
 Parliamentary army, Review of, 114.
 Partisan, A new, ordered, 192.
 Partisan, The, covered with cypress, 162.
 Partisans, 158, 189, 215, 301, 316; for Flankers, 269, 275, 280, 289; rank of bearers of, 210, 223.
 Paston, Lord, at feast, 206.
 Pathrades, for the Auxiliaries, 142.
 Peake, Sir J., Lord Mayor, 219.
 Peaks, Sir R., Vice-President and Leader, Funeral of, 187.
 Peers, Sir Charles, elected Treasurer, 249.
 Peirce, Edward, elected Assistant, 79.
 Pelham, Sir William, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, 31.
 Pennington, Colonel Isaac, Alderman, 111 *note*, 137.
 Pepys, Samuel, at feast, 196; visits Old Ground, 196.
 Pergehouse, Captain, 197.
 Perrier, Captain, 163.
 Perrier, Lieut., on a general day, 173.
 Perry, Captain, 197, 206, 215, 219.
 Pesthouse, The, of the City, 147.
 Pesthouse, Field, 282.
 Peterborough, Lord, at feast, 193.
 Petronels, 35.
 Pettis, Dr., Sermon by, 196.
 Pettye, Captain Myles, 138.
 Peyton, Sir R., Colonel of Archers, 154, 194, 195.
 Pheasaunt, Mr., 91.
 Phillips, Lieut.-Colonel, Peregrine, 276, 295.
 Philpott, Bartholomew, elected Ensign, 79.
 Philpott, Lieutenant, 275.
 Pictures of the Company, 162, 163, 301.
 Pike, A, combined with a bow, 81-83.
 Pike drill, 251.
 Pikemen, Dress of, 213, 271, 273, 276; names of officers, 276; quarterage of, 162.
 Pikemen, Half, Dress of, 268, 270, 271; management of, 187; on general days, 206, 223, 230, 231.
 Pikes, 241, 268; and Muskets, a Company of, 63; charge for use of, 266; for auxiliaries, number and cost of, 141.
 Pikes, Half, 4, 189; bearers of, 268, 275, 289, 295; instruction in use of, 187; number of, 301; only, to be used, 265.
 Pikes, Quarter, The number of, 301.
 Pinder, Martin, Surveyor of Arms, 79.
 Pioneers, for Trained Bands, 10; Captain of the, appointed, 226; field staff for Captain of the, 274; the, for general days, 193, 245, 268; command of the, for general days, 310; number of the, for general days, 200, 210, 215, 220, 224, 310; positions of the, for general days, 274, 300, 310, 318; fur caps, for the, 310; Lieutenant of the, a battle-axe for, 274.
 Pitman, James, Lease to, 262.
 Pitman, Mr., Lease to, 262.
 Pitts, The, cannon founders, 3.

- Plague, The, 15, 147, 179, 180.
 Plate, The, of the Company, 150, 167.
 Player, Captain, 111.
 Player, Captain Thomas, 137.
 Player, Sir Thomas, 190, 192, 196;
 rejected as Leader, 195.
 Plymouth, Earl of, at feast, 193.
 Poitiers, Artillery at, 2.
 Pole, Reynold, 27.
 Poleaxes, 28.
 Politics in the Company, 168, 199, 205,
 209, 247, 248, 251, 252, 257, 311.
 Pollard, Henry, elected Drummer, 79.
 Pollin, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 198.
 Poltney, Mr., 293.
 Poor Box, The, 315; gift to, on renew-
 ing lease, 281.
 Popery, The Company inclined to, 205.
 Popinjay, Game of, 18, 31.
 Porter, C., of the King's Bedchamber,
 70.
 Porter, Endimion, Captain of the Mi-
 itary Company, 90.
 Porter, The, duties of, 192; lodge for
 the, 183; salary of the, 224.
 Post, The Daily, 270.
 Post, The Flying, 273.
 Postman, The, Advertisement in, 240.
 Pouches, Distribution and care of, 307.
 Predmore, Peter, Leases to, 243, 259.
 Freedmore, or Pridmore, Mr., Garden
 of, 278, 299.
 Presidents, 56, 158, 167, 226, 232, 233,
 243; burgesses not to be, 256;
 elected, 75, 78, 79, 92, 95, 151, 202,
 206, 248, 249; order of election, 239;
 right to elect, 74, 75, 77.
 Presidents, Deputy or Vice, 158, 187,
 226, 228, 243, 258; elected, 79, 202,
 206, 248, 249; right to elect, 71, 74,
 75.
 Pretender, The Old, 239, 242, 251, 255,
 259, 270; the Young, 310.
 Price, Capt., Vote of thanks to, 304.
 Pridmore, Mr., 278.
 Pritchard, Sir William, 200, 208, 212,
 214, 215; elected President, 206,
 248; Vice-President, 202.
 Proctor, Sir William Beauchamp, 323.
 Proof-house, in Old Ground, erected,
 153; pulled down, 63.
 Provost-Marshal, Office of, 16.
 Prussian Exercise, The, practice of, 321,
 322; printed, 321.
 "Punchinello," A gun called, 196.
 Purfleet, Armoury at, 13.
 Pye, Sir Robert, 121.
 Quarterage, 169, 213, 227, 236, 239,
 259, 263, 265; collection of, 170,
 171, 305; exemption from, 263, 264,
 287; members in arrears of, 164, 167,
 187, 222, 231, 256, 261, 317; of
 Musketeers and Pikemen, 162; re-
 ceipts for, printed, 169; refusals to
 pay, 282; vote by Lieutenantancy in lieu
 of, 267.
 Queensbury, Marquis of, admitted, 209.
 Ragge, James, Clerk, 155, 159, 160.
 Ramsey, Sir James, 120.
 Randall, Capt., 189.
 Rawden, or Rawdon, Marmaduke,
 Leader, 70, 74, 149.
 Rawlinson, Thomas, Lord Mayor, 318.
 Raybould, Capt. Edward, 275.
 Rayden, Capt., Deputy-President, 79.
 Reading, Skirmish near, 127, 128.
 Records of the Company, 153 *note*, 167;
 care of, 305; examined, 251; seizure
 of, 152.
 Refreshments, Provision of—*see* Sut-
 lers.
 Rents, Collection of, 305.
 Red Regiment of Auxiliaries of City,
 112 *note*, 116, 119, 121, 122, 127,
 128, 131, 133, 136, 141; Trained
 Bands of City, 111-119, 121, 122,
 124-128, 131, 133, 136, 302; West-
 minster, 140 and *note*.
 Review by George I., 267-270, 287;
 expenses of, 268; names of officers,
 268; post of members, 268.
 Reynolds, John, Master-Gunner of Eng-
 land, Dispute with, 62, 63, 66-69.
 Reynolds, Robert, Lease to, 299.
 Richard II., 3.
 Richford, Sergeant William, Compensa-
 tion to, 267.
 Riot Act passed, 259.
 Robinson, Alderman, 166.

- Robinson, Capt., 104.
 Robinson, John, 155.
 Robinson, Mr., 271, 272, 278, 293.
 Robinson, Sir John, 169, 173; Alderman and Lieutenant of Tower, 179; President, 167, 180, 196.
 Roe, Capt. Francis, 138.
 Roe, Sergeant-Major Owen, 111, 138.
 Rogers, John, 156.
 Rolls Chapel, Search in, 319.
 Romans and Greeks, A sham fight as, 171-179.
 Romans, Cemetery of, 31; exercise ground of, 31; feathers worn by, 185; invasion by, 4; Paul, Bishop of, 27.
 Romozantin, Castle of, Siege of, 2.
 Rormington, Alexander, Assistant, 79.
 Rosecommon, Lord, at feast, 193.
 Rose and Crown Field, 285.
 Rowe, Mr., Assistant, 79.
 Roybould, Lieutenant, 173.
 Rudge, Alderman, 95.
 Rulers, Election of, 18; the first, 17.
 Rupert, Prince, at feasts, 188, 191; in Civil War, 111, 117, 129, 133.
 Russell, Henry, Drummer, 79, 156.
 Rutty, Capt., appointed Sutler, 295.
 Rutty, Capt. Thomas, 294, 304.
 Rye House Plot, The, 207-209, 213.
 Rymill, Mr., Lease to, 286.
- St. Andrew's Undershaft, Company at, 190.
 St. George, Fraternity or Guild of, Armourer's Company called, 41 *note*.
 St. George, Fraternity or Guild of—*see* Artillery Company, the Honourable; admission to, 17; certificates of admission of, 20, 21; dress of, 3; incorporated, 17; practice ground of, 31; privileges and rules of, 17-21; same as Artillery Company, 20, 31; servants of, 19, 21; supposed earlier company, 19; title of, 18.
 St. George's Field, Musters at, 103.
 St. George's Guild, Fraternity, of Southwark, 41 *note*.
 St. James's, Expenses of a visit to, 311.
 St. James's Fields, Muster in, 59.
 St. James's Park, An exercise in, 82.
 St. Malo, Siege of, 3.
 St. Martin-le-Grand, Collegiate Church of, 22.
 St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, parish of, 90.
 St. Mary-le-Bow, Church of, Company at, 194, 197, 198, 200, 209, 210, 214, 215.
 St. Mary Spittle, Convent of, Foundation of, 31; lease by Prior of, 31, 46, 62.
 St. Michael's, Cornhill, Company at, 191.
 St. Paul's Cathedral, burned down, 181; Chancellor of, 24; charnel-house of, 23; Company at, 158, 159, 163, 170; Dean and Chapter of, 24; Finsbury Manor belonging to, 150; lead for, 24; suit of a Prebendary of, against City, 24.
 Salter, Robert, elected Sergeant, 79.
 Salutes, 273, 274, 305; on Lord Mayor's day, 161, 192, 213, 280; to City Trained Bands, allowance for powder for, 296, 302; charge of powder for, 302; number of guns for, 302, 309, 312.
 Samuel, Colonel, 268.
 Sanderson, Mr., elected Surgeon, 170.
 Sandwich, Earl of, at feast, 188.
 Saragossa, Siege of, 2.
 Saunders, Capt., 103.
 Saunders, Capt. Samuel, 276.
 Saunders, Henry, Assistant and Ensign, 79.
 Saunders, Lord Chief Justice, 211.
 Saunders, Major Samuel, 295.
 Sawyer, Sir Robert, Attorney-General, 210, 211.
 Saxons, Arms of, 4.
 Schwartz, *alias* Swart, Bartholdus, 2, 82.
 Scaffolding, The City, borrowed, 164.
 Scarlet first worn, 268, 269.
 Scotland, Invasion of, 242; the Queen's Body Guard for, 195.
 Scots, The pikemen of, 6; Trained Bands serve against, 109; war against, 2.
 Scott, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 200.
 Seabrook, William, Lease to, 240, 241.
 Seamer, Lieut.-Col. James, 295.
 Searsdale, Lord, at feast, 215.
 Sedley, Major John, 295.
 Seeley, Lieut. Thomas, Leader of the Grenadiers, 223.

- Sergeant-Major appointed, 315.
- Sergeants, Arms of, 314; dress of, 314; election of, 79, 155; expenses of, 319; height of, 314; salaries of, 224; suspended, 235, 236; voting by, 273.
- Sergeants of the Ground, Allowance to, 305; duty of, 214, 293, 305; election of, 293, 305.
- Sermons, Annual, 158, 159, 163, 170, 171, 188, 190-198, 200, 209, 210, 214, 215; votes for, 171, 188, 190, 191, 194, 209, 210, 214.
- Servants, Breakfasts for, 311; discharged, 234, 236; of the Ground, 323; salaries of, 235, 250.
- Sewers, The Commissioners of, 257, 261.
- Seymour, Lieut.-Colonel James, 303.
- Shaftesbury, Earl of, Conspiracy of, 207, 208.
- Shawe, John, Assistant and Surveyor of Arms, 79.
- Shaxton, Mr., 173.
- Sheds erected in the Ground, 185, 186; positions of, in the Ground, 294.
- Shelden, Mr., 173.
- Sheldon, Sir Joseph, 203, 204; elected, President, 202; funeral of, 206.
- Sheppard, Captain Matthew, 188.
- Sheppard, Colonel, 156; effigy of, 188, 215, 223.
- Sheppard, Mr., 189, 215.
- Sheppard, Nathaniel, elected Assistant, 79.
- Sheppeard, Colonel Matthew, Treasurer, 158.
- Shepperd, Colonel, 162.
- Sheriffs, Election of, 200, 212; refuse to pay for marches, 320; summoned to Court, 309.
- Ship Field, 285.
- Ships required from City, 36.
- Shoreditch, Archery at, 29.
- Shorey, Captain, Loan by, 235, 239, 250, 251.
- Shorey, Captain J., Lease to, 262.
- Shorey, Colonel John, Loan by, 265.
- Shorey, Major John, 245, 252.
- Shortland, Lieutenant, 276.
- "Shot," meaning of word, 103.
- "Shotte," Training of the, 15.
- Shrewsbury, Earl of, at feast, 200.
- Shute, Dr., Sermon by, 168.
- Silk, Captain, opposes the Company, 255.
- "Silk's, Captain, Jacobite Militia tune," 255.
- Skillethorp, Mr., 278.
- Skippon, Captain Philip, elected Leader, 96.
- Skippon, Sergeant-Major-General, or Major-General, 110, 112, 153, 156, 157, 164; allowance to, stopped, 165; Captain-General, 157 *note*; Commander-in-Chief of City forces, 143; rejected as Captain, 151.
- Skittles in the Ground, 300.
- Smart, Jo., 149.
- Smith, Alderman Humphrey, President, 73, 75, 85, 91, 92.
- Smith, Captain, 105.
- Smith, J., Jun., Lease to, 271; tenant of the herbage, 281.
- Smith, Samuel, clerk, 228; leases to, 223, 227.
- Smith, Sir George, 173.
- Smith, Sir J., 206, 220; elected Vice-President, 206.
- Smithfield, Sheds and tents in, 185, 186.
- Snaphaunce muskets, 142.
- Soame, Alderman, President, 95, 96.
- Soldiers, Disorders from disbanded, 25.
- Somerset, Duke of, 196, 209.
- Soulter, Lieutenant, 197.
- South Company of City Archers, 106.
- South Regiment of City Trained Bands, 105.
- South Sea Annuities, 294.
- Southwark, Artillery Ground in, 89; muster of Auxiliaries of, 134, 135 and *note*; Church of St. John in, 89; Guild at, 41 *note*; Martial Yard in, 89.
- Southwark, Trained Bands of, Arms of, 136; colours of, 136; exercise ground of, 89; in the Civil War, 141; list of officers of, 139; muster of, 134, 135 and *note*, 254; strength of, 136.
- Spain, 2, 105.
- Spaniards, in Ireland, 37; preparations against, 34-37.
- Spears, 4.
- Spencer, John, a gunner, 81.
- Spencer, Lord, Death of, 132.
- Spendlowe, John, Lease by, 24.

- Spering, Capt., 104.
 Spital-Fields, 31.
 Spontoons, 316.
 Sprague, Sir E., at feast, 191.
 Spratt, Dr., Sermon by, 209.
 Stabling, Erection of, 309.
 Staff, A field, 274; a tilting, 301; a white, 215; the Beadle's, 307—*see* Staves.
 Standard-bearers of City, 28.
 Standards of City, 28.
 Stationers, Company of, Muster of, 6.
 Staves, Leading, 158, 162, 215, 301, 307; used by horsemen, 35.
 Stead, Capt., 173.
 Stewards, Allowances to, 157, 163—*see* Aldermen, Votes by; appointment of, 158, 192, 215; dress of, 158; members of Court, 191; election as ditto, 223; names of, 171, 196, 198, 200, 206, 210, 215; refusal to serve as, 170.
 Stibbs, Mr., 286, 290, 293, 296.
 Stiles, Capt., 104.
 Stokes, Thomas, 7.
 Stone, Mr., 91.
 Storehouses, 45, 63, 189, 309, 314.
 Storeroom, A, 188.
 Stores, Military, Care of, 306; distribution of, 306, 307; inventories of, 306.
 Stow-the-Old, Skirmish at, 112 *note*, 115-117, 129.
 Stray, Capt. George, 268.
 Streets and highways, Commissioners for, 189.
 Stretton, George, Assistant and Surveyor of Arms, 79.
 Stretton, William, Assistant and Lieutenant, 79.
 Strutton, Lieut. M., 197.
 Subalterns, Expenses of, 319.
 Subscriptions, Payment of, 308.
 Surgeons, Company of, 13—*see* Barbers.
 Surgeons for Army, 13.
 Surgeons of Company, 188, 195, 276; first appointed, 170.
 Sussex, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Sutherland, Earl of, admitted, 209.
 Sutlers, 302; for the Armoury, 295, 298, 300; in the Ground, 298, 300.
 Sutling-room, The, 188.
 Sutton, Capt. Walter, 276, 282 *note*.
 Swart—*see* Schwartz.
 Swinton, Capt., 105.
 Swords, 4, 28; for the Auxiliaries, number and cost of, 141, 142; the number of the, 301.
 Swynerton, Sir John, Colonel, 105.
 Synge, Capt. Richard, 245.
 Tainters, The, 45.
 Tallis, Lieut., 197.
 Tame, Capt. Henry, 268, 275.
 Tame, Major Henry, 295.
 Targets, Easter and Whitsuntide, 155.
 Tassell's Close, 31.
 Tatler, The, 245.
 Taylor, Alice, Petition of, 84.
 Taylor, Sergeant-Major Nathaniel, 80; elected Captain, 77, 78; salary of, 84; death of, 79.
 Teasels, Use and exportation of, 31.
 Teazell Ground, Artillery Garden called, 45.
 Temple, The, in the Great Fire, 182, 183.
 Tents, Canvas for, 210; lent to Trained Bands, 213.
 "Tesell Yard, The," 57.
 Tewkesbury, Skirmish near, 120, 129; surrender of, 120.
 Thanet, Earl of, at feast, 206.
 Thieving Lane, Bunhill Row called, 299; inhabitants of, 261.
 Thomas, William, Master-Gunner of England, 32, 33, 81.
 Thompson, Alderman Sir John, 282 *note*.
 Thompson, Capt. Charles, 277.
 Thompson, Hannah, Lease to, 299, 304.
 Thompson, Walter, Cloak-keeper, 156.
 Thompson, William, Gunsmith, 155.
 Thornell, Nathaniel, Assistant, 79.
 Thorold, Sir George, elected Lieut.-General, 249.
 Tichborne, Colonel Charles, 139.
 Tichborne, Lord, President, 158.
 Tichburne, Capt., 111.
 Tichburne, Capt. Robert, 137.

- Ticket Carrier, The, appointed, 192; salary of, 224.
- Tilbury, Camp at, 34, 35.
- Tindall, Mr., 163, 179, 180; encroaches on wall of Ground, 189, 191, 196, 199.
- Tindall's burying-ground, 180.
- Tompson, Lieut.-Col., 113.
- Tomson, Capt. William, 136.
- Tooley, Capt. David, Sergeant, 155.
- Tothill Fields, Artillery Ground at, 143.
- Tower, Alderman, Colonel, 111 *note*.
- Tower, The, 183, 189, 313; bounds of, 36; encroachments on, 56; officers in, 32 *note*; survey of, 57 *note*.
- Tower, The, Gunners of, or Fraternity of Artillery; confirmation of charter, 33; incorporated, 31; master-gunners of ships, 32; oath of members, 32; Old Garden left to, 159; practice of, 33; practice ground of, 31; skill of, 32.
- Tower, The, Lientenants of, 57, 179.
- Tower Hamlets, The, Auxiliaries of, in the Civil War, 140 and *note*, 141; muster of, 134, 135 and *note*, officers of, members, 169; Sergeants of, admission of, 169, 239.
- Tower Hamlets, The, Trained Bands of, Arms of, 136; colours of, 136, 138; musters of, 134, 135, 318; officers of, 138; members of Court, 190, 191; rank of, 252; to be members, 169; Sergeants of, admission of, 169, 224, 227, 230, 239; Sergeants of, obtaining commissions, 230, 239; strength of, 136.
- Tower Hill, Lord Mayor, sworn at, 308, 318.
- Townshend, Lord, 258, 267, 270, 280.
- Towse, Alderman, John, Colonel, 138.
- Trained Bands—*see* London, Westminster, Tower Hamlets, and Southwark; Arms of, 16, 35, 105; called Militia, 110 and *note*; disbanded, 143; employment of, 36, 37, 109, 111; exercises for, 44; increased, 109; musters of, 105, 106; officered by Company, 34, 73, 102, 103; officers of, pay of, 109; pioneers and horsemen for, 35; raised, 35; re-organised, 102.
- Treasurers, 153 *note*, 158, 197, 288; applications to, 267; elected, 202, 248, 249; right to elect, 77, 86.
- Trees in the Ground, planted, 305; removed, 308.
- Trench, John, elected Assistant, 79.
- Triquett, Major, 262, 268, 275.
- "Trompeporter," 38.
- Trophies, Bearers of, 261; for the Auxiliaries, cost of, 142; frames for, 316; gift of, 191; painted, 321.
- Tucker, Lieut.-Colonel, death of, 124, 131, 134.
- Tucker, Sergeant-Major, 136.
- Tulse, Sir Henry, Lord Mayor, 214.
- Tyllier, Major Henry, General of the Military Garden, 164.
- Underwood, Alderman, Funeral of, 156.
- Underwood, Sergt.-Major William, 137.
- Uniform—*see* Dress.
- Vanderport, Sir Peter, Steward, 215.
- Vansittart, Henry, 13.
- Vaughan, Capt. Joseph, 137.
- Vauxhall, Butt and platform at, 91.
- Veel, de la, Marquis, Death of, 122, 123, 132.
- Vellum Book, The Great, 150 *note*; commenced, 39; names in, 39; allowance for entering names in, 187; names in, erased, 189, 190; names in, in letters of gold, 171, 180; signatures in, 209, 257, 258.
- Ven, Alderman—*see* Fen.
- Venn, Capt., 105.
- Vere, Colonel, 119.
- Vere, Sir Horatio, Lord Chief Justice, 52, 54-56.
- Vere, Horatio, Lord, Funeral of, 91.
- Verner, Capt. Richard, 137.
- Verney, Sir Ralph, 114.
- Vincent, Sir William, 167.
- Vintners, Admission of, 305.
- Virginia, The post of Marshal in, 93.
- Volunteer Corps, Earliest form of, 58; Regiments, London, arms for, 142.
- Volunteers, The British, 323.
- Wade, Guy, Prebendary of St. Paul's, 24.
- Wagstaffe, Mr., 212.

- Walden, Capt. William, elected Sergeant, 155.
- Wales, Charles, Prince of, 44, 101.
- Wales, George, Prince of, appointed Captain-General, 258, 259; deputation to, 258, 268; entertainment to, expenses of, 260, 261; entertainment to, postponed, 261; entertainment to, proposed, 260; majority of, 322.
- Walker, Capt., 104, 106.
- Waller, Capt., 139.
- Waller, Captain Henry, Captain and Leader, 69, 70, 86.
- Waller, Sir William, 140 and *note*.
- Walls of the Ground, the, A bank round, 308; a door for, 278; broken down, 296; built, 146-149, 163, 233, 303; damaged by Great Fire, 181; encroachment upon, 189, 191, 196, 199; fall of, 260, 261, 272; height of, 147; rebuilding of, 282; repair of, 219, 223, 225, 227, 278, 286.
- Wallthall, Captain, 104.
- Walpole, Sir Robert, 292.
- War, Council of, Members of, 63.
- War Department, Mark of the, 7.
- Wardell, Black, Present by, 301.
- Wardell, Ensign Henry, Gift by, 300.
- Ware, Captain, death of, 133.
- Warner, Alderman John, Colonel, 111 *note*, 137.
- Warrants, Royal, and letters concerning elections, 201, 203, 204, 205, 207, 209, 211, 214, 218, 248; for officers of Trained Bands to join, 103, 230, 231, 234, 239, 259, 263.
- Warren, Captain George, 138.
- Watch House, The, Position of, 294; rent of 296; taken down, 299.
- Waterhouse, Dr., Sermon by, 188.
- Watts, Colonel Sir John, 105.
- Webb, Colonel William, "Agitant" of City forces, 142.
- Weedon, Captain John, 275.
- Wells, Thomas, of Calais, 150.
- Welsh, The, expert archers, 5; pursuit of, by Saxons, 4.
- Wemys, Mr., Master-Gunner of England, 94.
- Wentworth, Viscount, 76.
- West, Colonel, 151.
- West Company of City Archers, 106.
- West, Lieut.-Colonel Francis, 137.
- West Regiment of City Trained Bands, 104.
- Westall, Lieut.-Colonel, 275.
- Westminster, Artillery Garden at, 81, 90.
- Westminster Militia, 254.
- Westminster, Parish of St. Anne's, created, 90.
- Westminster, Stewards and Burgesses of, 254.
- Westminster, Trained Bands of, Arms of, 136; colours of, 136; exercise ground of, 90; in the Civil War, 140 and *note*, 141; list of officers, 138; muster of, 134, 135 and *note*; strength of, 136.
- Wheatley, Mr., Vote to, 273.
- Whicheot, Capt. Christopher, 137.
- Whicheot, Colonel, 139.
- White Regiment of City Auxiliaries, 136, 139.
- White Regiment of City Trained Bands, 111 and *note*, 134-137, 302.
- White, Rev. Mr., Sermon by, 192.
- Whitebread, Thomas, elected Lieutenant, 79.
- Whitehead, Thomas, elected Assistant, 79.
- Whitmore, Alderman Sir George, 91, 97, 99.
- Wickes, J., Lease to, 262.
- Willet, Capt., 122.
- William the Conqueror, 4, 22.
- William III., Address to, 229; Captain-General, 224; restores Company's privileges, 222; warrant of, 230, 231-234.
- Williams, Capt., 104.
- Williams, Lieut.-Colonel John, 295, 303.
- Williams, Major John, 275.
- Williams, William, 304.
- Williamson, Colonel, of the Tower, 281.
- Williamson, Sir Joseph, at feast, 196.
- Willoughby, Capt. Joseph, Assistant-Adjutant, 277.
- Willson, Lieut.-Colonel, 111.
- Wilmott, Lieut., 276.
- Wilson, Lieut.-Colonel Rowland, 138.
- Wilson, Rowland, Captain of Archers, 106.

- Winchester, Statute of, 5, 9.
 Winckle, Mr., 173.
 Windebank, Secretary, 73, 107.
 Windmill Street, 150.
 Windsor, Lord, at feast, 193.
 Winscombe, Skirmish at, 119.
 Withers, Sir William, elected President, 249.
 Wollaston, Alderman Sir John, Colonel, 96, 97, 99, 111 *note*, 137.
 Wollaston, Capt. Richard, 138.
 Wollaston, Richard, Master-Gunner, buys the Old Ground, 156, 159, 160.
 Wood, J., Captain of Archers, 106.
 Wood, William, 155.
 Woodcock, Lieut., 276.
 Woolf, Alderman Sir Joseph, 245.
 Worcester, Bishop of, at feast, 168.
 Worcester, Marquis of, at feast, 200.
 Worcester, Prisoners from, 143.
 Wright, Alderman, 138.
 Wyfflers of the City Forces, 28.
 Yarmouth, North, Artillery Yard at, 89.
 Yellow Regiment of Auxiliaries of the City, 136, 139.
 Yellow Regiment of Auxiliaries of the Tower Hamlets, 140 and *note*.
 Yellow Regiment of Trained Bands of the City, 111 and *note*, 134-137, 302.
 York, Duke of—*see* James II.—211; addresses to, 193, 209, 213; admitted, 101; at feasts, 167, 168, 188, 191, 200; at the exercises, 168; deputations to, 169, 171, 187, 191, 192, 195, 209; elected Commander-in-Chief, 166; election of, as Captain-General, 204; entertainment to, 215; gift by, 199; in Great Fire, 182, 183, 185; leads the Company, 214, 215; picture of defaced, 200; unpopular in the City, 199.
 York, Edmund, marshals City forces, 34.



THE ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS.

- Accounts, Audit of, 336.
Adjutant, The, 359.
Admissions, 328, 329, 335, 337, 338, 345, 348-350, 352; discontinued, 337; entry of, 336.
Andross, Sir Edmund, 335, 337.
Armoury, The, Assembly at, 356; to be built, 331.
Arms, The, 333, 363; common, use of, 326.
Artillery, Early use of, 352; instruction in, 332; mentioned in records, 352; practice, directions for, 331; regiment of, raised, 360; train of, 345; training days, 332, 340; use of, abandoned, 352.
Artillery Company, The, of Boston; meetings suspended, 337; petitions of, 341-343; revival of, 337, 338; roll call of, 336, 337; title of, 353.
Artillery Company, The Ancient and Honourable, of Massachusetts—*see* also Artillery Company of Boston and Military Companies of Boston and Massachusetts; a military training school, 354, 360; an honour to be in, 361; applied to, for assistance, 352; charter of, 353; decline of, 338, 345, 350; expenses of, 346, 348; exercise of other Companies with, 355; engaged in wars, 360, 361; first military body, 325; loyalty of, 360; meetings discontinued, 344, 350; revived, 345, 350; number of members, 362; officers in, 363; organisation of, 363; privileges of, 345; revival of, 350, 352, 353; roll call of, 357; titles of, 339, 352, 353; time of music, 355, 357.
Artillery Company, the Great, 353; the Honourable, 353.
Artillery Division, dress and arms of, 363.
Artillery, The Great, 332 and *note*; Small, 332 *note*.
Artillerymen, An instructor of, 329.
Assembly, General, Order of, 337.
Atherton, Major, 337.
Badges of Officers, 330, 356-358.
Ballentine, John, Petition of, 342.
Band, The, Uniform of, 356.
Bandoliers, 331, 333.
Bands—*see* Trained Bands.
Baskets, 332.
Bayonet, The, introduced, 344.
Belcher, J., Governor of Massachusetts, 343.
Belcher, Rev. Joseph, 338.
Bell, Major William, Commander, 350.
Blanchard, Colonel, Sale to, 343.
"Bloody Eighth, The," 351.
Boston, 328, 329, 335, 337, 343, 346, 352; a town meeting dissolved, 346; artillery practice in, 331; Common, election on, 356; evacuation of, 351; founded, 325; legacy to, 334; small-pox in, 338.
Boston, Militia of; members, officers in, 352; members of, join the Company, 340, 345; use the bayonet, 344.
Boston, Trained Band of, 325.
British troops, 335, 355.
Brooks, Major-General John, Commander, 350, 351.
Budge-barrels, 332 and *note*.
Bunker's Hill, Battle of, 362.

- Burrill, John, Grant to, 342.
 Bute, Lord, 360.
 Butts for artillery practice, 331.
- Cadet Corps, The, 344, 345.
 Cambridge, 341.
 Canada, Conquest of, 360.
 Candles, 347.
 Cannon—*see also* Field-pieces; platform for, 331; supplied by Government, 353; wheels and carriages of, 352.
 Canvas, 333.
 Cape Breton, Conquest of, 360.
 Capen, Sergeant Hopedill, 349.
 Captains—*see also* Commanders; arms of, 355; election of, 326, 327, 339, 357, 358; expenses of, 348; insignia of, 359; to be an auditor, 336.
 Captain-General, The, 352.
 Charlestown, 325; Trained Band of, 325, 329.
 Civil War, The, 361.
 Clerk, The, 329, 335, 336, 339, 340, 353.
 Coitmore, Isaac, 352.
 Colours, The, 349, 358, 359; description of, 362; hanging out of, 343, 344, 354, 362.
 Colours, British, hauled down, 344.
 Command, Words of, 357, 359.
 Commanders, 329, 337, 344, 345—*see also* Captain; elected, 328, 335, 337, 348, 351; insignia of, 362, 363; portraits of, 361.
 Company Book, The, 353.
 Concord, 327, 341, 351.
 "Continental line," The, 351.
 Cooke, Capt. G., 325.
 "Cradle of Liberty," The, 361.
 Cuba, Expedition to 348.
- "Dan and Si," Portraits of, 362.
 Dedham, Trainings at, 327.
 Dennison, Capt. D., 325.
 Dorchester, Trained Band of, 325.
 Drill—*see* Exercise.
 Drill-room, The, 361.
 "Drum, The first," 354; a famous, 362.
- Drums and fifes, 354, 355, 362.
 Drummers, 339, 354, 357, 362; portraits of, 362.
 Dudley, Thomas, Deputy-Governor of Massachusetts, 328.
 Duncan, Nathaniel, merchant, 326, 338.
 Dunstable, Lands in, 341, 343.
 Dwight, J., 343.
- Eaton, Capt. Joseph, 344.
 Edwards, Capt. Thomas, Commander, 344.
 Elections, Ceremonies at, 356-359; date of, 339, 354; entertainments at, 346, 348, 356, 359; interference in, 360.
 England, Mission to, 329.
 Ensigns, The, at annual dinner, 356; commission of, 359; election of, 328, 339, 357-359; expenses of, 348.
 Entertainments, 333, 346-348.
 Entrance money, 332, 333, 340.
 Espontoons, 355, 357-359, 363.
 Essex, County of, 330.
 Europe, First tour in, 344.
 Exchange, Legacy for an, 331.
 Exercise, Days of, 327, 332; places for, 326, 327, 339.
 Expulsions, 336.
- Faneuil Hall, Boston, 352; Company break up at, 346, 349, 350; description of, 361; entertainments at, 346, 356, 359; Upper, 355.
 Faneuil, Peter, 361.
 Field-day, stopped by British troops, 349—*see also* Trainings.
 Field-pieces, 352, 353, 357—*see also* Cannon.
 Fifes—*see* Drums.
 Fines, 327, 333, 336, 339, 340, 353.
 "Fire Society," the first, 344.
 Fire-arms, called Artillery, 332 *note*; instruction in use of, 332.
 France, War with, 360.
- General, Major-, or Sergeant-Major-General, 330.
 Genison—*see* Jennison.
 George III., 360.
 Gibbons, Lieut. Edward, 325.

"Godly Parliament, The," 360.

Gorgetts, silver, 363.

Great Britain, War with, 361.

Guns, Wooden, 345.

Gunpowder, 332, 333.

Halberds, 355, 360, 362, 363.

Hardinge, Ensign Robert, 325.

Harvard College, 334, 351; Military Company of, 345; President of, 356.

Haugh—see Howe.

Headquarters, The, 361.

Heath, Major-General William, Commander, 349, 361.

Henchman's Corner, 343, 344.

Hingham, Trainings at, 327.

Honorary members, 354.

Howe, Lieutenant Daniel, 325, 328.

Hutchinson, Col. Edward, 329.

Hutchinson, Col. Elisha, Commander, 337.

Hutchinson, Edward, Petition of, 342.

Hutchinson, Governor, 345.

Indian wars, 360.

Indians, Mission to, 329.

Indians, Florida, War with, 361.

Independence, America, 325.

Infantry division, Arms of, 363.

Inspection, Day of, 354.

Ipswich, Trained Band of, 325.

Jackson's Regiment, 351.

James I., 324.

Jennison or Genison, Capt. William, 325.

Johnson, Edward, 329 and *note*.

Juries, Exemption from, 362.

Keayne, Benjamin, 328.

Keayne, Capt. Robert, 326, 329, 335; elected Commander, 328; death of, 334; will of, 330-334, 352.

Keayne, or Keine, Robert, merchant, 326, 328.

Kennebeck, Expeditions to, 348.

Knox, Henry, 360.

VOL. I.

Lands of the Company, Bounds of, 341; grants of, 327, 340-342; lease of, 341; sale of, 342, 343.

Lathrop, Dr. John, 349.

Legacies to the Company, 331, 332, 334.

Leverett, Major Gen. Sir John, Governor of Massachusetts, 329.

Lexington, Battle of, 349-351.

Lieutenants, 329, 344, 356; arms of, 355; election of, 327, 328, 339, 357, 358; expenses, of, 348; insignia of, 359.

London, The Hon. Artillery Company of, 325, 328, 329, 333, 335, 359, 362.

Massachusetts, Adjutant-General of, 351; insurrection in, 352; loyalty of, 360; Marshal of, 351; Bay, settlements near, 325.

Massachusetts, Council of 346, 356, 357; Governors of, 328, 329, 342, 343, 346, 352; Governors of, at elections, 356-359; authority of Governors, 339; escort for Governors, 344; Deputy or Lieut.-Governors of, 328, 339, 356, 357.

Mather, Dr. Cotton, 337.

May Flower, The, 325.

Meetings, Rooms for, 361.

Mexico, War with, 361.

Middlesex, County of, 330; Militia, Major-General of, 351.

Military, Associations, formed, 325.

Military Company, of Boston, 325, 326.

Military Company, of Massachusetts, Charter to, 325, 326, 329; control of, 326, 328, 330; decline of, 333-335; number of members, 329; origin of, 329; revival of, 335; roll of members, 335; title of, 339, 353.

Militia, Days of duty of, 330; music of, 355; officers of, members, 350; officers for, 354, 360; organised, 329, 330; "timorous persons," 330; Laws, 353.

"Minute Men," 351.

Monmouth, Battle of, 351.

Motto on the Colour, 362.

Muskets, 363.

Musters, 354.

2 L

- Nashaway, 341.
 New England, 324, 329 *note*, 330, 337;
 four regiments in, 330; number of
 towns in, 325; Council of, 325, 326,
 337; Governor of, 337.
 New York, Governor of, 337.
 Newton, Trained Band of, 325.
 Norfolk, County of, 330.
 Norton, Madame, 335.

 Oaks, U., 353.
 Office, Refusal to hold, 336.
 Officers, Arms of, 362, 363; election of,
 327, 330, 337, 339, 357, 359; ex-
 penses of, 346-348; instruction of,
 332; length of service, 363; lists of,
 335, 363; rooms for, 361; to be
 auditors, 336.
 "Old South Meeting House," The, 335.
 Oliver, Mr., 340.
 Orders, 335-340, 345-348; entry book
 of, 336; power to make, 327.
 Otis, James, 361.

 Parade, Places of, 343, 350—*see also*
 Trainings.
 Phillips, Captain John, Commander, 337.
 Phips, S., Governor of Massachusetts,
 343.
 Pikes, 331, 355, 359, 360, 362.
 Pikes, Half, 355, 359, 362.
 "Pilgrim Fathers," The, 325.
 Plymouth, New, founded, 325.
 Plymouth Company, The, 324.
 Plymouth Rock, 325.
 Pollard, Colonel Benjamin, 344.
 Pollard, Jonathan, Petition of, 342.
 Preachers, on Anniversaries, 335.
 Prince Edward's Island, Conquest of,
 360.
 Provisions, A chest for, 348.
 Puritans, 325, 360.

 Quarterage, 333, 335, 336.
 Quincy, J., 343.

 Reading, Volunteers, of, 351.
 Records, The, 335, 338.

 Regulations—*see* Orders.
 Representatives, House of, 342, 343,
 356.
 Resignations, 340.
 Revolutionary Army, Members serve in,
 350, 360; officers of, members, 350.
 Revolutionary War, The, 349-351.
 Rules—*see* Orders.
 Rutland, Lands in, 342, 343.

 Sabres, 363.
 Salem, Trainings at, 327.
 Salutes, 357-359.
 Saratoga, Battle of, 351.
 Saugus, Trained Band of, 325.
 Savage, Habijah, Petition of, 342.
 Savage, Major Thomas, Commander,
 335.
 Sedgewick, Major-General Robert, 329.
 Sedgwick, Capt. Robert, 325.
 Sedgwick, Robert, gentleman, 326, 338.
 Sergeant, The Orderly, 359.
 Sergeant-Major, Election of, 330.
 Sergeants, 329, 339, 356; arms of, 355,
 362; election of, 359; entertain-
 ments by, 346-348.
 Sermons, Anniversary, 337, 338, 349,
 353, 356.
 Shays, Daniel, Insurrection of, 352.
 Sherman, John, 341.
 Shot, 331, 332.
 Shute, Samuel, Governor of Massa-
 chusetts, 342.
 Signature of members, 340, 353.
 Simpson, Drum-Major Daniel, 362.
 Smith, Capt., 324.
 "Souring," 348.
 Spencer, William, merchant, 326, 338.
 Spunges, 332.
 Standard—*see* Colours.
 State House, Boston, 350, 354, 356, 357,
 361.
 Steuben, Baron, 351.
 Store-rooms, 361.
 Stoughton, Capt. E., 325.
 Suffolk, County of, 330.
 Suffolk, High Sheriff of, 344.
 Sureties for members, 353.
 Swords, 355.

- Taxes on the Company, 342, 343.
Tobacco, 347.
Town House, Boston, 343.
Trained Bands, 325; officers for, 354.
"Training in the Town House," 355.
Trainings, Attendance at, 327, 336, 341;
behaviour during, 345; days for, 335,
339, 354; exercise of other Companies
during, 355; forbidden, 337; length
of, 354; notices of, 344, 354, 362.
"Troop, The," 354, 362.
Trophy of Arms, 363.

Underhill, Capt. John, 325.
Uniforms, 355, 356, 363.

Virginia, North, colonised, 324.
Volunteers, Officers for, 360.
Vote, Right to, 354.
Votes, Counting of, 357.

Washington, General, 351, 360.
Washington, President, 361.
Waters, Colonel, 352.
Waters, Ensign Josiah, Commander,
345.
Watertown, Trained Band of, 325.
Weld, Joseph, elected Ensign, 328.
Wellard, J., 343.
Weymouth, Training at, 327.
White Plains, Battle of, 351.
Willard, J., 342, 343.
Winslow Blues, The, 355.
Winslow, Edward, Petition of, 342.
Winslow, Major-General John, Com-
mander, 348.
Winthrop, John, Governor of Massa-
chusetts, 325, 328.

Yale College, 351.

END OF VOL. I.

LONDON :
BARRETT, SONS & CO., PRINTERS,
CROWN STEAM WORKS, SEETHING LANE, E.C.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

HISTORICAL RECORDS
OF THE
FIRST REGIMENT OF MILITIA;
OR,
THIRD WEST YORK LIGHT INFANTRY.

With Illustrations, 21s.

LONDON: RICHARD BENTLEY & SON, NEW BURLINGTON STREET,
Publishers in Ordinary to Her Majesty the Queen.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION.—“Captain Raikes deserves the gratitude of all connected with the Third West York for the enormous amount of labour and time which he must have expended in compiling the records of the regiment.”

BULLETIN DE LA RÉUNION DES OFFICIERS, Paris.—“Captain Raikes has brought out in London an extremely interesting history of the regiment to which he belongs.”

REVUE BELGE MILITAIRES.—“One does not know what most to admire in this beautiful publication, the laborious work which it has entailed on the author, or the pains which the publishers have taken to make it a veritable typographical monument.”

MILITÄR-LITERATUR-ZEITUNG, Berlin.—“The historical records now before us contain not only the history of the First Regiment of Militia (Third West York), but also a very considerable contribution to the general history of the Militia, and on this account they acquire a special interest for Continental readers, and amply justify a thorough discussion of their very valuable contents.”

ORGAN DER MILITÄR WISSENSCHAFTLICHEN VEREINE, Vienna.—“This regimental history is got up in that costly style which in England is usual in bringing out books of this comprehensive character. The ‘Records,’ as the author modestly calls his work, are enriched with beautiful illustrations.”

THE ARMY AND NAVY GAZETTE.—“That Captain Raikes should have been able to mass together such an amount of information is certainly astonishing, and, though little opportunity offered for the author to render his volume one of great literary merit, he has handled his subject and strung together his ‘dry facts’ in a manner which commends his history to the notice of military readers. . . . It is by far the best book of its class we ever remember to have seen.”

THE BROAD ARROW.—“The Historical Records of the First Regiment of Militia are very readable and interesting, not only to Yorkshiresmen and Militiamen, but to the Service as a whole, and to the general reader. . . . The compilation has evidently been a work of great labour, and that labour has been a labour of love. Not only are all the interesting points in the history of the regiment set forth in such a form as to satisfy the most zealous Yorkshire Militiamen, but a large fund of information regarding the territorial army of England from the earliest times has been collected, while very exhaustive lists of the succession of officers add materially to the size and interest of the book.”

NAVAL AND MILITARY GAZETTE.—“These records give evidence of an immense amount of labour and research, and may be regarded, we think, as exhaustive and complete. The Third West York—and, indeed, the Militia generally—are much indebted to Captain Raikes for his arduous work in the field of regimental history. . . . There are but few regiments of the Regular Service whose annals have been recorded at such length and so successfully as those of the Third West York Militia in the volume before us. . . . The appendices alone are a monument of careful labour in the collection of valuable and interesting statistics bearing on the Militia Service.”

THE UNITED SERVICE GAZETTE.—“. . . This service Captain Raikes has rendered by the preparation of his valuable records, which must have cost him an amount of care and labour which only the true zeal and spirit of the soldier could enable him to bear. The volume is beautifully printed and got up, is sufficiently illustrated, and altogether is just such a book as should be indispensable in a good military library.”

THE WELLINGTON GAZETTE.—“It is always satisfactory to find officers who take sufficient interest in their profession to do what has been done by Captain G. A. Raikes, of the Third West York Militia, who has compiled an interesting history of his regiment. . . . It is a compilation which deserves the attention of all who are interested in the question of the maintenance of the old Constitutional Force—the Militia.”

THE VOLUNTEER REVIEW, Ottawa, Canada.—“We cannot compliment Captain Raikes too much on the very valuable records he has produced. . . . It will, we hope, be an inducement to others who have time and means at their disposal to do likewise.”

THE ATHENÆUM.—“Captain Raikes has done well in publishing the records of his regiment, for, as he observes in the Preface, they have ‘a beneficial effect in maintaining that *esprit de corps* without which a regiment loses half its value.’ . . . In the Appendix, all particulars relating

to statutes affecting the volunteering of men from the Militia to the regular Army are given, and these statutes are well worth studying at the present time. Indeed, the whole book is worth reading, for it has been most carefully compiled, and may, we believe, be looked upon as thoroughly accurate."

THE SPECTATOR.—"The positive interest of the book is chiefly of a local character, though the valuable appendices which Captain Raikes has constructed with such infinite pains have something more."

THE GLOBE.—"Captain Raikes has compiled a history which cannot fail to be of great interest, not only to the present members of the regiment, but to Yorkshiremen in general. . . . The book thus forms a sort of supplement to the county history, as well as a trustworthy record of the services performed in one of the oldest Militia corps in England. It would be well if Regular regiments possessed officers who would undertake the same labour of love that Captain Raikes has so efficiently performed for the First Regiment of Militia."

PUBLIC OPINION.—"With great care and research our author has dived into such records as are in existence, and, meagre though the materials be, a valuable and interesting historical narrative has resulted from his labours. . . . It remains but to add that the work is well written and reads fluently, and, from the interesting facts it contains, will doubtless secure the circulation it merits."

THE YORK HERALD.—"By means of this interesting and carefully-compiled volume, all persons who care to understand what the Militia has been, as a whole, will be enabled to study its beginning and its development, and the services it has rendered in times past. . . . He has spared no research and industry, and the result is a bulky volume of great interest and permanent value."

THE YORKSHIRE POST.—"Captain Raikes is very much to be complimented in regard to the diligence and labour bestowed in gathering together, from such scattered resources as were at his command, so much interesting information as is here presented of the history of the Third West York Light Infantry."

THE YORKSHIRE GAZETTE.—"We have given a very brief glance of this excellent work by Captain Raikes. To Yorkshiremen it will be of great value, presenting throughout its pages an immense source of information, wrought together in a masterly manner, and converting materials, which to a civilian's mind would be very dry and unreadable, into a pleasant and instructive book."

THE LEEDS MERCURY.—"The First Regiment of Militia, the historical records of which are so admirably compiled by Captain Raikes in the volume before us, obtained its title of precedence in 1833. . . . We have little doubt that this volume will be read with much eagerness by all who are interested in the 'Old Constitutional Force,' and that it will also serve the author's purpose in maintaining that *esprit de corps*, 'without which a regiment loses half its value.'"

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

Demy 8vo, 118 pp., price 2s. 6d.

THE HISTORY OF OUR RESERVE FORCES.

With Suggestions for their Organisation as a
Real Army of Reserve.

WITH A MAP AND STATISTICAL TABLES.

London: W. MITCHELL & Co., Military Publishers, 39, Charing Cross, S.W.

Demy 8vo, 37 pp., price 1s.

THE STRENGTH AND COST OF THE BRITISH ARMY AND RESERVE FORCES.

London: RICHARD BENTLEY & SON, New Burlington Street, Publishers in
Ordinary to Her Majesty the Queen.

Demy 8vo, 41 pp., price 1s. 6d.

MILITIA REFORM.

With Special Reference to the Militia Reserve and the
New Organisation Scheme.

London: W. MITCHELL & Co., Military Publishers, 39, Charing Cross, S.W.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

Demy 8vo, 118 pp., price 2s. 6d.

THE HISTORY OF OUR RESERVE FORCES.

With Suggestions for their Organisation as a
Real Army of Reserve.

WITH A MAP AND STATISTICAL TABLES.

London: W. MITCHELL & Co., Military Publishers, 39, Charing Cross, S.W.

Demy 8vo, 37 pp., price 1s.

THE STRENGTH AND COST OF THE BRITISH ARMY AND RESERVE FORCES.

London: RICHARD BENTLEY & SON, New Burlington Street, Publishers in
Ordinary to Her Majesty the Queen.

Demy 8vo, 41 pp., price 1s. 6d.

MILITIA REFORM.

With Special Reference to the Militia Reserve and the
New Organisation Scheme.

London: W. MITCHELL & Co., Military Publishers, 39, Charing Cross, S.W.

